



WORLD OF CULTIVATION

BOOK 06

Fang Xiang

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

World of Cultivation!

(Xiuzhen Shijie)

(修真世界)

by

Fang Xiang

(方想)

Synopsis

World of Cultivation is the tale of a disgruntled young man and his quest to be the best farmer he can be, at least if it wasn't for those annoying people who keep getting in the way of his pursuit of agricultural excellence.

Will conspiring forces turn him into a sword cultivator, or will he manage to throw off the shackles of fate and grow the best darn crops in the sect?

Those air-headed cultivators dream of too much nonsense and don't know how to live properly, they need to get a real job to earn some jingshi for a living like a normal person.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by wyhcwe @ [Dreams of Jianghu](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Book 6

Chapter 501 - Plough Up The Earth

Avoiding the few dangerous places, Zuo Mo finally found the target he was searching for.

The moment he saw it, he felt as though his heart stopped beating! He stopped breathing and unconsciously slowed his steps as though he was afraid of scaring it away. His eyes showed all kinds of shock and disbelief.

This was a tree.

It was the most beautiful and grandest tree Zuo Mo had ever seen!

It was not very tall, only about the same height as Zuo Mo. The body of three was bright red, even brighter than the most beautiful coral. The body of the tree was smooth as though the most accomplished craftsmen had carefully sanded it down. There weren't any protrusions on the entire tree trunk. Every part of the tree had extremely beautiful curves that were perfect and would cause people to sigh at the wonder of nature.

Zuo Mo's gaze was attracted by the balls of fire on the tree.

Heavens, what was that?

Zuo Mo gaped. He lost all abilities of speech. Once proud of his vast experience, he found that his imagination was so poor.

That wasn't balls of flame, those were clearly miniature little suns!

Each was the size of a fist, round, each one had a layer of orange-red flames shrouding it, they were all small suns. There were ten small suns hanging like this from the tree.

Zuo Mo froze for a moment and unconsciously walked towards the red tree.

A warm presence blew across him. This presence was extremely unique. It seemed to be able to easily permeate the body. Zuo Mo felt that even his bones were warm.

Sun Shen Tree!

Was this the Sun Shen Tree?

Zuo Mo suddenly recalled how Big Brother Qing Lin had especially mentioned this in the thought imprint he had left behind. Looking at the red tree, he felt this name was extremely appropriate.

This was definitely the Sun Shen Tree that Big Brother Qing Lin had mentioned!

Zuo Mo believed without a doubt.

The Sun Shen Tree was the symbol of the Sun Tribe. Whenever they came to a new place, they would plant this tree. The Sun Shen Tree was able to produce Sun Fruits. These Sun Fruits were usually given to the warriors in the tribe with potential to nurture their shen power.

The Sun Fruits would mature after ten years. If they were not picked at maturity, they would form Sun Seeds after forty years and naturally fall off the tree.

Zuo Mo hurriedly bent his head. As expected, there was a thick layer of dark red and hard seeds on the ground. He picked one up and examined it. The body of the seed was dark red and filled with extremely fine golden scripts. It felt like heavy jade and gave off a clear warmth in his hand.

Without a word, Zuo Mo started to furiously sweep Sun Seeds into the ring as though he was insane.

Compared to the Sun Fruit, Sun Seeds were much better. The sun shen power inside was even purer and thicker after being condensed for forty years, and its quality a whole level above Sun Fruit. Other than consuming it to increase shen power, it was also one of the favored weapons of the Sun Tribe warriors.

If it was processed slightly with the sun shen power, it would become the “Crow Thorn” which had intimidated all of the lands.

Many great heroes had fallen under these non-descript Crow

Thorns.

Qing Lin had especially mentioned the Sun Shen Tree, and specifically the Sun Seeds. Qing Lin had walked all over the shen temple. He had been unable to enter the priest's hall but he had detected the presence of the Sun Shen Tree.

He had been wounded by a Crow Thorn, captured alive and brought to this place. He knew very well how powerful it was. Since he could feel the presence of the Sun Shen Tree, then it meant that the Sun Shen Tree inside the hall was alive. The tree would produce a batch of Sun Seeds every five decades. After tens of thousands of years, how many Sun Seeds had been produced?

Zuo Mo buried his head to pick Sun Seeds, unwilling to miss even one.

If he missed one of this kind of miraculous object, then he would be stuck by lightning!

After he ploughed through the soil nearby and made sure that he did not miss anything, he finally stood up contentedly. He looked at the ten Sun Fruits hanging on the tree. He took out a jade box, and plucked the Sun Fruits to put them in the box.

After picking the Sun Fruits, he looked at the bare Sun Shen Tree and his mind moved. He moved it, along with the surrounding soil, into his ring.

How could he leave a shen tree to those people?

Even though the Sun Fruit would only form every decade and the Sun Seeds required fifty years to mature, but this kind of shen tree was a rare treasure on its own. Zuo Mo did not know what grade the Sun Tree was, but it definitely was not low.

At the least, it was a shen tree!

Finished moving the Sun Shen tree, Zuo Mo looked around in hopes of finding something he missed. This was the garden of the shen temple and there should have been ling trees planted. He quickly was disappointed. None of the other ling trees in this garden survived other than this Sun Shen Tree. Thinking about it, he understood. The shen temple had been separated from the outside. It would have been difficult just to supply the Sun Shen Tree. They had no extra power to support other shen trees.

However, with Little Mo Ge's personality of plucking feathers from a chicken, his mind turned and he had a new idea.

It was rational to think that such a large garden had not been planted with only the Sun Shen Tree. It was normal that the other ling trees could not survive. However, the ground that was full of Sun Seeds reminded him that even if the ling trees did not survive, would they leave behind any seeds?

Tens of thousands of years! Something common tens of thousands of years ago might be a treasure now! If those seeds could survive, they definitely were treasures!

This idea motivated him.

Without another word, he started to dig through the dirt.

In the past, ge had been a ling farmer! How could plowing the ground be difficult for ge?

Zuo Mo was like a human-shaped dirt plough that raked three chi into the ground. Everywhere he passed, the dirt flew!

He did actually get a few items.

A black fruit that was like a rock that was extremely hard and heavy. It was the size of a thumb but several catties heavy. If there wasn't a thread of vitality contained inside, Zuo Mo would be certain it was a piece of rock.

Other than this, Zuo Mo also got a section of half-rotten wood. It was the size of his arm and covered in dirt. When he wiped away the dirt, an unique scent burrowed into Zuo Mo's nose.

Zuo Mo shuddered uncontrollably!

Treasure!

Zuo Mo instantly realized that this piece of wood that seemed rotten was definitely a treasure!

Zuo Mo dug throughout the entire garden.

It was a pity that there wasn't enough time!

Zuo Mo looked with regret at the garden. If there was more time, he would dig ten chi deep!

But even now, Zuo Mo was content. He really had a good harvest!

Zuo Mo paid attention to those people. The yuanying that used fire had defeated the Overflowing Earth Secret Realm and was hurrying in his direction. Zuo Mo shook. There were some minor traps along the way but the other was able to defeat the Overflowing Earth Secret Realm, these obstacles would definitely not be a problem for them.

It was time to leave now. If he stayed longer, it would not be good.

But there was still a place he hadn't gone to. Should he go or not?

Zuo Mo hesitated.

————

Elder Shen's face was slightly pale. Looking as the sand dunes disappeared like dust, he released a long breath. He was shocked

inside.

Zhu Gui's power was less than a tenth of what it had been after tens of thousands of years. The sect leader had divined correctly. With the ultimate treasure of the sect, with his cultivation of yuanying, he had thought he would be able to subdue Zhu Gui. Yet he had almost fallen against Zhu Gui's last struggle before death.

He really could not imagine just how great the power these ancient warriors possessed at their peak!

The sand dunes beneath his feet completely disappeared.

The Overflowing Secret Realm was truly defeated!

There was no joy in Elder Shen's eyes. He felt an extreme sense of urgency. One misstep, and he would get nothing.

Also, the other had been in the shen temple for so long. They definitely would not have ignored the ultimate treasures!

"Go!" He did not wait for his ling power to recover. He picked up Li Shu and Lu Zhen to disappear from his spot.

They occasionally encountered obstacles along the path.

But Elder Shen didn't have any intentions of stopping against the cannon fodder. Without another word, the fire in his hand would

flash and the other would turn into dust.

Compared to how they were delayed in the Overflowing Earth Secret Realm, their progress now was unstoppable!

After flying for a long time, the three reached the copper door. Looking at the open copper door, Elder Shen's expression changed.

When he saw the empty sacrificial room, his face paled even more.

He stomped his feet and flew towards the garden with a dark face.

Even though he had the help of the sect leader's divination, it took him some time to find the garden. When he arrived at the garden and saw the garden that it seemed to have been plowed and was full of holes, blood rose in his throat.

“Ahahahaha!”

“This old man will not have mercy! You cannot escape!”

A wrenching yell echoed in the entire shen temple!

—————

Zuo Mo still decided to go take a look at the Burning Shen Realm. It was not far and there should be enough time.

The Burning Shen Realm was the place that the shen temple used to hold its enemies. Ancient warriors had been very strong and even if they were captured, it was hard to kill them. Due to this, they were usually imprisoned in special cages. Burning Shen Realm was one of those cages.

The Burning Shen Realm was a place that Big Brother Qing Lin had not gone into.

The dark red earth under his feet exuded an astoundingly high temperature. The place was just multiple mu large but gave off a pressuring presence. The Sun Seed Crystal above Zuo Mo's head gave off a faint golden light that covered Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo carefully explored. The power of the shen temple was weak and the eternal flames of the Burning Shen Realm had been extinguished. Even so, it was not something that Zuo Mo could bear. If it wasn't for the Sun Crystal Seed, Zuo Mo would not be able to enter this place.

The Burning Shen Realm was dark and without a sun. Zuo Mo's vision was compressed and could only see the things two or three zhang ahead of him.

It was completely bare. There was not anything. The high temperature under his feet gave Zuo Mo a feeling that he was walking on fire.

The entire Burning Shen Realm, Zuo Mo to felt uncomfortable, the area gave off a strong feeling of pressure and hopelessness. However, he still persisted in walking forward. He had the plan that if he was fast in his actions, it would not take much time. He would have regrets if he did not come.

He quickly reached the end.

Hm!

His pupils suddenly contracted.

Chapter 502 - Extreme Joy To Sorrow

Zuo Mo carefully advanced.

It was hard to feel safe in this ghastly place. Even though the Burning Shen Realm's flames had been extinguished for many years, the atmosphere of hopelessness and pressure that had formed over countless years pressed on Zuo Mo's heart like a rock.

Zuo Mo's nerves were tightly tensed.

Just now, he had seemed to see something out of the corner of his eye. Under this murderous environment, Zuo Mo's heart couldn't help but jump. He wiped the cold sweat off his forehead, and managed to suppress it and calm himself down. This ghastly place! He really could not imagine how the people that had been imprisoned in the Burning Shen Realm had lived and wished for death!

When he walked forward, Zuo Mo finally saw what that pile of things were.

It was a pile of bones. Frightened for nothing, Zuo Mo instantly released a breath.

It was most likely the bones left behind from a person imprisoned in the Burning Shen Realm, one burned to death. Zuo Mo shook his head. It seemed that there wasn't anything good left in here.

He bent down and started to collect out of habit.

When his hand came into contact with the bones, he instantly felt it was strange. His expression changed as he hurriedly picked up a piece of bone. He held it out in front of himself and started to examine it closely.

This bone should be a bone in the arm. It was not different in size compared than normal bones but when he held it, he felt a clear difference. It was extremely heavy, four to five times as heavy as normal arm bones. The bone was not the stark white of normal bones but a rare dark green. There were threads of dark red patterns on the surface and the bone felt as though it was made from jade.

Zuo Mo picked up another bone and lightly tapped the two of them together.

Ding!

A clear sound.

Without any warning, an invisible wave of sound suddenly exploded and headed at him! Zuo Mo was unable to react in time and felt golden light flash, so bright it blinded him. It was the Sun Crystal Seed above his head that was stimulated and automatically protected its owner.

Alarmed, Zuo Mo almost threw the two bones in his hands away!

Fortunately, his second reaction was also extremely fast and he managed to stop!

When his mood settled, his eyes became eerily green as though he wanted to eat these bones.

Treasure!

Definitely treasure!

Zuo Mo didn't know how many times he shouted these words mentally!

Common! So common!

But he still couldn't help but shout. There was a glow that was called jingshi on his face. He caressed the green jade bones on his hands and was filled with emotion!

Great ones were really great ones. Even the bones of great ones after death were this extraordinary, this powerful!

Zuo Mo carefully picked up the ink jade bones one by one, picking them up gently and putting them down gently. After picking up the ink jade bones on the top, Zuo Mo's gaze was suddenly attracted by an object.

What was that?

His mind alert, Zuo Mo instantly swept away the dirt and dust to pick it up.

A bronze mask!

“Really ugly!” Zuo Mo muttered. The mask was cold in his hand. What was most startling was the two empty eye sockets on the face. The mouth engraved on the mask gaped wildly as though it held viciousness and disdain. It revealed two rows of sharp fangs like that of a wild beast and was biting on a broken arrow. The broken arrow seemed to have been dyed by some unknown material that was red and appeared as though it was dripping blood.

The craftsmanship style was very crude, but it held the flavor of savagery.

This should be a treasure?

Zuo Mo wasn't sure.

Compared to the inky jade bones, the bronze mask did not seem very attention-catching. It seemed to be a normal bronze mask. Zuo Mo was even unable to feel any power ripples from it.

But since it was able to survive for so many years, it should have some value.

In such a heated Burning Shen Realm, the coldness that the mask radiated caused Zuo Mo to feel very comfortable. Without another word, he put the mask on.

A wave of coolness passed over. Zuo Mo felt unspeakably comfortable. His body instantly felt lighter, and the pressure that had been covering his mind seemed to decrease.

Good thing!

Zuo Mo instantly felt affection for this mask.

This wave of coolness was not thick but it seemed to seep into his bones. His mind instantly became clearer. Talismans that could clear the mind were very popular on the market. It wasn't just beneficial for daily cultivation, they were also extremely practical in battle. They could decrease the power of the enemy's illusory spells and could help the wearer cast spells.

This mask was able to subdue the effects of the Burning Shen Realm. Just this one quality was enough for Zuo Mo to hold on to it and not let go.

What kind of place was the Burning Shen Realm?

The effect that normal talismans could have in this place was so

small it was insignificant!

Good treasure, good treasure!

Zuo Mo smiled and searched the entire Burning Shen Realm but did not have any more discoveries. The ground of the Burning Shen Temple was as hard as metal. Zuo Mo could only sigh. It would be hard to even leave a mark on the ground, much less dig down.

Content, Zuo Mo did not notice that the power of the shen temple was decreasing at an astounding rate.

The xiuzhe that were fighting noticed immediately. No matter if it was the realm guardians or the traps, their power decreased dramatically!

All of these people were old-timers and instantly understood what had happened.

“The power of the shen temple has weakened!” Li Shu looked at the sky and said lightly.

Elder Shen snorted coldly, his voice carrying deep urgency and murderousness. “He got it!”

Their speed suddenly increased!

At the same time, the Masked Assassin suddenly erupted and defeated the Aged Gold Secret Realm.

At this point, the middle-aged male was urgent and impatient. “Faster, faster! That Sun Tribe descendant got it!”

Without another word, the Masked Assassin picked up the middle-aged male and disappeared as he used his movement method.

In the other places, several groups coincided. However, they maintained a safe distance from each other with their gazes filled with thick enmity. However, they did not fight. Up until now, no one had gained anything.

Everyone had come in search of wealth. Before there was anything profitable appeared, no one would move rashly.

Everyone used their own movement methods to increase their speed, all moving towards the mask.

Along the way, they could see traces that things had been moved.

There clearly had been people that reached these places first. This caused everyone's expressions to become terrible.

“Damn it! If ye knows who has these things, ye'll cut off his hands!” one of the people said hatefully.

“Is it those yuanying?” someone asked.

“So what if it is the yuanying? Yuanying means they can take it all? Do they not know the rules? If they eat the meat, they have to leave soup for us!” someone shouted out in discontent.

No one verbally agreed but many had expressions of agreement. Those that were able to enter were famous people on the rankings of Cloud Sea Jie. Many of the top ten had come. Those that did not were either on a distant trip or in seclusion so they were unable to get here in time. Otherwise, they would have definitely come.

These experts usually had their eyes pointed at the sky and were very proud. They all came with great expectations into the shen temple.

But they worked so hard and took such a great risk yet ended up with nothing.

Several places that looked as though they had treasure seemed to have been searched by someone already. In the most exaggerated place, even the soil had been upturned.

This caused many people to stare in shock. What kind of person was this? Searching for treasure like this? This attitude of turning the earth caused many people to feel deep shock.

But more people had black faces, their eyes flashing with the sparks of anger as blood rushed into their throats. Was there anything more depressing than this?

They could only furiously channel their ling power and did not stop along the way.

If you're lucky, don't let ye catch you!

Otherwise

Spit out everything that you ate!

Everyone's mental thought was unusually similar. These people were extremely outstanding in strength and with their anger boiling, their wrath could be imagined. Adding on that the power of the shen temple had weakened, they were unstoppable on their path!

If one looked from the sky, they could see all the xiuzhe in the Sun Shen Temple was furiously gathering in the direction that Zuo Mo was at.

At the very front was the trio of Elder SHen!

Contented, Zuo Mo came out of the Burning Shen Realm. He had originally went in with the thought of exploring and had not expected to get something. The joy in his heart could be imagined.

Extremely content!

“Bastard! This old man finally found you! Do not run!”

A dark and furious voice suddenly came from behind him. Zuo Mo’s expression changed dramatically!

Damn it!

This was fatal!

His reaction was extremely rapid. Seeing the situation, he prepared to activate the Light Void Wings to escape but found to his shock that the three powers in his body had transformed back to shen power!

This suddenly change instantly caused Zuo Mo’s soul to fly out!

It did not require a long time for shen power to turn to the three powers, but at this critical time, the delay was fatal!

In this blink, Elder Shen and the other two surrounded him.

Elder Shen felt very good. His gaze landed on the Sun Crystal Seed on top of Zuo Mo's head and his eyes narrowed. He could not stop the greed in his eyes from showing as he said darkly, "So it is the Sun Crystal Seed! I was saying, how could there be Sun descendants. Your luck is pretty good to get such a great treasure!"

Li Shu and Lu Zhen also had excited expressions. They were high on their guard and were wary of letting the other escape. Li Shu was more detail-minded. His gaze landed on the bronze mask on the other's face. For some unknown reason, he felt a thread of fear.

This thread of fear came out of nowhere. He hurriedly focused. With Elder present, the other definitely could not escape!

Elder Shen said lightly, "Be good and give the treasures, I'll spare your life!"

Zuo Mo's heart sank and a bitter smile came onto his mouth!

As expected, people died for wealth, birds died for food!

The pressure of the yuanying was like a mountain. Zuo Mo felt he couldn't breathe as the mountain-like pressure came onto him! What was even worse was that the Sun Crystal Seed shrank back. It did not react at all against the pressure that came at him!

The last life-saving straw was ineffective. Zuo Mo's heart reached rock-bottom.

At this moment, Elder Shen's expression changed.

“Leaving the treasures is a given, but I think that the life doesn't need to be spared.” A middle-aged person dressed in Taoist robes slowly appeared in Zuo Mo's vision. His appearance was extremely sudden as it seemed to be out of thin air.

“I agree with Brother Ye's words!”

An old person with a bamboo staff came out of the corner.

Zuo Mo's face was ashen.

Yuanying! Two more yuanying!

Chapter 503 - Tian Huan

Elder Shen's expression was dark.

He naturally recognized the two people in front of him. The one in the Supreme Polarity robes was called Ge Hai and name of the one holding the bamboo staff was unknown to Elder Shen so he called him the Old Bamboo Staff Man. Both had yuanying cultivation. Their individually their power was not comparable to his but if the two worked together, he wasn't sure what the result could be.

One of them stood on the right and the other on the left, their positions forming triangle. Their intentions to work together was evident.

“What do you two mean? Do you want to be enemies with my Tian Huan?” Elder Shen said faintly. Within his tone, a proudness could not be disguised.

“Tian Huan?”

The two's expression changed slightly. The Old Bamboo Staff Man snorted coldly. “Tian Huan? When did Xu Ling Sect become Tian Huan? Does Sire feel we are easy to fool?”

His words were hard but his tone had unconsciously softened.

Zuo Mo also gaped on hearing this. He naturally knew what Tian

Huan was. The reason that the territories of the xiuzhe were called Four Realms was because of Kun Lun, Xuan Kong, Tian Huan, and Xi Xuan. The names of the four realms represented the biggest sects of each region.

Sword xiu of Kun Lun, dhyana xiu of Xuan Kong Temple, seal xiu of Tian Huan, and roaming xiu of the Xi Xuan Alliance.

So when the other two heard Elder Shen call himself one of Tian Huan, their presences instantly weakened and intentions of retreat rose. The four great sects were the largest sects of the xiuzhe world. They were titans that could not be touched. The two of them might be yuanying and could be ranked first and second in Cloud Sea Jie but in front of Tian Huan, they were as minuscule as ants.

However, they did not leave despite the reservations they had. It still needed to be proven if the other was really one of Tian Huan. They would not believe it so easily.

Li Shu snorted coldly and opened his hand. A ring of light made from unique seal scripts floated on his palm.

“You should recognize this.”

Even though he was facing a yuanying xiuzhe, Li Shu was not courteous at all. He was also extremely furious. Things kept on happening on this mission and he was already full of rage. The sect leader had told him to not expose their identities this time. He hadn't thought that they would end up being forced to reveal their

identities in the end.

When the two saw the ring of light, their expressions changed greatly.

The ring of light slowly spun in Li Shu's palm. The seal scripts seemed to be connected like chains and formed a ring of light.

This was the sky ring that shook all of Four Realm Heavens!

Every inner sect disciple of Tian Huan would have a sky ring that belonged to them. The sky ring was the proof of their identity and also their understanding of seal formations. The sky ring was a scripture unique to Tian Huan and outsiders were unable to forge it.

Just as Li Shu thought the two would retreat, Ge Hai suddenly said ambiguously, "I had really not expected to see people from Tian Huan. This old man is very fortunate. However, this Cloud Sea Jie is really far, it shouldn't be under Tian Huan's control."

The thought of retreat decreased in the Old Bamboo Staff Man. So what if it was Tian Huan? No matter how big Tian Huan was, they could not control everything. If they took the secret treasure and then found a hidden place to seclude themselves and cultivate, how could Tian Huan find them?

Elder Shen's expression changed slightly. His first reaction was, did they know of that treasure?

Li Shu also felt this situation was terrible. He also had not expected that the name of Tian Huan would not intimidate these people. This was the first time it had happened to him. Even when he had been interacting with Ning Yi and the others, if he exposed even a bit of his identity, they all fawned warmly over him. Even a person as proud as Ning Yi did as well!

Before he could think of a solution, other people had arrived.

The incomer was Cao Bei, the expert famed in Cloud Sea Jie. Seeing everyone's position, he instantly understood. He respectfully bowed towards Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man. "Greetings to Elder Ge, Elder Zhu!"

"Little Cao Bei has also come!" Ge Hai said with a smile.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man also exchanged greetings with Cao Bei.

Cloud Sea Jie was not large and there were just the few that could be called experts. Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man were also the only yuanying xiuzhe in Cloud Sea Jie. Their reputation and status were naturally high.

Without a second word, Cao Bei stood on the side of these two people.

Very quickly, the number of xiuzhe that arrived increased.

Those that could enter the shen temple were the top experts of Cloud Sea Jie. None of them were stupid. Looking at the situation, they instantly understood.

Everyone started exchanging greetings and conversing with friendliness.

Elder Shen and Li Shu had black faces. More and more people were joining Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man's side. The situation was becoming increasingly disadvantageous to them. Elder Shen started to regret that he had not brought more people along. If one more yuanying had come, he would dare to attack the other side.

If it was one-on-one, these yuanying from little sects would not be a problem.

Right now, the numbers on the other side was increasing and their courage would grow as well.

Gradually, the situation changed.

There were three camps. Elder Shen's side, Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man, and some xiuzhe of unknown origins that were scattered about.

Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man had the most power. They were all local xiuzhe of Cloud Sea Jie and knew of each other. With

Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man as the two yuanying at the front, they were the most united.

The three sides faced off. Zuo Mo was encircled at the center, unable to escape even if he had wings.

Seeing the present situation, Zuo Mo felt it was interesting and the majority of his nervousness disappeared.

Elder Shen said amusedly, “Cloud Sea Jie is really a good place. Everyone is very courageous. However, this old man will put the words down. We will settle the debts of however becomes enemies with my Tian Huan today.”

“Tian Huan”

The crowd shifted and many people showed expressions of terror. Those that had sects and groups instantly showed hesitation. They could escape and hide but their sect could not. If they became enemies of Tian Huan, they would bring extinction to their sect.

“Is there proof?”

A voice suddenly sounded in the crowd.

Li Shu’s face as cold as he showed his sky ring again.

A xiuzhe came of the group and bowed with folded hands towards the crowd. “This one has a family and will not enter into this affair, farewell!”

Finishing, he left without looking back.

With him as the example, other people started to leave. These people all had sects or families. They did not want to bring calamity to their family or sect due to a search for treasure.

The number of people on Ge Hai’s side which had originally been the strongest instantly decreased. Less than a third remained. The name of Tian Huan was enough to scare the great majority of people. However, the remainder were all lawless brutes. They did not feel terror and showed an excited desire for battle.

Zuo Mo looked with interest at this scene. It wasn’t possible to see a big battle like this normally.

Hmm!

His heart suddenly jumped and his body instinctively tensed.

An almost indiscernible ripple came from the deeps of the shen temple like a heartbeat.

It was from the direction of the sacrificial altar.

Zuo Mo became alert. He suppressed his joy and gathered his attention. He was like the hunter in the snow waiting patiently for his prey. After about ten breaths, another ripple passed across his mind.

It was the sacrificial altar!

Zuo Mo's heart beat uncontrollably!

Fortunately, he was wearing a bronze mask on his face so no one detected his face change. He forced himself to calm down. He carefully raised his head and glanced at the people around him before he rapidly averted his gaze.

No one else had noticed this ripple!

Zuo Mo thought about how he was recognized by the shen temple. Was it because of this that he could detect this ripple?

What was the meaning in this ripple? Was something changing on the sacrificial altar?

Extremely sensitive to opportunity, Zuo Mo instantly realized that this may be his only chance!

Any change for him who was in a state of certain death was beneficial!

A thread of hope appearing in a situation of certain death made Zuo Mo feel as though his heart was raised up at his throat. At this time, Zuo Mo showed exceptional mental strength. He quickly calmed down and felt that ripple that was disappearing!

Calm! He had to be calm!

Another ten breaths and he once again felt the ripple!

The shen power inside his body suddenly flowed of its own accord.

Was it

Zuo Mo's mind moved. He did not stop it, and followed the ripple coming from the sacrificial altar to allow the shen power to flow slowly.

The flow of shen power was very slow. Zuo Mo did not focus on anything else and memorized the pathways the shen power flowed.

He was motionless like a puppet.

The faceoff was suddenly interrupted by a suddenly attack. Someone suddenly shot out an arrow. That arrow was like a spark thrown into a barrel of gunpowder. The three sides that had been tense acted almost at the same moment.

The situation instantly became extremely chaotic.

Worried that they would cause the collapse of the ruins, the three yuanying were restrained in their attacks. Li Shu, Cao Bei, and the others did not have compunctions and attacked at full power.

Having held back his anger for a long time, Li Shu used a major killing move the moment he attacked.

The skyring in his palm spun. Seal scripts suddenly lit up under everyone's feet. During the time he had presented the skyring, he had stealthily set up formations on the ground.

His move was an extremely beautiful and famed killing move of Tian Huan. It was called "Skyring Shadow." Even Ge Hai and the Old Bamboo Staff Man who were yuanying did not detect it. It was possible to see from this how powerful the attack was.

The light of the seal scripts filled everyone's visions. Two xiuzhe of Cloud Sea Jie only managed to wail before they were dismembered into multiple pieces by the light.

Ge Hai was furious, "Child has such a vicious heart!"

A black and white yinyang symbol shot at Li Shu.

Shen Wu Hai said coldly, "A minuscule one dares to call glory to themselves!"

A fire pillar stopped the yinyang symbol. Among the fire light, it was possible to see sea scripts flowing. This ball of flame suddenly grew as though it was alive and had opened its mouth to swallow the yinyang symbol.

The bamboo staff in the Old Bamboo Staff Man's hand suddenly turned from green into an inky black that reflected no light at all. Yet the leaves on the end of the bamboo staff were deathly grey and was extremely eerie.

Shen Wu Hai's expression changed as he yelled, "Corpse Sea Bamboo! You dare to forge Corpse Sea Bamboo!"

Hearing the three words "Corpse Sea Bamboo," the expressions of the surrounding xiuzhe changed.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man smiled. He waved the corpse sea bamboo and a ball of black energy flew at Shen Wu Hai.

The black energy was roiling. It was possible to see twisted and blurry faces moving within it and it was frightening to see.

Shen Wu Hai did not dare to underestimate it and shot out a fire light.

The fire and the black energy collided and were mutually destroyed.

Shen Wu Hai's expression became grave. He hadn't expected the other to have a wondrous object like the Corpse Sea Bamboo. This caused his attack to lose out slightly.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man did not dare to be careless. However, he did not feel surprise. How could people that came from Tian Huan be simple?

No matter how fiercely the people fought, Zuo Mo who was at the very center seemed to be at the eye of the storm and it was unusually silent.

The three yuanying stopped all the attacks that targeted Zuo Mo. They all knew that the crux of this battle was between the three of them.

Motionless like a puppet, Zuo Mo did not show any suspicious qualities that would attract their attention.

No one noticed that the pair of eyes on that lowered mask was flashing at this time with an unusual light.

Chapter 504 - Blood Script Bell

The situation was chaotic.

The Corpse Sea Bamboo in the Old Bamboos Staff Man's hand was a great treasure. Every time it was waved black balls of energy were released, each held countless angry souls inside. The rumor was that Corpse Sea Bamboo would only grow in extremely evil places within sea of corpses. The abundant death energy would become its nutrients.

Shen Wu Hai never thought that he would see such a powerful talismans in a little place as Cloud Sea Jie.

His seal fire that could be called masterful wasn't effective against this little Corpse Sea Bamboo. In comparison, Ge Hai's cultivation, while higher than the Old Bamboo Staff Man, was less of a threat to Shen Wu Hai.

Li Shu's cultivation was pretty good. As an inner sect disciple, he might only have jindan cultivation but he had endless tricks. The little skyring changed endlessly.

At the side, Lu Zhen was much more clumsy in comparison. His ling power was greater than Li Shu but no matter if it was the spells he cast or his talismans, they were far lacking compared to Li Shu.

Even so, his power was still a great step above this group of Cloud Sea Jie jindan. He was definitely the third most powerful jindan!

This was the difference between large and small sects.

Any disciple of a large sect could usually rival the sect leaders of small sects. This was because the foundations of those large sects had been accumulated through thousands of years. They had abundant resources, profound spells, astoundingly powerful masters. This meant that their starting points were far higher than normal xiuzhe.

As they really started to fight, Li Shu calmed down.

The battle was not as difficult as he had imagined. Except the surprise of the Corpse Sea Bamboo, he did not feel any pressure due to the skill of the other xiuzhe. They couldn't compare to the spars in the sect.

He couldn't help but feel a thread of pride.

This caused him to feel even more relaxed and his skill was expressed to its limits. The skyring in his hand rapidly changed. All kinds of formation methods took their turn and flowed.

Those xiuzhe that he was suppressing were filled with shock. Li Shu's strength far surpassed their expectations.

He alone managed to suppress seven jindan.

The constantly changing formations were like the invisible threads that controlled a puppet, exhausting the other's concentration to deal with it.

Li Shu was idle and calm. No nervousness could be seen. His attention was on the entire situation. The Corpse Sea Bamboo was powerful but he was not worried. How could someone who was an elder in the sect just have only this level of strength?

Also, in terms of talismans, how many sects could be spoken of in the same sentence as Tian Huan?

His attention was mostly focused on those xiuzhe of unknown origins. In his view, these people were the unstable factor. They were most likely to bring about an unexpected change.

What reassured him slightly was that this group all fought for themselves.

It seemed he needed to add some power and sort out these people from Cloud Sea Jie as fast as possible. Murderousness flashed through Li Shu's eyes. At some time, a bronze bell appeared in his hand. This bell looked very normal, the yellow bronze body was covered in complex red seal scripts that crossed like the network of blood vessels. It was terrifying to see.

This Blood Script Bell was the talismans his master had bestowed onto him.

The seemingly normal-looking pearwood handle came from a thousand year bitter pear tree. The body of the bell was forged from thirteen kinds of rare bronze gold. When it was forged, the sound of the bell had rang out for three days among the mountains before ending.

Li Shu usually treasured it. Other than imprinting on it every day, he rarely used it in battle. The other disciples knew that he had a defensive talisman but there were only a rare few that had seen it.

At this time, he wanted to finish the battle quickly which was why he showed this treasure!

At this time, a feeling of danger suddenly rose. A dot of light suddenly exploded in Li Shu's eyes!

The extremely strong feeling of danger caused every hair on Li Shu's body to stand on end.

Expression changing dramatically, Li Shu retreated suddenly. A dash of light shot out of the skyring and shielded his body.

Ping!

Before the formation lit up, it cracked like glass.

Among the flurry of shattered fragments, a serene light burrowed out and appeared in front of Li Shu.

“Masked Assassin!”

For the first time, fear was on Li Shu’s face. He suddenly felt a thread of regret. Damn it! How had he forgotten this dangerous guy?

This serene light was like glue. The intimidating cold essence aimed at Li Shu’s brow.

At this moment of life and death, Li Shu could not consider anything else. His ling power furiously flooded the Blood Script Bell in his hand.

Ding!

A blood red ripple of energy suddenly spread with the Blood Script Bell as the center!

The dot of light that was rush at him from the front suddenly grew in brightness when it encountered this bloody light. It gave a ear-piercing howl!

A blurry shadow silently appeared.

This change came extremely suddenly. The xiuzhe in the surroundings were not able to react until this bloody ripple reached them. All of them changed expression.

As the bloody ripple script passed across their bodies, the blood in their faces seemed to drain out.

They were frozen where they stood as though they were wooden puppets. There wasn't a wound on their bodies, but their exposed skin was ashen white and without any blood.

The other xiuzhe paled and jumped out of the battle range far from Li Shu! The power of the Blood Script Bell caused all of them pale.

The only one that did not retreat was the Masked Assassin. He advanced instead. His body was like a blurry ball that could not be caught.

Every time that dot of light came into contact with the bloody light, it would suddenly light up as though there was friction with the air.

What was even harder for people to accept was that the dot of light was extremely domineering. Even Li Shu was suppressed to the point he could not raise his head.

Pia pia pia!

Every time the dot of light came into contact with the blood light, Li Shu's hand that held the Blood Script Bell would shake.

The ghostly figure of the Masked Assassin continuously change position and roamed around in search of an opportunity to make the fatal strike.

This added great pressure to Li Shu. Pulses of vibration came from the bell. He was almost unable to hold onto the bell!

The presence of death was so close, almost breathing on his face.

It was the first time Li Shu was placed in such a dangerous situation. He gritted his teeth and held the Blood Script Bell in a death grip to try to control the Blood Script Bell.

The Masked Assassin was unusually cunning. He probably had guessed that Li Shu's ling power would be expended extremely quickly to control such a high grade talisman like the Blood Script Bell. So he continuously attacked head on to increase the rate that Li Shu's ling power was up.

Under the storm of the Masked Assassin's attacks, Li Shu wavered.

"Shixiong!" Lu Zhen saw Li Shu was in danger. He did not attend to his own enemy, the blue ring on his hand expanding and shooting at the Masked Assassin.

The ghostly Masked Assassin flashed. A dot of light appeared behind Lu Zhen. The light flashed and then disappeared like an arrow.

Bam!

The ling armor on Lu Zhen's body suddenly exploded. His body shook and he froze where he stood.

There was a bloody hole the size of a bowl in his chest.

“Shidi!” Li Shu glared angrily, sorrowful inside.

The difference in status between Lu Zhen and he was great, and their relationship was normal. However, the other had died to save him. This was a great and unparalleled blow to Li Shu.

A flush of blood suddenly appeared on Li Shu's handsome face.

The skyring suddenly released many lights. Seal scripts flew out of the skyring like a stream of water. These bright seal scripts were so numerous that people felt it was endless.

Li Shu stood solemnly as he shook the Blood Script Bell gently, shouting, “Skyring Blood Chime!”

Those seal scripts floating in the air suddenly froze and formed rings of light in the air. Hundreds of light rings formed an enormous formation. Chimes echoed with ripples of bloody light in this formation!

At this instant, all the rings chimed!

Boom!

Everything inside the formation was completely shattered!

Some xiuzhe were unable to escape and crumbled before even having the time to wail. The xiuzhe that were frozen like wood puppets also disappeared!

An indiscernible muffled grunt, and a dot of light suddenly erupted out of the formation. Right after, a figure suddenly charged out of the formation!

He flashed like a ghost in front of everyone's eyes and then disappeared.

Pia!

The formation of light rings completely crumbled like an avalanche of snow and disappeared into the ring.

A flow of blood came from Li Shu's mouth. His gaze landed on the ground. There was a little puddle of blood there. The corners of his mouth unconsciously jerked, and he was shocked inside.

This Skyring Blood chime was his ultimate move. Even this move was unable to kill the Masked Assassin..

The other was really unfathomable!

Li Shu wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth and smoothed out his ruffled clothing without even looking at the surrounding xiuzhe.

No one dared to move forward.

This move had frightened all these xiuzhe.

Even the Masked Assassin had been wounded by this move. This youth was really powerful!

As expected of a disciple of Tian Huan!

Li Shu's move shocked all of the battlefield. But no one would ever expect that a strange feeling formed in Zuo Mo's mind, a figure who had his head bent and was dismissed by everyone.

He felt Li Shu's move was very familiar. Wasn't that a stronger version of the [Skyring Moon Chime Formation] that he became famous with? The power of the blood red bell was slightly scary, but those familiar rings of light when combined together in this move was the same as [Skyring Moon Chime Froamtion]!

So the [Skyring Moon Chime Formation] originated from Tian Huan!

Zuo Mo released a sigh and then he twisted his mouth.

Tsk tsk, leftovers of what ge played

But there was not much time left for him to ponder. He knew the Masked Assassin was here from before and was not surprised. At this time, he just desired to know what that indiscernible ripple that came from the sacrificial altar was.

He wanted this fight to be as violent as possible. This way, he would have a chance.

Shen Wu Hai had gotten serious.

He was not affected by Lu Zhen. The death of an outer sect disciple was not worthy of his attention. However, he was furious at the appearance of the Masked Assassin. He had been tangled up with the two old people and Li Shu had almost been killed.

Li Shu was an inner sect disciple!

If an inner sect disciple died in front of him, he didn't even want to know how many criticisms he would hear. Li Shu's channels

were wounded. When he returned, the other old guys would complain greatly.

Thinking about this, how could the proud Shen Wu Hai not be angry?

“Just a Corpse Sea Bamboo and you want to stop this old one?” Shen Wu Hai shouted. His ling power expanded, “Taste this old man’s Dark Void Fire!”

A clear and colorless flame appeared at the center of his palm.

Boom!

The moment this transparent flame appeared, everyone’s hearts trembled!

At this point, Zuo Mo who felt it suddenly opened his eyes!

Chapter 505 - Dark Void Fire

Zuo Mo looked in the direction of the sacrificial altar and his thoughts were turbulent.

At this time, no one noticed Zuo Mo's abnormality. Everyone's eyes were locked onto the transparent flame in Shen Wu Hai's hand.

Dark Void Fire!

The clear fire soundlessly burned and pulsed in Shen Wu Hai's hand. The air seemed to suddenly become sticky. An invisible ripple spread out from the flame and with each pulse, the heat could be felt.

Dark Void Fire!

Li Shu was alarmed. Elder Shen was going to go all out!

Shocked, he widened his eyes in fear of missing a detail of the fight. Dark Void Fire was the technique that Elder Shen was famous for. It was well-known in Tian Huan. This thread of Dark Void Fire contained what Elder Shen comprehended from studying seal scripts. It was named a fire but it was not actually within the five elements.

This thread of Dark Void Fire was the size of a pinky, but in reality, it was constructed of three hundred extremely small seal

scripts layered together. It was exquisitely crafted.

The rumors were that the Dark Void Fire had reached the peak of seal fires. When Li Shu saw Elder Shen revealed his killing move, he became excited!

The Old Bamboo Staff Man's expression changed. He detected the power the moment the Dark Void Fire appeared.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man's expression became grave. He threw the Corpse Sea Bamboo into the air and chanted. The Corpse Sea Bamboo that was inky black started to melt and became a puddle of black water. A strange smelly odor spread that burrowed into everyone's hearts.

Shen Wu Hai smirked coldly. The thread of Dark Void Fire coiled on his palm like a transparent snake.

The Dark Void Fire was clear and colorless. If one did not look closely, it would be hard to detect it was there.

Shen Wu Hai's expression was proud but he did not dare to be careless. Wondrous objects like the Corpse Sea Bamboo usually had unexpected abilities. He did not want to trip up on flat ground.

The puddle of black water above the Old Bamboo Staff Man slowly moved. Suddenly, black bamboo shoots grew out of the black water at a visible rate.

The black bamboo grew very quickly. In a blink, it was a half-mu patch of black bamboo. Like a black cloud, it floated above the Old Bamboo Stall Man's head.

The mood suddenly became as heavy as lead.

The pressure produced when two yuanying went all out was a calamity for the surrounding jindan! Even Li Shu did not have the ability to interfere in this high level battle!

The intimidating pressure was suffocating. He felt even his breathing was becoming difficult!

Yuanying! This was yuanying!

Li Shu's gaze was reverent and burning. It was the first time he directly face such a great power. The shock and awe it gave him surpassed his expectations.

He carefully closed his mouth and nose. The strange stench that the Corpse Sea Bamboo exuded had a strong corrosive quality. He raised his foot and stone powder rose into the air. There was a clear footprint on the hard stone brick. Under the corrosive presence of the Corpse Sea Bamboo, the shen temple's hard stone tiles were as soft as bread.

The jindan activated their ling armor to defend against the corrosive presence of the Corpse Sea Bamboo.

If there were ningmai xiuzhe, just the presence of the Corpse Sea Bamboo would be enough to kill all of them.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man cast a spell. Above his head the leaves on the black bamboo sea started to fall. The black bamboo leaves formed all kinds of black poisonous insects or corpse insects that charged at Shen Wu Hai!

At this time, hair-raising hissing came like the tide!

The people felt the shen temple darken and felt as though it was inescapable.

Shen Wu Hai's expression was grave. He slowly raised his right hand and pushed forward without any finesse!

An enormous clear handprint left his hand and slammed at the black insects.

Pew pew pew!

Under the clear handprint, the black insects exploded like smoke and disappeared.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man snorted coldly. The number of black bamboo leaves falling increased. The number of insects had increased, and were packed together into a tide that completely surrounded Shen Wu Hai.

That clear handprint was unable to stand up by itself under the fearless attacks of the insects. In a blink, the black insects covered the entire handprint. It looked terrifying. The sound of the insects chewing and swallowing caused everyone's scalps to prick and feel shock.

If this was a person, even the bones would be eaten!

There were insects that exploded and disappeared but these insect did not know fear and furiously chewed the enormous hand.

The enormous handprint was becoming visibly smaller.

In a flash, the enormous hand that had been multiple zhang large was chewed to the size of a fist.

A thread of pride passed through the eyes of the Old Bamboo Staff Man. He had accidentally obtained this Corpse Sea Bamboo. From the day he obtained it, he spent almost all of his time refining it.

In order for the Corpse Sea Bamboo to reach its maximum power, the Old Bamboo Staff Man had used a corpse forging method.

It was strange to say, but after the bamboo formed, this Corpse Sea Bamboo was as green as jade and did not have a hint of death energy. The Old Bamboo Staff Man was of high status in Cloud Sea Jie. It had been many years since he had fought against someone

else so the power of the Corpse Sea Bamboo had never been displayed.

That was, until today!

To use it against an elder of Tian Huan to baptize this talisman, it was enough!

A thread of viciousness flashed across this Old Bamboo Staff Man's eyes. If the two people did not die here today, then their own days in the future would only be spent escaping pursuit!

In order to get rid of all future obstacles, he had to kill them!

Murderousness brimming, the Old Bamboo Staff man unhesitatingly pointed at Shen Wu Hai and shouted, "Go!"

A sharp howl sounded in the air. Countless black worms charged at Shen Wu Hai from all directions.

Just as Shen Wu Hai seemed to be swallowed by the black insects, a smile passed at the corner of his lips.

"Good move!"

The enormous palm that was whittled down until it was a fist-sized ball suddenly exploded in dazzlingly light. The black insects on the enormous hand burned up in the clear flame. They were

burned to ash before they could make a sound.

A thread of transparent flame once again appeared in everyone's view.

It silently burned in the air.

Under the flame, densely packed seal scripts appeared like an enormous spider web that spread and shrouded everyone.

No one knew when this formation had been set up.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man's expression changed. Even though he did not know what formation this was, he knew he was now at a disadvantage. All of his moves were predicted and had been part of the other's plan.

As he expected, the transparent flame silently pulsed. The formation lit up. Woosh, flames exploded around Shen Wu Hai and the black insects were all consumed by the flames.

In a blink, the tide of battle flipped!

Shen Wu Hai looked around with a proud expression. "With just you lot, and you dare to steal from my Tian Huan? You do not know your limits! Today, this old man will give you a taste of the Dark Void Fire!"

The seal scripts spun. Everyone found that their feet were glued to the ground. No matter how they tried, they were unable to break free!

The Dark Void Fire silently pulsed.

Boom, two threads of flames suddenly shot out under the feet of two xiuzhe and swallowed them.

The flames dissipated and nothing was left where the two people had been.

Shock and hopelessness filled everyone's faces. They used all kinds of methods to struggle but they were all ineffective.

Li Shu's gaze was deeply attracted to the silently pulsing Dark Void Fire. He was filled with reverence and respect. Elder's Dark Void Fire lived up to the rumors! It was an enormous formation but the thing truly effective was the Dark Void Fire, made from three hundred seal scripts!

Li Shu felt greatly reverent about Elder's skill with seal formations. Compared to his Skyring Blood Chime that seemed to make great noise, Elder's move was multiple times more skilled.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man and Ge Hai all had distressed expressions. The two of them exchanged a look and found intentions of fighting to the death.

The two of them were yuanying and were the only two people among all of these people that could move.

Shen Wu Hai, who had been paying attention to the Old Bamboo Staff Man, felt his heart tighten. This Dark Void Fire Formation was powerful but it was not easy to kill two yuanying at the same time. He had planned on getting rid of these cannon fodder before gathering all his power to deal with these two people.

Yet there was no time for him to regret how things had turned out.

The half-mu of black bamboo above the Old Bamboo Staff Man's head turned back into the Corpse Sea Bamboo. The Old Bamboo Staff Man sliced at his wrist with a fingernail. Blood spurted out. The Corpse Sea Bamboo seemed to drink in all the blood that had poured out.

The Old Bamboo Staff Man instantly seemed to age by two decades and his hair turned completely white.

Ge Hai's expression was grave. He carefully took out a Supreme Polarity Bead that was black and white. This bead was about the size of a pigeon's egg and did not look eye-catching.

But Shen Wu Hai who saw this Supreme Polarity Bead changed expression as he shouted, "Yinyang Null Polarity Bead"

Li Shu's expression turned white.

The Yinyang Null Polarity Bead was a very mysterious treasure. It was unknown who forged it, or why it was forged. It had mysterious origins. In the beginning, this bead was unknown but it had become famous after only one incident.

A sect that possessed three yuanying and sixteen jindan was massacred in one night.

The culprit was just one person.

When news of this incident spread, it shocked all of Four Realm Heaven, and the Yinyang Null Polarity Bead became famed.

The Yinyang Null Polarity Bead had stringent requirements on who could consumed it, the user had to be one above yuanying. It would cause the xiuhe's primal spirit to burn and produce terrifying power so the user could destroy enemies multiple times more powerful than they were. However, the user would die.

This was one of the rare treasures that could cause terror in large sects!

The Corpse Sea Bamboo that drank enough blood was suddenly inserted into the ground. The body of the bamboo started to slowly shift. In the span of a few breaths, it formed something similar to a face.

A short while later, the Corpse Sea Bamboo finished its

manifestation.

A monster with a green face and fangs appeared. It stood like a man with long limbs. Its needle-like black hairs which grew from the head continued to the tailbone.

It stood expressionlessly. There were no eyes, only two balls of shifting black energy.

Time seemed to freeze.

Shen Wu Hai was frightened by the Yinyang Null Polarity Bead and the Corpse Sea Bamboo monster.

“Kill him!” the aged Old Bamboo Staff Man pointed at Shen Wu hai and shouted harshly.

Shen Wu Hai prepared to fight. This vicious monster did not look easy.

The Corpse Sea Bamboo monster did not move.

“Quick, kill him!” the Old Bamboo Staff Man couldn’t help but shout again.

The Corpse Sea Bamboo monster remained motionless.

At this time, people detected that the Corpse Sea Bamboo monster seemed to be looking at someone

Following the gaze of the Corpse Sea Bamboo monster, everyone found that his gaze was tightly locked onto the person wearing a mask.

This sudden occurrence caused everyone to freeze.

It was him?

It was him!

Everyone now found that they had neglected this mysterious person wearing the bronze mask from the beginning.

At this moment, Zuo Mo's heart suddenly jumped. He figured it out!

The ripple of the sacrificial altar! He figured it out!

Boom, countless things flooded into his mind!

Unconsciously, amidst everyone's suspicious, puzzled, and speculator gazes, Zuo Mo lifted his arms.

-It was like tens of thousands of years ago.

Chapter 506 - That Herd Of White Lambs!

Dong!

A deep rhythmic sound came from the depths of the shen temple. This sound was very strange and burrowed into people's hearts. Everywhere the sound passed, the flesh and blood of the people as well as their muscles suddenly shook uncontrollably.

Everyone became deathly silent.

All movement, all sound, after this sound arrived had disappeared.

Everyone unconsciously stopped what they were doing and turn their gazes towards the depths of the shen temple. Everyone was frightened by this strange and sudden sound. The three yuanying that were in a life-and-death battle had shocked expressions.

A vast power was carried along with this sound, coming from the shen temple.

Their complexions paled.

This power was vast and burning like rampaging lava, like a violent sea of fire.

Someone suddenly shouted in shock and broke through this

deathly silence.

Hearing the shout, everyone turned their faces and they saw a shocking scene.

A golden ray came from above their heads like a golden sword breaking through darkness.

The lights of all the spells and formations being cast were dim in comparison to this ray of golden light. It was so scorching, so dazzling that people could not look at it directly.

Underneath the ray of light, Zuo Mo's arms were spread as though he was going to embrace this ray of light. Bathing in this golden light, there was a layer of gold energy flowing around Zuo Mo's body. Under the scorching light, the bronze mask was unusually dark and stood as a stark contrast to the light, as though it was a bottomless shadow.

The thick golden light landed on Zuo Mo's spread arms and flowed along his arms as though it was sticky golden liquid.

The golden light gathered at Zuo Mo's fingertips. It slowly gathered, grew, and formed a large drop of golden liquid that finally fell. As the golden liquid left his fingers, the outer layers of the golden liquid continuously dissipated into dots of golden energy that seemed like stars.

Large amounts of golden liquid fell from Zuo Mo's arms and

created hundreds of golden streaks of fragmented energy. They were in rows like golden features and beautiful to look at.

Everyone was gaping.

From beginning to end, no one ever looked twice at Zuo Mo who was surrounded other than the first glance when he appeared before them. From every angle, this guy was the fish in the net, the lamb washed and waiting on the chopping block for slaughter. Depending on circumstances the person who raised the knife would be different, but the lamb would still suffer the same fate.

Zuo Mo had been dismissed, everyone had dismissed him.

Only when this ray of light came from the sky did people suddenly realize that this incident was not as simple as they imagined.

Shen Wu Hai was the first to react. He said angrily, “Kill him!”

Dong!

Another sound that shook people’s bones interrupted Shen Wu Hai’s angry shout. It passed through the layers of protection and struck on the deepest part of their hearts.

The temperature of the shen temple rose dramatically. The air was burning so hot that it seemed the air would burn.

Dong dong dong

The beats followed each other, and accelerated in frequency.

Everyone found to their shock that they seemed to be restrained by an invisible power. No matter how they channeled ling power, they were unable to move a finger. With every beat, their energies and blood would uncontrollably vibrate. After several beats, everyone's energies and blood was roiling, and their faces turned red and black in turn.

Their eyes turned from shock into terror.

Shen Wu Hai never thought such a thing could happen. He deeply regretted not having killed this mask-wearing guy at the beginning, this decision led him to such a desperate situation.

If there had been a thread of doubt before that this mask-wearing guy was a descendant of the Sun Tribe, he was completely sure of the other's identity now.

The beat, the ray of light, the restraining power, they were all powered by the shen temple.

This power was so strong it caused people to feel hopeless!

But Shen Wu Hai was not robbed of hope. He was still struggling.

Of all the people, he knew the most about the shen temple. This power was peerless and great, filled with domination, and burned without any disguise.

It was like the burning sun in the sky that people were unable to look at directly.

But Shen Wu Hai was not willing to wait to be captured. This scorching power was hard to resist but under this vast dominance, he detected a thread of burning without regard for consequences.

This shen temple that was reaching its end was burning its last vestiges of power.

As long if he could resist until it finished burning

He would be able to have a thread of a chance!

Just one chance, he was confident he could reverse the situation. Even if the other was a Sun descendant, he didn't believe the other could master this shen temple.

Because of the requirement for shen power!

Even if he was a Sun descendent, he could not cultivate shen power. At present, there were no more lands with shen power, all methods of cultivating shen power had been lost in the dust of history. Without shen power, he could receive recognition of the shen temple, but he definitely could not control the shen temple.

This was just the last dying struggles of the shen temple.

Shen Wu Hai suddenly calmed down.

His gaze suddenly stopped and his body froze.

The person with the bronze mask suddenly moved. Under the mask hidden in shadow came raw and simple sounds. His body twisted like a snake taking a strange position.

The golden feathers constructed from fragmented golden energies drew out cryptic tracks in the air as Zuo Mo's fingers moved.

An extremely unfamiliar power suddenly spread in waves.

Shen Wu Hai that just calmed down look at Zuo Mo as though he was seeing a ghost.

This ... this ... this ...

Shen power!

This was shen power!

Shen power ... how was it possible ... it was not possible!

Unable to move, Shen Wu Hai's mind was completely blank. This astounding discovery exploded in his mind like lightning on a clear day!

This was his last thought.

A ray of light came from the sky and covered him. He felt his vision turn snow white and then he lost consciousness.

Dozens of rays of light shot down from the shen temple. Every person was restrained by a ray of light. The xiuzhe that were caught, no matter their cultivation level, had frozen expressions as though they were puppets.

Zuo Mo stopped moving. The golden energy on his body was much dimmer, so weak it seemed it would dissipate.

“Ha ... ss!”

Hoarse laughter came from behind the mask but it turned into sharp inhales. Zuo Mo jerked his lips with difficulty. He wanted to laugh but every piece of muscle was extremely sore. Even the muscles in his face were very sore. A slight pull and it caused heart-boring pain.

But even if his entire skeleton felt as though it was coming apart, and there was soreness everywhere, it could not diminish the pride and joy he felt.

What could make one happier than turning around the situation from a state of certain death?

Looking at the people in front of him that seemed like statues, Zuo Mo couldn't help but let out a smug yet regretful laugh.

These rays were a defensive power of the shen temple. They could freeze the figures of the enemy and take away their consciousness. It was very powerful. When Zuo Mo felt the ripple from the sacrificial altar, he unconsciously thought about the cryptic things he received from the sacrificial altar. In a desperate situation, Zuo Mo did not have the room to pick, and charged without regard to try to communicate with the sacrificial altar.

He had not expected that he would succeed!

Having made successful contact, Zuo Mo instantly understood why the sacrificial altar was sending ripples.

After being sealed for tens of thousands of years, the shen temple's activation had caused the remaining power to be quickly expended.

The shen temple only had one more thread of power left.

If Zuo Mo had not been involved, this last thread of power would have been used to burn the shen temple to ash. The ripples from the sacrificial altar were the warning signal before the death of the

shen temple.

But Zuo Mo who was in successful communication with the sacrificial altar used the last power to strike a fatal blow!

The power of the shen power was unparalleled. Even if it was the last thread, it was not something that Shen Wu Hai and the others could withstand.

These rays of light were called “Golden Crow Restraint Lights” and the most powerful defensive attack of the shen temple. Those that were covered by the Golden Crow Restraint Lights would lose all consciousness and become puppets.

However, the Golden Crow Restraint Lights could not directly kill the enemy. Additionally, the moment the other’s body was damaged, they would wake up from the restraint. Yuanying like Shen Wu Hai would be able to kill Zuo Mo in the moment they woke up. The way the Sun Shen Temple usually dealt with enemies that were affected by the Golden Crow Restraint Lights was to throw them into the Burning Shen Realm and leave them to burn alive.

He could not kill these people

Zuo Mo felt slight regret but his eyes turned and he laughed strangely. Of course, inhales of pain could not be avoided.

He suppressed the soreness of his body and came in front of Shen

Wu Hai.

Looking at the still Shen Wu Hai, his gaze was greedy and heated. Without hesitating, he started to search Shen Wu Hai's body.

Ling armor, space ring, talismans

The excitement and joy of taking his spoils caused Zuo Mo to forget the pain of his body. With familiar movements, he crisply cleaned out Shen Wu Hai's possessions.

Really cleanly Zuo Mo didn't even leave behind the undergarments.

This cloth was pretty good!

Zuo Mo had keen eyes that instantly lit up.

So sumptuous, so sumptuous!

Woven from fifth-grade Flowing Wind as the base mixed with the feathers of the blood-weeping bird. There were three formations on it, "Nurture," "Strengthen," and "Endurance." He could definitely sell this easily for two hundred pieces of fifth-grade jingshi.

Two hundred pieces of fifth-grade jingshi!

You can't really blame ge!

Zuo Mo smiled and his hands became even quicker.

If there people were not experts, then they were leaders of local powers. Who among them wasn't rich? Zuo Mo didn't even look closely, but he still stripped them of clothing and armor.

Corpse Sea Bamboo, Yinyang Null Polarity Bead

His movements were extremely quick. It was not the first time he had done this job and his efficiency was naturally high.

Even the pitiful Masked Assassin did not avoid this fate. He had not gone far after being wounded and sneaked back closer to hide in the shadows with the intentions of dealing a fatal blow at the crucial moment.

But the shen temple had identified everyone except Zuo Mo as the enemy. The Masked Assassin had not been able to escape and was trapped in the Golden Crow Restraint Light.

Towards this guy that had almost killed him, Zuo Mo was full of hatred. Without a word, Zuo Mo stripped the other clean and did not leave the other's trademark mask.

A short time later, there was only a pile of naked puppets left in the shen temple. They were left clean like a group of lambs that had been sheared.

“Such a spectacular sight!”

Zuo Mo ran away filled with emotion and pride. The duration of the Golden Crow Restraint Light was not long.

Everyone, goodbye!

Chapter 507 - First Make Up

When Zuo Mo just returned to Turtle Island from the Greenwood Secret Realm, the Sun Shen Temple collapsed like rotten wood. It created a giant cloud of dust. Yet before the dust settled, burning flames erupted out of the depths of the earth and swallowed the entire shen temple.

The people watching exclaimed in shock.

Shen Wu Hai felt his hand hurt and instantly woke.

Fire? His vision was filled with red. A sea of fire? Why was he in a sea of fire?

He flew into the air clueless. He instinctively escape this sea of fire. He channeled his ling power and flew into the sky.

Midair, he felt his body cool which caused his mind to clear up.

His body felt cool it was a very strange feeling

At this time, woosh, woosh, woosh, figures shot out of the shen temple debris. A dozen shadows appeared next to him.

These people all swayed and their expressions were slightly bewildered.

Shen Wu Hai was stunned where he stood. His expression became strange. Everywhere he looked, he saw white naked flesh. These people were not clothed, not even an inch of cloth.

Wait, that cool feeling

Shen Wu Hai's face turned ashen as he looked down. What entered his field of view was a patch of smooth white skin. His naked body was completely exposed in the air.

His head rang.

The crowd of spectators were deathly silent. Shen Wu Hai swept across them out of the corner of his eyes and could clearly see the shock on their faces.

Countless gazes gathered on his bare-naked body it felt cool

Laughter came like a tide.

Pew!

A mouthful of blood burst out of his throat. His figure wavered and he dropped down towards the sea of fire.

“Elder!”

Li Shu's weak voice came from afar and became blurry in Shen Wu Hai's consciousness.

Zuo Mo was inspecting his spoils of war.

The richness of the harvest this time surpassed his expectations. His grin almost reached his ears. Now that the shen temple was swallowed by fire, it had erased all the traces leading to him. No one would know that the masked person was him.

But before this, there was much work to be done.

Like the mountain of talismans piled up in front of him inside a formation.

Among these talismans, many had imprints left behind. Zuo Mo had made a special formation to block the imprint. If he could not erase the imprints, then these talismans had to be hidden. Otherwise, he would just be waiting for the other people to come find him.

Zuo Mo knew very well just how powerful the people he had offended this time were.

But clearing out the imprint was not a difficult task for Zuo Mo. He had the Great Day Banded Flame, the Greenvine Mystical Water, shen power, these could all erase the imprints.

What he was struggling with was another problem—how to prevent others from finding him.

Supposedly, Tian Huan had many xiuzhe skilled in divination. These people could peek at fate. Tian Huan definitely would not swallow their anger at having such a major loss. Tian Huan would even take revenge more cruelly to tell other people what the outcome of being enemies with Tian Huan was.

Zuo Mo didn't want to be the chicken that was killed to scare the monkeys. He needed to hide his tracks to prevent any future problems.

Fortunately, he had Pu Yao.

“Disrupt divination?” Pu Yao rubbed his chin. The eye that was exposed slightly narrowed. The lips that were as thin as blades slowly curved like the gleam of a blade.

Zuo Mo nodded. “Yes, yes.”

Pu Yao suddenly turned to ask Wei, “What methods do you have?”

Wei glanced at Zuo Mo. “Sacrificial offerings, but it needs at least yuanying level souls.”

This wasn't a field Wei was skilled in.

"Yuanying level souls?" Zuo Mo asked hesitantly. He was suspicious that there was a problem with his ears.

"Yes," Wei replied seriously, "I only know this one method."

Zuo Mo unhesitatingly turned to look at Pu Yao. Was he joking, yuanying level souls, even ten of him could not kill a yuanying.

Pu Yao smiled. Zuo Mo suddenly had a bad feeling.

"Very good, I like business deals that only has one supplier. I want a good price." Pu Yao's evil and sharp smile caused Zuo Mo to shudder.

A good price

Zuo Mo said tragically, "State your price!"

"You got pretty good things this time, oh, those bones, pity"
Pu Yao was full of regret in his words.

Zuo Mo's heart suddenly jumped. He knew that Pu Yao was speaking of the bones he found in the Burning Shen Realm. He secretly noted it down. So these bones were the best things out of what he got this time! Did this guy want the ink jade bones? Zuo Mo's heart was insecure but when he heard Pu Yao say "pity," his

heart eased slightly.

However, Pu Yao did not continue after “pity.” His tone changed, “All of the Sun Fruits, and one hundred Sun Seeds.”

Pu Yao looked smilingly at Zuo Mo.

His heart just relaxing, Zuo Mo inhaled sharply and his heart jerked. Pu Yao’s cut was really deep this time! It was fine for the Sun Fruits, but those one hundred Sun Seeds were extraordinary in value. Zuo Mo had gotten a good number of Sun Seeds but after this one hundred was paid, then the total amount would shrink greatly.

But Zuo Mo knew that he could not give Pu Yao a chance to give another price, otherwise

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth and nodded heard, “Agreed!”

“Refreshing!” Pu Yao stood but no emotion could be seen on his handsome face. He threw a ball of light at Zuo Mo. “Take it.”

Zuo Mo took the ball of light, and countless unfamiliar methods flowed into his mind.

He hurriedly left the sea of consciousness and started to study it. At this time, he didn’t dare to waste one moment. This was a race against time. The earlier he finished his defenses, the earlier he would escape the danger. If he was late, then no rescue efforts

would help.

In the sea of consciousness, Wei suddenly smiled warmly. “Your negotiation was done well. It seems that I need to learn from you.”

“You are right.” Pu Yao blinked his bloody pupil with an open expression. There wasn’t any evilness on his face.

The two exchanged a look and then disappeared separately.

Wasteland Beast Chessboard.

Nan Yue was furiously cultivating. Her eyes were tightly closed, her expression focused i her hands were placed together as though she was holding an invisible bow. Her [South Sky Arrow Art] had progressed quickly. Her rate of improvement was akin to travelling a thousand li in a day.

The scenery around her constantly changed, and her hands changed positions as well. However, there seemed to be a faint connection between her hands throughout.

Her consciousness was extremely unique and was like invisible water ripples. When the water ripples encountered enemies, they would quickly return with information about the other.

The surrounding scenery that changed was both real and fake.

Nan Yue needed to find the true target hidden among these real and fake yao arts.

It was not the first time she had trained like this. In reality, she was trapped in this illusion almost every day.

Ever since they had been introduced to Teacher Pu for instruction, they would encounter all kinds of strange training. Many people complained. Teacher Pu's training was ever changing but what made people complain was that each type of training was extremely difficult. Teacher Pu's temper was also fickle. If they did not complete the training, their outcome would be very bad. Many people couldn't help but feel anger.

But Nan Yue did not feel any rage.

Teacher Pu was far stronger than any expert she had ever seen. Compared to Teacher Wei, the teachers at the yao art houses were thousands of miles behind. Every cultivation illusion here had been created by Teacher Pu with a wave of the hand. The uncanny yao arts caused everyone to gape in shock.

With this kind of famed teacher guiding them, what else could they hope for?

Nan Yue did not slack off and became even more diligent. She knew just how rare this chance was!

She wasn't the only one. Ming Jue Zi, Cang Ze, and the others all knew this and buried their heads in cultivation in fear of missing this chance. The elders of the Grey Clan also strictly supervised the members of the Grey Clan. Those that did not work hard on their cultivation were disciplined with the clan law.

Selecting at the Wasteland Beast Chessboard as the cultivation area was done out of helplessness. Thankfully, the Wasteland Beast Chessboard was endless. No one noticed the corner they occupied. The number of people that could see through Pu Yao's illusory arts were pitifully few and they would not appear in the Wasteland Beast Chessboard.

Just like usual, Pu Yao appeared in the Wasteland Beast Chessboard.

"Such terrible skill!" He looked down at the yao that were cultivating. His brow furrowed and he was dissatisfied.

He had enough qualifications to give this judgment. When he thought about this, he couldn't help but think of Guard Camp and his mood worsened. Guard Camp wasn't highly skilled in his eyes, but compared to these greenhorns, they were much better.

Right now, Guard Camp was in Wei's hand. Having been tricked, Pu Yao naturally could not accept this so he put his ideas onto Nan Yue and the others. Wei could not enter the Ten Finger Prison so he could not see whatever Pu Yao did here.

Thinking like this, Pu Yao's mood instantly became slightly better.

But when he saw these clumsily people practicing, what were extremely basic yao arts in his eyes, his good mood instantly evaporated.

Pu Yao had been planning to use these guys to form another camp so he had initially trained them in battle formations. However, he quickly found that these people were extremely lacking in skills. With such terrible strength, no matter how much they trained battle formations, they could not catch up to Guard Camp.

So he could only personally teach them yao arts.

Even though the improvement of Nan Yue and the others was considerable, to Pu Yao who lacked patience, this kind of progression was not enough.

He hadn't expected Zuo Mo to be able to enter the Sun Shen Temple and to obtain so many treasures. He instantly locked on.

Zuo Mo coincidentally came to ask for help so he had gotten his hands on a lot of Sun Fruits and Sun Seeds.

The first moment he saw the Sun Fruits and Sun Seeds, Pu Yao's heart had moved. He recognized these two treasures. They were like the golden souls, and could be taken into the Ten Finger

Prison.

“It is really a waste to use them on you lot.”

Pu Yao murmured to himself as the Sun Fruits and Sun Seeds in his hand flashed with an enchanting light.

Chapter 508 - Inventory

After erasing all his tracks, Zuo Mo finally released a breath.

It had to be said that Pu Yao really had the moves. According to the methods he traded, Zuo Mo had forged a Nether Mist jade pendant. The Nether Mist jade pendant was the size of a jade scroll and appeared mundane but the cost of the materials was three whole pieces of sixth-grade jingshi.

That was three pieces of sixth-grade jingshi.

Bao Yi's expression had become gloomy at the time and he felt heartache at the decreasing storages. In the next few days, Bao Yi's mood was extremely terrible as the Chief Quartermaster. The people that came to get materials usually got cursed at.

But the Nether Mist jade pendant was truly extraordinary in value. If Zuo Mo was skilled in divination, he would find that everything about him seemed to be shrouded in mist and could not be clearly seen.

With the Nether Mist jade pendant, Zuo Mo's heart relaxed. He finally had the free time and the mood to inventory the things he obtained from the Sun Shen Temple.

As he made an inventory of his gains, Zuo Mo was excited!

The products of this endeavor piled up like mountains. Every

object was a rare treasure.

The Sun Seeds made up a the largest portion of his gains. The number of Sun Seeds that accumulated over tens of thousands of years was astounding. Even though Pu Yao had scalped away one hundred, there were still a great many left.

But among this pile of treasures, the three most eye catching were the golden leaf, the Sun Shen Tree, and the inky jade bones.

He didn't know what tree the golden leaf came from. It was entirely golden and made of a weighty material. Every pattern on it was extremely detailed. At the beginning, Zuo Mo thought that this was the leaf of the Sun Shen Tree. But later when he compared, he found the two were completely different. Tens of thousands of years had passed, but the golden leaf still held a faint vitality and it was a marvel.

Zuo Mo held the golden leaf in his hand. Feeling the faint vitality exuded from the leaf, he couldn't help but marvel.

This golden leaf had been placed in a position of great consideration. From a glance, it could be seen that it wasn't anything normal. Yet when he examined it over and over, he could not identify what was special about it.

His mind shifted and Zuo Mo tried to channel a thread of shen power into the leaf.

Boom!

Numerous thoughts rushed into Zuo Mo's mind like a furious flood.

He seemed to have landed in an endless sky of stars. Countless stars spun around him and pulled at him. The thoughts that originated from the ancient era were like the vast and deep stars. At this moment, he lost himself!

The stars changed, and at the empty part of the dark void, an imperceptible light rose.

The light quickly became brighter. In a blink, the light was like the stars that lit up the deep and black sky. It was beautiful.

But this beauty was only condensed for a brief moment. Then the burning light that tore apart the darkness swallowed Zuo Mo up!

Zuo Mo didn't have to time to close his eyes, yet the piercing pain he imagined did not appear.

A cryptic and primitive song floated out of some unknown place but Zuo Mo felt unspeakably close to it. Even though he could not understand, his restless heart calmed when hearing the distant song. Zuo Mo fell into a trance.

As he listened, Zuo Mo suddenly detected that pitifully weak thread of shen power in his body started to circulate in his body of

its own accord.

Was this

A daring idea appeared in Zuo Mo's mind.

But when his attention slip, the shen power in his body instantly shrunk back like a frightened mouse.

Zuo Mo hurriedly refocused and put his attention back on the song. The shen power inside his body quickly started to circulate again and slowly moved around Zuo Mo's body.

Zuo Mo silently noted down the pathways the shen power circulation took.

This was strange. As expected, this was strange!

The pathways the shen power took to circulate were extremely strange and completely different than the three powers. It did not follow the channels in his body like ling power, nor did it stay in his sea of consciousness like his spiritual consciousness, nor did it become purified between his blood and bone like the mo skills.

The pathways it took included the channels, included the sea of consciousness, as well as his blood and bone, but had innate differences to the mainstream cultivation methods.

Suddenly, a thread of exhaustion rose. The song became even more distant.

Zuo Mo was shocked!

Opening his eyes, the song suddenly stopped. He looked down. The golden leaf in his hand was gradually dimming. Zuo Mo hurriedly examined the golden leaf. He saw that the leaf had dimmed but the thread of vitality on the leaf had not disappeared before he released a breath.

So this was not one-use only!

Good, good!

At this time, Zuo Mo seemed to have learned a bit of this golden leaf's use. It should be a treasure that the Sun Tribe used in the past to record the cultivation methods. From this function, the golden leaf was similar to jade scrolls. However, Zuo Mo had a feeling. It shouldn't just be a "golden leaf jade scroll," it should have other uses.

Compared to the golden leaf, the use of the Sun Shen Tree was much simpler. However, Zuo Mo was stuck with a problem. What grade was the Sun Shen Tree?

It was at least a great treasure of the Sun Tribe and it was called a shen tree. Even the Sun Seeds it produced were extraordinary. It should be at least seventh-grade!

Zuo Mo unconfidently thought.

However, while he was unable to judge the grade of the Sun Shen Tree, this did not stop him from using its power. The Sun Tribe planted Sun Shen Trees to get more Sun Fruits and Sun Seeds. Zuo Mo naturally did not have the patience to guard the Sun Shen Tree for decades.

The wood of the Sun Shen Tree was likely a great material but its exact uses were unknown.

Zuo Mo also didn't bear to use this ancient shen wood that had lived for tens of thousands of years to forge into talismans. It would be a waste.

After some thought, Zuo Mo quickly had an idea.

He flew into the sky and looked around the island. He suddenly headed towards the south end of the island. Not long in flight, he landed on a little mountain top and entered a cavern.

Entering the cavern, the thick fire element power hit him in the face.

There were five fire element caverns on the island. This was one of them. The air was filled with the smell of sulphur. Zuo Mo had a content expression. This fire cavern was connected with earth fire, and was the best place to plant the Sun Shen Tree.

The Sun Shen Temple was connected to earth fire. If it wasn't for the nurturing earth fire, this Sun Shen Tree would not have been able to live for so long!

Zuo Mo carefully took out the Sun Shen Tree.

When the Sun Shen Tree's roots touched the lava rock, the roots suddenly twisted like slender snakes and burrowed into the rock. In front of these soft roots the hard granite was easily penetrated as though it was tofu.

A crimson red light spread at a visible rate from the roots towards the body of the tree.

When the red light reached the topmost part of the Sun Shen Tree, there was a light snap and golden flames erupted out of the tree.

A shocking wave of heat spread outwards.

Zuo Mo could not tolerate it and retreated a few steps. The granite under his feet showed signs of melting. He had a grave expression. His body contained both the Great Day Banded Flame and the Sun Crystal Seed. He had extremely high resistance towards all kinds of flames but he felt burdened in the face of this flame. The strength of this flame was shocking.

At this time, Zuo Mo's expression suddenly changed!

Deep beneath his feet, earth fire was furiously heading towards this direction like a flood!

Damn it!

Without a word, he sprinted towards the outside!

Just as Zuo Mo sorrily flew out of the cave and turned around, he inhaled sharply.

The green flora on the mountain were producing green smoke as they popped and turned to ash. The entire little mountain was bright red. Every piece of rock seemed to have been taken out of the kiln just now and could melt at any moment.

Vast fire element power almost erupted through the restraint of the earth surface.

Zuo Mo's expression changed again!

Damn it!

If he waited for this earth fire to erupt, he would not be able to conceal it.

Even though the Sun Shen Temple had been burned away and the xiuzhe that came to Cloud Sea Jie from different places were

gradually leaving, but there were still many xiuzhe who had stayed behind.

If the earth fire suddenly burned the sky at Turtle Island, those with intentions could guess that the masked person in the Sun Shen Temple was him!

Zuo Mo was decisive. No matter what, the eruption could not occur!

But even through the eruption had not occurred yet, Zuo Mo could still clearly feel its power at such a distance.

What could he do?

His gaze at sweeping the surroundings, his eyes lit up.

He had set up the island protecting formation with his own hands. There were two large formations. One was the Yinyang Thunder Cloud Formation, the other was the Meridional Azure Aether Formation.

The Yinyang Thunder Cloud Formation had been set up when the Ren Family was here. Even though Zuo Mo had planted the Sonic Lightning Walnut at the core and had increased its strength, it still could not compare to the Meridional Azure Aether Formation.

But at this time, using the Yinyang Thunder Cloud Formation

was a better choice than the Meridional Azure Aether Formation.

Light flowed on Zuo Mo's hands and lights entered the ground in succession.

Everyone on the island was disturbed by the earth fire and started to gather in its direction. However, when they saw Zuo Mo's movements, they instantly understood what was going on and stopped their movements.

Ten minutes later, everyone from Golden Crow Camp had come. Seeing the situation, their expressions became grave. Under the directions of Master Sun Bao and Ji Wei, they quickly prepared to give aid when necessary.

The surroundings were quiet. Everyone quieted their breathing and watched Zuo Mo's actions.

Zuo Mo's hands were moving slowly as though he was pulling something thousands of catties heavy. His expression was extremely serious.

The earth fire in the cavern became even more restless. The granite on the mountaintop started to dissolve. The earth fire could erupt at any moment. The earth fire slowly pulsed. Every time it pulsed, the raging power contained was exposed and caused people's hearts to beat rapidly.

Even Eldest Shixiong Wei Sheng that never lost his composure

showed a rare worried expression on his face as his right hand was placed on his sword hilt.

In the sky, Zuo Mo suddenly grabbed at the mountain.

Pew!

A streak of earth fire suddenly shot out of the little mountain like a raging dragon.

Zuo Mo's right hand guided the dragon of fire and it seemed to be forcibly pushed towards the ground. At the same time, Zuo Mo's left hand swiped as he recited.

At this tense moment, Zuo Mo unconsciously used the control method of shen power!

His attention used in three ways!

Pew!

The earth fire was forced back into the ground. Flames flew out. A golden seal script landed from the sky onto the body of the dragon of fire.

The dragon of fire suddenly formed a curving gold seal script line!

Golden Crow Camp was shocked. Just now, they had sighed at the high difficulty of Zuo Mo's move. Even though they tried their best to not make a sound, sharp inhales were clear to hear.

At this time, the earth fire suddenly erupted and advanced following the golden seal line that was produced by the dragon of fire!

Chapter 509 - Inventory II

The brightly burning earth fire continuously sparked as the temperature of Turtle Island quickly increased. Waves of high heat spread into the surroundings.

When the dragon of fire covered the entire red line, the Yingyang Thunder Cloud Formation suddenly activated. Lightning flashed and thunder roared among the cloud layers in an intimidating display.

Just as everyone had released a breath, a bright red cloud of fire suddenly rose out of the little mountain with a muffled bang.

Pia pia pia!

Red clouds rose up from the little mountain and seemed to fly and merge into the cloud layers of the Yinyang Thunder Cloud Formation.

If one looked from the outside, they would find the thick clouds that never dissipated around Turtle Island were becoming red.

Zuo Mo released a breath and so did the other people. The burning waves of heat disappeared and the temperature of the island slowly returned to normal.

The fire clouds were still being produced.

What Zuo Mo did not know was that after his actions, the Yinyang Thunder Cloud Formation was completely transformed. The power of the sonic lightning walnut could not compare to the Sun Shen Tree. Fortunately, thunder and fire were not in conflict so the sonic lightning walnut was not subdued by the Sun Shen Tree. However, the walnut now only made up a very small portion of power in the formation.

Zuo Mo wiped away the sweat from his forehead with lingering fear. From the beginning, he didn't dare to underestimate the power of the Sun Shen Tree but he hadn't thought that he would make such a great mistake. He almost created a great problem.

But they were past it!

Seeing the situation resolved, the people quickly left. No one came over to ask, even Wei Sheng left directly. Zuo Mo would always cause all kinds of situations. People were now used to it. If there was a peaceful period, people couldn't help but wonder how Daren had been so peaceful recently.

The production of the fire clouds slowed but did not stop.

Zuo Mo estimated that the entire process would take several days. Even he did not know what the Yinyang Thunder Formation would look like in the end.

He ended up waiting by the little mountain for the entire process to finish. Bored, he could not resist the temptation and started to inspect his other spoils.

He didn't dare to mess around with the ink jade bones. If he made another ruckus, it wouldn't be enough even if he had another life. However, he found something strange. These ink jade bones were unable to be pieced together into a complete skeleton.

There were three bones missing.

Had he missed one? Zuo Mo was puzzled. He had searched with great care and theoretically, he shouldn't have missed them. Zuo Mo might not know whose bones these were and what they were used for but he had a strong suspicion that these bones, carved from ink black jade, were anything but ordinary.

Zuo Mo quickly threw this riddle to one side and started to inspect his other spoils.

What he got the most of was the Sun Seed from the Sun Shen Temple. Zuo Mo knew they could help him cultivate shen power and also could be forged into "Crow Thorn" which was supposedly extremely powerful. Even Big Brother Qing Lin had been wounded by it, but the problem was Zuo Mo did not know how to use the Sun Seed or how to forge the Crow Thorn.

After flipping for a while, Zuo Mo found to his sorrow that while these ancient treasures were good, but Zuo Mo had no inkling how to use them.

In comparison to those ancient talismans of the Sun Shen Temple that were not useful, what Shen Wu Hai and the others

“gave” Zuo Mo could be used immediately. There were many high-quality talismans. Even Zuo Mo who was used to seeing good talismans brightened up when he saw them.

Jade Hook Tree, Blood Script Bell, Corpse Sea Bamboo

Any one of these if they were sold on to the market would be priceless!

However, what moved Zuo Mo the most was what he had taken from Shen Wu Hai, who was of Yuanying cultivation, and a Tian Huan Elder. These two qualities meant that his wealth was something that the Old Bamboo Staff Man and others could not rival.

Shen Wu Hai did not have any talisman that was below sixth-grade. Even though they were of different types, all of them were very fine. What Shen Wu Hai felt the most pain over losing was his ring. Inside were the treasures and materials that he had scrounged together over many years and with great effort. They all benefited Zuo Mo now.

Of course, Zuo Mo had his own troubles.

These numerous talismans dazzled his eyes but he could not take them out and use them directly. These were dirty. If someone got even a hint of where they came from, it would be a great calamity to him, much less using them in the open! He also did not dare to sell them. There probably were an unknown number of eyes staring at him. Any trace connection to the Sun Shen Temple

would be fatal.

Tian Huan was a titan. It only needed to breathe and he would turn to dust.

Could not use them directly, could not sell them, then there was only one solution—forge them all into new talismans.

Such a vast task!

Zuo Mo gazed at the mountain of spoils and grimaced. Did he profit or lose this time after getting in so much trouble?

———

Just as Cloud Sea Jie's xiuzhe were immersed in the incident of the Sun Shen Temple, in a deep region of the cloud sea, there was a fissure about ten zhang wide. The inside of the fissure was pitch black without any light.

Suddenly, a tall figure stepped out of the fissure.

After a while, other figures successively walked out.

The leading figure suddenly turned.

“I smell the scent of xiuzhe.”

Shen Wu Hai crushed the paper crane in his hand with a dark face. Below him, Li Shu hesitated and then carefully asked, “Elder”

Li Shu recognized the paper crane. It was a paper crane unique to the sect. Had the sect given them a punishment sentence? Had they said ugly words? Why was the elder so furious?

Shen Wu Hai was a yuanying in the end and good at keeping his composure. With a long exhale, he recovered his normal composure.

“We’re returning!”

“Return?” Li Shu stilled and said with disbelief, “We have not found”

“There is not time to investigate!” Shen Wu Hai was slightly impatient but still relaxed his tone. “The sect leader is urging us to return! Do not ask this old man the reason, this old man does not know!”

Shen Wu Hai’s tone was filled with unwillingness. He had tripped up so greatly this time, and under the eyes of so many people.

How could he accept this?

In these days, he had used all the influence and power that Tian Huan had in Cloud Sea Jie to investigate this matter. What almost drove him crazy was that they had not discovered anything even now. There wasn't a trace to found!

How could he be willing to return, when the sect suddenly ordered them to?

However, Shen Wu Hai was slightly puzzled. The upper management of the sect would rarely interfere with missions. It was the first time he had seen such a nonnegotiable order.

Was it that something happened to the sect?

When this thought formed, he erased it. What could happen to the sect? The sect leader had been in his position for over two decades and his position was rock-solid. The other parts of the management occasionally fought for power, but compared to other sects, it was very gentle. They were more willing to immerse themselves into seal scripts.

Even Shen Wu Hai was like this usually. Otherwise, he would not have been able to form the Dark Void Fire.

He always felt that Tian Huan was the best sect in the Four Realm Heavens. Li Shu had the same thought.

As to outside enemies, what was that? Shen Wu Hai had never encountered someone who dared to be enemies with Tian Huan. Even Kun Lun that was called the strongest in fighting had to purchase large amounts of talismans and seals from Tian Huan. The other sects naturally did the same.

So why were they pressing so urgently for them to return?

Shen Wu Hai was confused.

Many people speculated the masked-wearing guy had escaped as far as he could. However, Li Shu and Shen Wu Hai felt that the other might not have even left Cloud Sea Jie. He had already sent people to seal the jie river. Even though this caused discontent in some people, no one dared to provoke an angry Tian Huan elder.

Yet up until now, there was no news of someone breaking through the jie river.

That guy had to be in Cloud Sea Jie!

But

He really was unwilling!

—————

When the last fire cloud rose, the burning red little mountain

gradually dimmed and the surrounding temperature decreased. The little mountain quickly returned to normal but the fauna around it had been burned clean so there were only black stones left.

Zuo Mo went into the cavern. The Sun Shen Tree was untouched and looked healthier than before.

Stepping out of the cave, Zuo Mo flew into the sky. He looked over. The colors of the clouds above Turtle Island were like dusk, orange and red, beautiful and spectacular!

The new formation had formed!

The previous Yinyang Thunder Cloud Formation had been completely changed by the earth fire and formed a new formation. Zuo Mo decided to change its name to the [Flowing Fire Cloud Thunder Formation].

The new formation was much stronger than the previous one.

As to that Jade Hook Tree, Zuo Mo planted it into the center of the Meridional Azure Aether Formation. The wood element power that the Jade Hook Wood released would continuously feed the Meridional Azure Aether Formation and greatly increase the power of the large formation.

Zuo Mo buried three Sun Seeds under the Jade Hook Tree. If the Jade Hook Tree could absorb the power inside the Sun Seeds, it

could definitely go up a level and form the Celestial Green Jade Hook Tree.

With the protection of these two formations, the present Turtle Island was almost impenetrable.

Zuo Mo's heart which had been in the air all this time lowered greatly. Even if Shen Wu Hai came, it would be impossible for him to force his way into Turtle Island!

Heehee, after ge digests these treasures, cultivates shen power, no one will know who will win if ge encounters Shen Wu Hai again!

Zuo Mo was full of ambition and resolve!

At this time, the sky above his head suddenly darkened.

Zuo Mo made a sound of surprise and raised his head to look. His body suddenly froze!

The sky that had been clear just now seemed to appear as though it was dusk. The sun that had been burning in the sky seemed to be veiled by a layer of black mist and became weak and wavering. The scene looked as though it was the end of the world.

A gust of wind blew past. Zuo Mo couldn't help but shudder. His expression changed again!

This gust of wind was filled with a very powerful yin and cold energy as though it blew from the underworld. Even Zuo Mo couldn't help but shudder in the cold.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Wei Sheng, Zong Ru, Xie Shan and the others all flew into the sky and appeared next to Zuo Mo. All of them could not disguise their expressions of terror.

What was happening?

Chapter 510 - Sky-Splitting Calamity

The worldly apparition caused terror in the xiuzhe of Cloud Sea Jie. They quickly received news that similar apparitions had appeared in the nearby jie.

As this news spread, people became insecure.

What did this apparition, that seemed to herald the end of the world, mean?

The doorways of divination xiuzhe were packed with people that came to visit them. The customers were all people who came to inquire what this worldly apparition meant. Cloud Sea Jie did not have any powerful people skilled in divination but almost all the divination xiuzhe reported that this apparition was an inauspicious one. This news caused all people to feel insecure. The effect of this was that the prices of goods on the market skyrocketed.

The rumors quickly dissipated and the truth was revealed.

A small sect called Sky Record Sect was attacked by a strange troop and almost the entire sect had been killed. At the start, this news did not attract much attention but this strange troop quickly advanced and blood was spilled everywhere they passed.

People suddenly discovered to their shock that this was a mo army!

In the beginning, many people snorted at the news. Mo army? Ha! This was too funny! The Cloud Sea Jie was thousands of li from the front lines. What mo army could sneak into Cloud Sea Jie without being detected?

But these people quickly stopped laughing.

Because this mo army was unstoppable. No one was able to stop their advance. The large sects along their warpath all fell under the heels of this mo army. All the xiuzhe that managed to escape lost their courage and only knew to flee for their lives!

They were too powerful!

From when they were discovered, they were like a sharp drill in only three days they advanced six thousand li! The sects and the cities in their way were all uprooted and burned down.

In these short three days, the atmosphere of Cloud Sea Jie changed.

People fought to flee this place in hopes of avoiding this calamity. Yet the news that came from the outside caused them to feel hopeless. There were many jie within Four Realms where these chaos rifts had appeared. Large numbers of mo armies flooded out of these chaos rifts.

No one knew why these chaos rifts appeared, but any xiuzhe with a thread of intelligence understood something.

The sky had changed!

It really changed!

The battle at Blood Sky Metropolis Jie had never stopped but for xiuzhe far from the front lines, the war was just another topic of discussion. But now, the abrupt appearance of the chaos rifts pushed the fighting into their lives, it was a cruel and inescapable bog!

This was a disaster, a Sky-Splitting Calamity!

The fires of war appeared everywhere!

When Zuo Mo learned of this news, he was stunned. Having fought his way out of Blood Sky Metropolis Jie, he knew much better than these normal xiuzhe what these chaos rifts represented.

Lil' Miss, Wei Sheng, Shu Long, Zong Ru

When the people heard the news, they didn't dare to believe their ears.

The silent hall was oppressive to Shang Wei Ming. He timidly looked at the people gathered. "This is what I managed to find out from the outside, it's crazy out there. Should should"

Everyone looked at him. He couldn't help but feel panic. "Should we prepare to leave early?"

He gathered his courage and continued, "Everyone is packing up and preparing to leave Cloud Sea Jie right now. The mo army is too strong. No one can stop them. There aren't any large sects around. It is very dangerous for us to stay here!"

No one paid him attention. Everyone turned their eyes to Zuo Mo. At these times, the person who always set the direction was Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo thought for a long time before he slowly spoke, "If we leave Cloud Sea Jie, where would we go? The chaos rifts are everywhere, we do not even know how many chaos rifts are still undiscovered. If we move to an unfamiliar place, it is even more disadvantageous for us! We put great effort into Turtle Island and the defenses are very sturdy. Even if we encounter the mo army, we have the chance to fight. We weren't afraid of them in Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie, are we going to be afraid of them here?"

The suppressive atmosphere inside the hall instantly swept away. Everyone's morale rose at Zuo Mo's words. Yes, everyone had fought and killed their way out of Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie. They hadn't been afraid of the mo military in Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie, what was there to be afraid of here?

"We're not afraid! They dare to rampage on top of our head, I say kill them!" Lei Peng's loud voice made people's eardrums hurt. He

glared and held his golden crystal broadsword as though he wanted to start immediately.

Nian Lu took over with a slightly soft voice, “Don’t be so brutish. Be more gentle, be more gentle. Allow them to feel our friendship and enthusiasm towards yaomo, let’s be friends.”

“Idiots.” Looking at the display of his teammates, Ma Fan spat out.

Zuo Mo looked at Gongsun Cha. There was a smile at the corners of Lil’ Miss’ mouth that was filled with innocence and bashfulness. However, his eyes were filled with an excited light. Those familiar with him all felt their hearts jump.

Zuo Mo gazed at Shu Long. Shu Long’s presence had become even more solemn and heavy in recent days. Standing there, he seemed like a mountain. He noticed Zuo Mo’s gaze. Raising his head, he did not disguise the fighting spirit in his eyes. “Daren, Shu Long requests to battle!”

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised. Shu Long was steady in personality and his specialty in battle was the defense rather than offense. It was the first time he had seen Shu Long desirous of battle.

“What? Your hand is itching?” Zuo Mo said with a smile.

“This subordinate wants to see what true mo military is like,”

Shu Long said gravely.

Zuo Mo finally understood. Guard Camp cultivated mo skills and the battle methods of Guard Camp were very close to the mo military. Shu Long probably wanted to see who was stronger, Guard Camp or the mo army. Zuo Mo felt a small headache. Why did this guy also have to get competitive? Was it Wei that had egged him on from the back?

At the side, Shang Wei Ming's mouth was open and could not close. What did they mean killed their way out of Blood Sky Metropolis Jie? Why weren't they afraid? This was the infamous mo army

He found to his shock that he understood pitifully little of Daren and the others.

No one paid attention to him.

After agreement of their thoughts, they quickly and methodically started to act. For this fight, Zuo Mo took out much of the materials he had gotten from the Sun Shen Temple and gave them to Golden Crow Camp to forge into talismans.

Fortunately the stores on the island were filled and they were rich. They did not need to worry about running of supplies.

Like an enormous machine, all of Turtle Island started to furiously turn!

“Which batch is this?”

“The sixth!”

“Is Turtle Island not planning to leave?” Liao Qi Chang was puzzled. At this time, every sect was racing against time to pack up and escape Cloud Sea Jie. Turtle Island’s actions became extremely eye-catching.

Xiuzhe continuously flew out of Turtle Island on nimbus clouds and flew away with the wind. In the span of half a day, six groups of xiuzhe had left Turtle Island. Looking at the direction they flew in, it was in the direction of the mo army. All the signs suggested that Turtle Island did not plan on leaving.

Did they plant to fight against the mo army?

When this idea popped out, it frightened him. That was impossible! That was a mo army! And it was also a very powerful mo army!

“No way, isn’t that seeking death?” The xiuzhe beside him was disbelieving. “Didn’t you hear? Even the Wind Element Sect was defeated! Who can stop them?”

Liao Qi Chang's mood dimmed when he heard this. Wind Element Sect was a large sect that was ranked sixth in Cloud Sea Jie. Even they had not been able to escape the knife of the mo army. The strength of this mo army could be imagined!

Other than Wind Element Sect even Beautiful Water Sect, a sect ranking in the top ten, was defeated. This was another reason why no one had the courage to fight back and only knew to run away.

There was no possibility of victory!

Even the sects that ranked at the top like Wind Element Sect and Beautiful Water Sect had been defeated. These two sects had been very powerful. With the examples in front of them, who would be the egg that tried to smash the rock?

Liao Qi Chang did not speak and only stared at Turtle Island. A while later, another few xiuzhe flew out.

Liao Qi Chang's eyes lit up. He recognized one of them and shouted loudly, "Is it Mister Ma Fan?"

Ma Fan heard the shout and turned to look. Seeing it was Liao Qi Chang, he flew down. He said with a bow, "Boss Liao, you have not left yet?"

"Where can we escape to?" Liao Qi Chang sighed.

Ma Fan's moved and he said, "Boss Liao can probably have a

temporary stay on the island. The island is relatively safe.”

“Safe? Such a great proclamation!” the xiuzhe next to Liao Qi Chang said with a snort.

Ma Fan stared at the other and was too lazy to respond.

Liao Qi Chang’s expression shifted. “You are not planning on leaving?”

Ma Fan laughed lightly, “Just as Boss Liao has said, where can we escape to? Rather than that, we will make a stand here.”

“I will give you people some words, don’t try to be heroes and overconfident. You feel that your heads are harder than rock,” the xiuzhe next to Liao Qi Chang said in a strange tone.

Lei Peng could not resist. His cowbell-sized eyes suddenly widened as his hand lit up as he slapped!

“Shut up!”

The other person reacted quickly. His ling armor lit up.

But Lei Peng’s blow was extremely heavy. Without any finesse, it landed on the illuminated ling armor. The person felt a great force pass over and his body uncontrollably fell back.

Crash!

Lei Peng slapped the person onto the ground.

He jumped up of the ground, his face flushed with anger. “You dare to attack me, you don’t want to live!”

Hiss.

It was a quiet hiss.

A line of coldness could be felt on his throat. The cold sword edge pressed tightly against his throat and caused his hairs to stand on end! He did not dare to move at all. Uncontrollable terror flooded him. His legs unconsciously rattled.

“Idiot.”

The flying sword returned to Ma Fan’s hand. Ma Fan didn’t look at the person that was frightened into a daze. He turned and said to Liao Qi Chang, “If Boss Liao goes to the island, Daren will definitely welcome you. We have a mission to complete and will not linger. Farewell!”

Finishing, the three got on their nimbus clouds and disappeared into the sky.

Chapter 511 - Hope

“Did you hear? Turtle Island is not fleeing!”

“Are they crazy? Are they waiting for their deaths?”

“Waiting for their death? They want to fight against the mo army! These are true men!”

“But can they win? Look at Wind Element Sect and Beautiful Water Sect, there wasn’t even one survivor. No matter how powerful Turtle Island is, are they stronger than Wind Element Sect and Beautiful Water Sect?”

”An doesn’t know if they are strong or not but an knows everyone is fleeing and only they dare to fight. They are true men, an respects them! No, an has to also participate in this fight. Even if an dies, an will accept it!”

“Don’t do stupid things” his friend urged him out of concern.

The news that Turtle Island was preparing to fight was like throwing a pebble into a pool of boiling water. The reactions were laughter, scorn, and indifference. But it also attracted many people’s attention. Many Cloud Sea Jie xiuzhe that grew up here were not willing to flee Cloud Sea Jie like this. There were also people like Liao Qi Chang who had many illiquid assets and properties in Cloud Sea Jie so their faction would have a difficult time leaving. At the beginning, everyone was panicking, clueless,

and disorganized like a pile of scattered sand. They soon calmed down and found reasons to fight.

When the news that Turtle Island was preparing a resistance spread, they seemed to have found their spines.

Large amounts of xiuzhe flooded from all directions towards Turtle Island. In the span of a few days, an astounding number of xiuzhe gathered near Turtle Island.

When Zuo Mo discovered this situation, he had a great headache. Turtle Island was small in number but they were well-trained. They were familiar with battle formations and directing them was as easy as controlling limbs. They had great combat capabilities. These xiuzhe that came now were varied in strength and had no training in battle formations. If they were put onto the battlefield, they couldn't even count as roaming warriors.

But if he did not pay attention to them, and someone caused them to stir, they would be a great threat towards Turtle Island.

Liao Qi Chang hurriedly said, "Island Master, morale is useful! Everyone's blood is boiling, Island Master, do not cool their hearts. I see that there are famed ones among them. This is an enormous power. If Island Master can recruit them, after this event, no one will be a rival for Island Master in Cloud Sea Jie!"

Zuo Mo grimaced inside. He did not say what he worried him to Liao Qi Chang. This guy was an amateur in war and couldn't understand.

He thought for a while. The arrival of these people wasn't completely a bad thing. Turtle Island wasn't small in scale but their numbers were too few. The majority of them were also low-level production xiuzhe. The composition of their members was not rational. If they wanted to survive in Cloud Sea Jie, they had to have enough combat xiuzhe. Otherwise, if the people of Vermillion Bird Camp and Guard Camp fell and could not be replenished, then they would only weaken the more they fought.

As long as that chaos rift existed, Cloud Sea Jie was akin to being on the front lines.

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth and said, "Get them to come in!"

Compared to Liao Qi Chang's excitement, the other people had serious expressions. They knew that Zuo Mo would have instructions following this statement.

Zuo Mo wasn't courteous and said directly, "Pick the strong ones from these people and set up a another camp, Black Turtle Camp. They are unskilled right now so they need to train in battle formations. Ma Fan, you caused this mess so you will do this."

Ma Fan was filled with regret. Getting him to train this group of greenhorns was worse than killing him!

At the side, Nian Lu and Lei Peng had expressions of schadenfreude. They would willingly go onto the battlefield to kill enemies rather than interact with a group of greenhorns everyday.

They knew very well how difficult it was for Vermillion Bird Camp to go from nothing to something respectable. It definitely was not an easy task to bring a group of ignorant greenhorns to Vermillion Bird Camp's skill level.

Glancing at the duo's expressions, Ma Fan asked Zuo Mo without changing his expression, "Daren, I won't be able to do it by myself. Can I get a few brothers to help?"

Lei Peng and Nian Lu's expressions instantly changed.

Zuo Mo waved his hand and crisply agreed, "Yes!"

This matter was finalized like this.

Bu Si Dong looked at the red fire clouds on top of Turtle Island. His thoughts wandered. He was one of the people in the first group allowed onto Turtle Island. He was born and raised in Cloud Sea Jie and was naturally unwilling to see Cloud Sea Jie become the backyard of the yaomo. When he heard Turtle Island was preparing to have a great battle with the mo army, he ran over in hopes of joining Turtle Island.

But unexpected to him, Turtle Island did not immediately accept anyone. The island-protecting formation was securely closed. Other than xiuzhe that entered and left everyday, no one spoke to them.

He personally saw how Turtle Island had gone from empty to being completely filled. All of the xiuzhe that came here only had one goal: they hoped to join Turtle Island and fight against the mo army.

Yet no one paid attention to the people.

Several fiery-tempered people were so angry they charged at the formation. Then they were burned to ash by the formation. Those beautiful dusky red clouds were fatal.

This scene caused the heads of the surrounding people to calm down.

Another batch of xiuzhe rode on roaring nimbus clouds and headed into the fire clouds. Every time this happened, Bu Si Dong's eyes turned around. This Turtle Island was really rich!

He wasn't the only one to think this. The admiring words of the surrounding people entered his ears. They were not ignorant country bumpkins but every time they saw this, they couldn't resist sighing in praise.

Wearing intermediate fourth-grade Blue Soul Cold Light Armor, ethereal Cloud Wings on their backs, Tiger-Style Flowing Light Boots on their feet, Serene Heart Intelligence Hats on their head, and the nimbus cloud that left trails behind them!

It was a complete set of fourth-grade attire!

With the Cloud Wings, why did they drag nimbus clouds along? Could they be any more wasteful?

Countless people wanted to charge up and strip these people clean. At the beginning, people were envious but they felt that it was acceptable that Turtle Island would outfit their elite with this level of equipment given Turtle Island's strength.

Which power did not have a few hundred elite that were completely loyal?

But they quickly found to their shock that this was their standard equipment. Anyone that came out of there wore this!

Many people cried. These were real tycoons! Their heated hearts were stirred up further to the point that they almost burned themselves.

Bu Si Dong did not lose his calm. He looked around and thought. Turtle Island was still maintaining its silence. He suddenly had a feeling that Turtle Island was not so easy to join. When this thought appeared, it did not demotivate him. It increased his confidence. All of Turtle Island's actions showed how they were different from other factions.

Maybe they could really defeat the mo army?

Bu Si Dong jumped in fright at the thought that popped up.

At this time, the large formation of Turtle Island suddenly opened and the dusky fire clouds split apart. A troop of about two hundred xiuzhe appeared in people's view.

All fourth-grade attire, all golden flying swords, unusually regular!

Sword xiu?

Shocked, people thought inside, so many sword xiu, was Turtle Island a sword cultivating sect?

They did not give people the time to digest this. The Cloud Wings on the back of the leading xiuzhe moved and then the Cloud Wings on the back of the two hundred sword xiu moved in unison. The entire troop disappeared from people's view!

All of them were shocked!

Such quick speed! Such great cooperation!

"They are up over there!" someone shouted in shock.

Everyone raised their heads. They saw the two hundred sword xiu who were like an unsheathed sword at this moment giving off rampant murderousness and battle spirit. They took over the

entire sky! They looked down at them, the cold and murderous presence silently pervading!

People suddenly had the feeling they were trapped in dark and cold bog. Any kind of struggle would cause them to move closer to death.

So powerful

Bu Si Dong's eyes were unfocused as he murmured to himself.

Suddenly, his pupils contracted, and his body shook.

In the sky, a cold voice sounded.

“Kill!”

Two hundred people shouted, “Kill!”

The killing essence that took over the sky rained down like a typhoon. The ice cold presence that was omnipresent filled every inch of space like sharp-edged daggers! Bu Si Dong felt as though he was standing in a space filled with sword essence. The howling of the sword essence tearing through the air was like countless wails and caused him to lose any intentions of resisting.

The vast sword essences were like an unstoppable flood that carried killing intent as it came down from the sky!

All of the xiuzhe present paled in front of such a powerful attack and shook!

No one dared to move!

They feared that the tiniest move would cause the other's sword to change direction.

These xiuzhe that were used to fighting one-on-one suddenly discovered, in front of such a tsunami like attack from the battle formation, just how laughable their so-called rich experience was! Individual bravery was as minuscule as an ant in front of such powerful attack.

The sword energies disappeared into the distance. Echoes carried back. Turtle Island's surroundings were deathly silent.

Ma Fan was very satisfied with the effects of the demonstration. But when he recalled how these people had been so scared they didn't even dare to move and how they were going to become his subordinates, he became discontent again.

But he did not show it on his face. He said solemnly, "I come with orders from Daren to set up Black Turtle Camp. Those that are confident in their strength can come try. From today onwards until the time of the battle, Turtle Island is open. Everyone, Turtle Island has strict rules and requirements, take care of yourselves!"

With the lingering effects of that sword strike, no one dared to make a sound.

Ma Fan did not speak more. He turned and led the troop back into Turtle Island.

Bu Si Dong quickly recovered from his shock. Turtle Island was open? Setting up Black Turtle Camp? He instantly started to think and was overjoyed. Without any hesitation, he flew towards Turtle Island.

He was filled with confidence. Turtle Island's battalions were more powerful than the rumors said!

He didn't know if this kind of battalion could defeat the mo army but he knew this was the battalion of Cloud Sea Jie that had the highest probability of succeeding.

He was very curious. What was Turtle Island really like?

On this day, the news that Turtle Island had opened quickly spread through Cloud Sea Jie. Ma Fan's group attack was also exaggerated to a great degree.

Those scornful still snorted, those feeling afraid still rushed to escape.

Only those that had a glimmer of hope remaining flew day and night towards Turtle Island!

Chapter 512 - A Goal

“They are all moving towards a place called Turtle Island. Supposedly, there is a faction there that plans on fighting against us.” The vice commander reported emotionlessly.

“Oh,” Shi Dong’s expression was cold as made a neutral sound. He said lightly, “This is also good. They are all gathering together and it will save us a lot of trouble.”

The vice commander did not speak, his eyes were half-lidded as he stood there like a rock. His commander was a daring and outstanding person who did not need looking after.

Shi Dong might have been born a low level mantis mo, but he possessed the rare bloodline of the Sky Mantis. He had the classic tall and slender body of mantis mo. There wasn’t a flaw on his carven face. His blue pupils were as pure and clear as icy sapphires and his expression was forever cold and distant.

His mantis blade was a completely different shape than normal mantis blades. It was held at his waist. The blade was narrow and long, almost touched the ground. The curve of the blade was very small and seemed between a sabre and a sword.

Looking at the handsome commander, the vice commander sighed inside. If Daren wasn’t born a mantis mo, he probably would have been promoted long ago. Even though Daren did not care, he couldn’t help but feel injustice on Daren’s behalf.

“Slow the advance,” Shi Dong said coldly.

“Yes.” The vice commander’s thoughts came back. With slight pondering, he understood what Daren intended. Daren wanted to give the other side enough time to gather. This way, they could avoid spending the time searching for these people and get rid of them in one battle.

Daren was really confident!

The large numbers of xiuzhe coming into Turtle Island caused Turtle Island to become bustling and noisy.

Most of the xiuzhe that came were combat xiuzhe, filled with fighting spirit. There were some that were extremely rebellious and were hard to manage. However, when Wei Sheng, Zong Ru, Xie Shan, and the other jindan came out they instantly took care of those disobedient people.

The rebellious people were thrown into the sword formation to experience its torture. The wails that occasionally passed out of the sword formation caused the passersby to uncontrollably tremble.

Turtle Island instantly became orderly.

Every combat xiu that entered Turtle Island would attend the selection for Black Turtle Camp immediately but they quickly

comprehended what it meant to be part of a Turtle Island Battalion! The combat xiu that had the bravery to come at this time all had rich combat experience and good strength. In other factions, they could easily become part of the elite battalion. In actuality, many of them had left the elite battalions of other factions to come here and fight.

But these elites came out with dusty faces and dejection after experiencing the first day of qualifications.

They finally tasted the great strength of Turtle Island's battalions!

Strict regulations that they had never ever heard of, the level of training was so high that many people did not last through the first day. Now these xiuzhe understood that the two hundred combat xiu they saw that first day was the standard combat xiu in Turtle Island. Turtle Island did not have a so-called elite battalion.

Corresponding to the high requirements of Black Turtle Camp was the great benefits that many were jealous of.

The first batch of people that were chosen and went through combat formation training would receive a complete fourth-grade outfit. Many people were jealous of the fourth-grade outfits that Vermillion Bird Camp wore. If they could finish the training, they could receive the same outfit. Where else could they find something as good as this?

Black Turtle Camp was extremely busy.

Zuo Mo took away his gaze. He would not be able to put any hopes on Black Turtle Camp in the short-term. The formation of a battalion required time. The composition of Black Turtle Camp was also extremely varied. There were a mixture of xiuzhe. It took a lot of mental effort to even think of combat formations they could train in.

Fortunately, other than the combat xiu, there were also three silver battle generals. With the help of the three silver battle generals, Ma Fan's burdened lightened greatly. Even so, according to Lil' Miss' estimates, it would take at least one year for Black Turtle Camp to be ready for battle.

“We have found out that there are about three thousand people in this mo army. Their strength isn't bad,” Gongsun Cha said unconcernedly.

He probably had been influenced by Pu Yao. It was very difficult for this guy to even say “not bad.”

“They have slowed down their advance. They probably want to give us time to gather and then defeat us in one blow.” Lil' Miss smiled.

Seeing Lil's Miss' smile, the surrounding people shivered. Lil' Miss was angry!

Some people had smiles of schadenfreude. What yaomo, what monsters, if they provoked Lil' Miss, heeheehee

“How are we going to fight?” Shu Long asked straightforwardly.

Shu Long was clear to his strengths and weaknesses. In terms of scheming, ambushing and trickery, he was far from Lil’ Miss’ equal. Therefore, he decided not to waste the brainpower.

Lil’ Miss said lazily, “Why don’t we just charge over? I don’t believe they are stronger than Vermillion Bird Camp!”

The lazy words were filled with confidence. Lil’ Miss was clearly enraged by the other battle general’s intentions.

This insane idea caused Vermillion Bird Camp to rustle excitedly. If it was other people facing the mo army, they would have mental pressure, but for Vermillion Bird Camp, a mo army was nothing! They had seen the mo armies of Blood Sky Metropolis Jie, they were just that level. Vermillion Bird Camp had completely changed out their outfit, and their strength had grown. Their confidence was at a peak.

Come, come! Face to face, let’s have a fight!

Many people wanted to howl!

“No!” Zuo Mo glared at Lil’ Miss.

It was not that he did not have the confidence in Vermillion Bird

Camp but even if they won through fighting head-on, the fatalities would be astounding. Everyone in Vermillion Bird Camp had followed him for this long, how could he bear for them to fight the other head on?

He could not do unprofitable business!

“We need to get the greatest victory with the smallest amount of fatalities.” Zuo Mo’s tone was concerned. Seeing that everyone still had opinions, he instantly followed up, “Our goal is to defeat this mo army, not kill them all off. We only have to chase them back into the mo world so we can seal the chaos rift. Do not forget that when we win, we still need to have the strength to take care of Cloud Sea Jie, do we want others to pluck the fruits of our labor?”

Their heated heads finally calmed down. That was right, if they won this fight, Cloud Sea Jie was theirs. If they didn’t have enough strength at that point, wasn’t that working for others?

“No one believes we have the abilities to defeat the mo army. Right now, all the major factions have fled, and Cloud Sea Jie almost void of other powers. For us, this is a great chance. If we can grasp it, Cloud Sea Jie will be ours in the future!”

The leaders around him listened carefully with excited expression on their faces. Compared to the mo army, taking over Cloud Sea Jie caused more excitement in them.

Zuo Mo said in a deep voice, “Cloud Sea Jie is not bad. This is a very remote place, and there is almost no influence from the Four

Realm Heaven, it is not attention-catching. Right now, the Sky-Splitting Calamity is happening everywhere so they do not have the attention to spare to make trouble for us. For us, this is the best time.”

Everyone straightened their spines, and suppressed their excitement. They had roamed around with Zuo Mo this entire time and were extremely desirous of owning a stable territory. Even Wei Sheng who was usually steady couldn't help but nod his head at Zuo Mo's words.

“So this time, our goals are very clear. One, defeat the mo army and seal the chaos rift. Two, take this opportunity to take control of the jie rivers and take over Cloud Sea Jie.”

Light flashed through Zuo Mo's eyes. His right fist smashed down hard and a thread of dominance showed.

Almost unconsciously, everyone shouted in unison, “Yes!”

Zuo Mo took a breath. Even he had gotten excited at his own words. Calming down, he jumped at his own daring. At the beginning, he did not have this idea. It was only when he saw large amounts of xiuzhe gathering at Turtle Island that this idea had suddenly formed. After thinking for a few days, he had finally made a decision.

Looking around, he found everyone had expression of excitement. All of their moods had transformed. Everyone was filled with energy and fighting spirit. It came from their excited

and anticipatory faces.

Zuo Mo suddenly understood.

A clear goal would cause everyone to unite. They were filled with motivation and drive. They would not muddle through like they did in the past few months.

This troop was reborn!

Strangely, Zuo Mo felt some regret and apology. It was only today that he had given everyone a clear goal. He really had not been a good leader.

No one noticed Zuo Mo's guilt. Everyone was immersed in their dreams of the future.

“Since that's the case, then we will need to modify our plans.” Lil' Miss brushed the bangs at his forehead and two balls of red rose on his cheeks. He gave a bashful smile like that of the neighbor's boy. “There are many advantages that we can use. The appearance of the chaos rift was too sudden. I believe that the mo army has not adequately prepared. The reason that they have continuously won is because the local battalions of Cloud Sea Jie are too weak, and also because everyone fears the mo army. They do not have these two advantages against us. Also, we are fighting on home territory while they are battling a long-distance from their base. We have more of an advantage.”

Everyone listened carefully. Everyone could feel the rare seriousness in Lil' Miss' voice. It seemed that Lil' Miss was also excited by Daren's words.

“We are more familiar with the environment, this means we can use things like the transportation formations. We can identify the positions of all the transportation formations. This means that we can maneuver behind the enemy and then make a sneak attack.”

Lil' Miss continued, “But we need to cut the passage between the other army and the mo world before that. If the other can get reinforcements, this tactic will be disadvantages for us.”

Everyone present nodded. Zuo Mo looked at the calm Lil' Miss and couldn't help but sigh. Lil' Miss really had the mannerisms of a great general!

Lil' Miss put up two fingers. “My battle plan is very simple. Send a troop to meet the mo army and then send another troop to ambush the chaos rift and seal the rift. If the rift gets sealed, then we have won half of the battle. That way, the other will only have two choices left. The first is to keep advancing forward, and the other is to fight to return to the mo world. The possibility of them choosing the second is greater. We can set up a battlefield near the chaos rift and attack from front and back. Then they will be finished.”

Zuo Mo thought deeply. He felt there wasn't any holes and said unhesitatingly, “Do it!”

“Yes!” Everyone shouted their acceptance!

Chapter 513 - When We Made This Decision

“Hey, Lil’ Bu!”

A familiar voice came from behind him. Bu Si Dong stopped walking and when he saw the incomer, he showed happiness. He darted forward and threw a punch at the other’s shoulder excitedly. “Haha! A Zhe, you didn’t leave either! I thought you already left!”

“Leave? And go where?” A Zhe laughed helplessly. His figure was slender and scholarly. There was a star-shaped mark on his forehead. He had grown up with Bu Si Dong from childhood. Even though the two of them had later entered different sects, they had kept in contact.

“You are right!” Bu Si Dong’s voice was emotional. He quickly gave a sunny smile. “What are you doing now? Did you find work to do?”

“Constructing the city.” A Zhe pointed at the city which was now coming together, “Island Master wants to rebuild Xu Ling City. I’m responsible for a mid-sized defense formation.”

“Wow!” Bu Si Dong showed a shocked expression. “You’re this strong now? I had thought you were only able to forge second and third grade paper seals.”

A Zhe said exasperatedly, “I’ve lived this many years! Ah, if it wasn’t that Sect Leader had wanted to leave Cloud Sea Jie, I

wouldn't have left the sect."

"The same with me." Bu Si Dong sighed lightly. Both of them were in low moods. For them, their sects were like a second home. They were naturally reluctant to leave.

"Let's not speak about this!" Bu Si Dong gathered his mind and said proudly, "Right, I've been selected for Black Turtle Camp! Isn't it great?"

"You're that strong?" This time, it was A Zhe's turn to be shocked. "I heard that the selection was very strict. It's over now that an amateur like you was able to get in. I feel slightly worried about my future."

Bu Si Dong rolled his eyes. "I have to protect people like you in the future, I'm the one that should feel grief!"

"It is your honor, Little Bu!" A Zhe laughed as he patted Bu Si Dong's shoulder. Then he said concernedly, "I heard the training there is very difficult. Do you have enough ling dan? I have some here"

"No need, no need!" Bu Si Dong shook his hand and then said emotionally and in a show-off manner, "In reality, I have never thought there would be a day that I cultivate with such luxury. We get two pieces of third-grade jingshi every day and one Primary Replenishing Dan. We have to finish using it. Every week, we will get a Cleansing Dan to rid ourselves of the impurities and purify the ling power."

A Zhe's mouth was wide open as he stammered, "That that is too luxurious!"

"Motherf***er, I finally know how those large sect disciples cultivate! With such a cultivation method, would they fail? Just absorbing ling power from the jingshi and the medicinal power from the Primary Replenishing Dan would take up half of the day. Then it is battle formation training. If we are the slightest bit incorrect, we can only wait to get punished!" Thinking about the pains of cultivation, Bu Si Dong smacked his lips emotionally.

"Don't complain after benefiting!" A Zhe was full of admiration. "I heard long ago that the island is rolling in wealth. I hadn't thought they would be this wealthy! You really gained greatly!"

"Haha, yes!" Bu Si Dong said with pride. "It is a pity I am not a sword xiu. Turtle Island is best at training sword xiu. You haven't seen Teacher Wei's sword essence, it is uncanny!"

"Oh, work well. In the future, if you make it, then you can protect me." A Zhe's expression was matter-of-fact.

Bu Si Dong thought of a matter and hurriedly said, "A Zhe, you can go try for Golden Crow Camp. That place is filled with xiuzhe skilled in forging, seals and dan-making. I heard those admitted get Golden Crow Fire!"

"Golden Crow Fire? Fourth-grade Golden Crow Fire?" A Zhe's eyes were wide as though he had saw a ghost.

“Yes!” Bu Si Dong nodded forcefully. “I hear that they teach all kinds of forging methods. All of the ling dan that we use in cultivation are made by Golden Crow Camp. I went with Ma Fan Daren once and there were so many good things there that are just thrown on the floor. They can be seen everywhere, my heart hurt just looking at it!”

“Which direction is Golden Crow Camp?” A Zhe’s eyes became bloodshot as he asked.

Bu Si Dong pointed, “Oh, that place over there.”

Without another word, he turned and sprinted away.

“At least say farewell” Bu Si Dong stilled and then he muttered.

The people streamed in. Turtle Island was like an enormous magnet that attracted innumerable numbers of xiuzhe. The xiuzhe that were not willing to leave Cloud Sea Jie only had this one chance. Turtle Island quickly was unable to accommodate so many xiuzhe. Adding on that there were many restricted areas on the island that housed things like the Sun Shen Tree. There were too many eyes. If someone recognized it, then it would not be good.

Zuo Mo decided to rebuild Xu Ling City.

Originally, Lil' Miss planned to use Turtle Island as bait to attract the mo military. But looking at the flow of people that was continuously coming in, they had to throw out this idea.

Fortunately Vermillion Bird Camp which had the cloud wings and the nimbus clouds were very mobile and were suited for guerilla combat.

The progress of Xu Ling City was very quick. There was a large amount of manpower. Everyone knew that time was tight and worked hard.

Presently, Zuo Mo was very wealthy. This was the benefit of being the first to stand up against the mo army.

Merchants like Liao Qi Chang who came to Zuo Mo in search of protection naturally were willing to also invest. The businesses that were leaving Cloud Sea Jie would donate the things they were unable to transport to Zuo Mo. It was a favor, one they might be able to use in the future.

When he encountered this kind of situation, Zuo Mo accepted them. What? Not easy to move? No matter, I will get people to move it!

Those with keen eyes gambled on Zuo Mo. Many merchant houses proactively supplied all kinds of aid in the rebuilding of Xu Ling City.

How many of the merchants, that could survive in the cruel market, have poor insight?

Under this kind of situation, Zuo Mo's power quickly grew. A strange prosperity appeared around Turtle Island.

After finalizing their goal, the people under Zuo Mo's command displayed furious battle intent and high morale.

This might be the biggest "business deal" that Zuo Mo ever engaged in. His previous business deals were child's play compared to this business deal. When the fighting started, Zuo Mo perceptively realized that the enormous opportunity contained in the fighting.

Maybe he was really born to do business?

As to what to do after achieving their goal, who knew. Zuo Mo was too lazy to think. This really was a great chance but it was not so simple to grasp it.

Fortunately, everything seemed to be progressing smoothly at present.

But Zuo Mo did not let it go to his head. He judged calmly.

He was clear that this inflation in power was like a pile of

bubbles. If they could not defeat the mo army, these bubbles would instantly pop.

Looking at the quiet A Gui, Zuo Mo's restless heart also calmed down.

"A Gui, I'm very sorry. We need to wait for the fighting to finish before we can search for a Water Cloud embryo," he said apologetically.

A Gui sat silently and motionlessly.

The two stared at each other in silence.

"A Gui, who are you?" Gazing at A Gui, Zuo Mo said quietly. A while later, he lowered his head. His expression was slightly depressed. "Who am I?"

Suddenly a hand reached over and grasped Zuo Mo's hand.

Zuo Mo stilled and raised his hand abruptly.

A Gui's face was still as wooden as usual but there was a weak light in the deep reaches of the empty eyes.

A Gui had moved!

This was the first time A Gui moved of her accord after she was wounded.

For some unknown reason, Zuo Mo suddenly felt his heart warm up. This simple move made him feel extremely comfortable and his dejection flew away.

A Gui's hand was very beautiful. Just like her feet, it did not have one flaw.

Other than being slightly cold.

Zuo Mo gripped A Gi's hand back.

“Thank you, A Gui.”

“I object!”

“I also object!”

“Daren, you cannot enter into a dangerous situation, this is too dangerous!”

Zuo Mo looked at the excited group. He had predicted this reaction. Wei Sheng did not speak but it was clear from his

expression that he did not agree with Zuo Mo's thoughts. He was not the only one. Lil' Miss, Shu Long, and the others were shaking their heads.

Everyone knew what Zuo Mo's safety meant to their troops. If something happened to Zuo Mo, this group would likely fall apart instantly.

Any suggestion that could cause that situation would receive everyone's opposition.

Gradually, people calmed from their excitement. Their eyes landed on Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo was smiling as usual and did not show an excited expression. Seeing everyone calm down, he slowly opened.

"I've thought deeply about this."

No one spoke. Everyone was waiting for Zuo Mo to keep speaking. After interacting with Daren for so long, they also knew it was extremely difficult to change Daren's mind after he made a decision.

"No one can replace Gongsun Shidi and Vermillion Bird Camp in fighting against the mo military. The battle style of Guard Camp is not suited to guerrilla combat. Shu Long's personality is steady and is skilled in defense rather than offence. This time, Guard Camp's mission is to attack the other's base. I feel that no one is more suited than I am."

Seeing someone open their mouth to speak, Zuo Mo waved his hand and continued.

“As for the danger, do not mention it in the future. We are fighting with our backs against the wall, there is no retreat. Unless we want to return to what we were before,” Zuo Mo looked around and said in a deep voice, “Are you willing?”

The audience was completely silent.

Before setting their goal, no one had realized this problem and felt it was nothing. But once they set their goal, it was like poking a hole in the umbrella. No one was willing to go back to their previous muddling days.

“When we made this decision,”

Zuo Mo’s gaze slowly swept across everyone. Everyone felt a strong pressure.

“we no longer had the right to fear the consequences!”

Zuo Mo’s tone was aloof but these words were like a sharp sword deeply cutting into stone, and engraving themselves into people’s hearts!

Chapter 514 - Thousand Bird Seal

“We have encountered enemy scouts again. This is the seventh group,” the vice commander’s tone was very calm, “the other has a high opinion of us.”

“Oh,” Shi Dong made a sound. His posture did not change as he gazed into the distance. His blue eyes were as deep as the ocean.

“Based on the skill level of these scouts, the enemy is not weak,” the vice commander continued. “if the other’s combat xiu are also at this level, then we will have a tough battle.”

“Oh,” Shi Dong was unaffected.

“We need to be careful of our retreat path being cut off,” the vice commander reminded. “If our retreat is cut off, then we will be left in a dangerous situation.”

Shi Dong finally reacted, “Did you inform Ye Ling?”

“Yes,” the vice commander nodded and said, “Ye Ling Daren has already spread out the mo grass seeds. In fifteen days, these mo grass seeds will germinate.”

“Why was mo sea seed not used?” Shi Dong’s tone was calm but the vice commander who was familiar with him could hear the dissatisfaction in his tone.

The vice commander explained, "The mo sea seed is too expensive. We did not have enough time to prepare."

Shi Dong was silent.

Mo grass seed was slower to grow than mo sea seed. If it was mo sea seed, it would form a small mo rearing sea, and it would take at least fifteen days for mo grass seed to form a mo grass sea. Compared to the mo rearing sea, the mo grass sea was a level below in terms of expansion speed and the threat it would pose to enemies.

In Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie, the mo had used vast areas of mo rearing sea to form a secure defensive line.

Even though Shi Dong felt that the mo sea seed was more effective, he knew that he could not blame Ye Ling for this matter. The chaos rifts had appeared so suddenly. Even he had not expected it. From the time the chaos rift appeared to the time that Shi Dong decided to lead the troops to attack, there was only a brief period of time. It was already very difficult for Ye Ling to have accomplished what he did.

Also, he felt the mo grass sea was enough to secure their base.

Their advance had been so smooth it surpassed Shi Dong's imagination. When he learned of Cloud Sea Jie's position, he understood why this was the case. This was a little place was remote and unattended to.

It lacked powerful sects, did not have unique produce, was poor and desolate, and there were many places that were still unexplored.

The successive victories did not give Shi Dong any pleasure. His opponents were too weak. There was nothing to be proud of in these kinds of victories.

His only hope now was that the unexplored areas under the cloud sea would give him some surprises. Otherwise, taking over such a place could not bring any benefits to his family.

Shi Dong was going to get the vice commander to remind Ye Ling but thinking about Ye Ling's personality and how he never made low-level mistakes, he changed the topic, "Have you found out yet? What products from Cloud Sea Jie are valuable?"

"Looking at the present, it has some seams of ore but there is not a large amount, and the grade is not high." The vice commander looked at Shi Dong and then said, "But Xiao Wo said he felt the presence of mo embryos."

"Mo embryos!" Shi Dong's eyes ignited and for the first time, his tone changed.

"Yes, mo embryos! Even though he does not know what kind of mo embryo it is, but there definitely are some. You also know, Xiao Wo has never been wrong in this matter before." The vice commander's tone was confident.

An imperceptible trace of joy appeared in Shi Dong's eyes. Xiao Wo was a troop leader under Shi Dong's command and a rare one who cultivated a mo physique. The mo physique that he practiced was called the Nighttide Snail mo physique. This kind of mo physique did not have strong battle abilities, but it had a special ability, an unusually powerful ability to smell.

The vice commander was right. Xiao Wo had never been incorrect in this before!

Mo embryo!

They grew among the flora and wild beasts, and were all kinds of strange shapes. Some lived within wild beasts, other within plants, some were in lifeless areas and appeared like rocks. Even a true mo like Shi Dong found it hard to say what were actually mo embryos.

But this did not stop them from knowing the value of mo embryos.

The greatest use of mo embryos was to cultivate the mo physique. There were all kinds of mo physique and their cultivation methods were as varied and as strange. For example, Shi Dong's Cold Blade mo physique and Xiao Wo's Nighttide Snail mo physique were cultivated through their bloodlines. But more mo physiques were not achieved through bloodlines.

Using mo embryos to cultivate a mo physique was a common method.

This was what the mo embryos were valued for.

If there was mo embryos here

Shi Dong understood. He needed to reassess the value of Cloud Sea Jie!

At this time, Shi Dong suddenly saw one of his scouts race back in a disheveled state. There were some shocking wounds on his body that were seeping blood.

Shi Dong's pupils suddenly contracted!

"Daren, there is a very well-hidden transportation formation here," Gu Ming gong said respectfully, "a merchant house had invited me to build it. Keeping it a secret, the site is very well hidden. This subordinate has put traps into it. If it is destroyed, this subordinate would detect it immediately."

Ever since Zuo Mo had set the Soul Setting Divine Light in him, Gu Ming Gong was extremely obedient. If Zuo Mo told him to go east, he definitely would not go west. At the beginning, he had been extremely cautious and fearful as though he was on thin ice. As time passed, his terror had mostly dissipated. Zuo Mo never limited him on materials and continuously provided rare and valuable materials for him to forge so he quickly immersed himself into forging.

He was unable to get rid of the jinzhi on his body no matter what he did. As time went on, he could only go with the flow.

Fortunately, his days were pretty good. Other than not having freedom, everything else was very good, especially his forging. There was no other place that would give him so many materials to waste.

Zuo Mo had specifically taken him along on this campaign. One part was that Gu Ming gong was a famed jindan expert, and had combat capabilities. The other point was that Gu Ming Gong was very familiar with Cloud Sea Jie. He wasn't just familiar with the local transportation formations, he could make his own transportation formations.

This was a great help to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo might have been provocative and stirring in his words seeming as though he would fight to the death, but inside, he was still very afraid of death.

Under the direction of Gu Ming gong, they quickly entered the underground room of the storehouse. As expected, they found a transportation formation. Gu Ming Gong inspected it to make sure there were not any problems before he activated the transportation formation

Several pieces of fourth-grade jingshi were put into the formation. The formation instantly lit up with light.

For this sneak attack, Zuo Mo really invested greatly. To say of nothing else, just to transport so many people was a shocking expense.

The people stepped after each other into the transportation formation. Streaks of light lit up and then they disappeared.

The other side of the transportation formation were also in a dark underground storehouse. Gu Ming Gong made his way familiarly through the basement and led everyone to exit. Everyone suddenly found that the buildings outside were in complete ruins and the formations were completely damaged.

“Daren, this is Cloud Watching Ridge.” Gu Ming Gong’s expression was not very good. He clearly was shocked by the hellish scene in front of him.

Fighting between xiuzhe was regular and common as eating, but compared to the horrific scene in front of him, that was just playing house.

Zuo Mo identified Cloud Watching Ridge was the one of the first places that were attacked by the mo.

Even now, they had not found where the chaos rift had appeared. They could only use this crude method and slowly search. Only when they found the chaos rift would they be able to find the other’s base. The other’s base definitely was not far from the chaos rift.

Looking across the landscape, it was a field of debris.

Compared to Gu Ming Gong's loss of composure, Zuo Mo was much calmer. He had seen scenes bloodier than this.

He turned around and said to Gu Ming Gong, "Let's start."

Gu Ming Gong took out a paper seal and breathed ling power onto it. His left hand moved as he chanted.

Pew!

The paper seal suddenly started to burn and turned into a ball of fire.

Psh-hiss-hiss!

Among the flames, a group of non-descript grey birds flew out. There was a large number of them that flapped their wings to fly in all directions and disappeared in a flash.

Shu Long and the others looked curiously at this scene.

Even Zuo Mo was interested. In terms of variety of skills, it definitely was the seal xiu that stood tallest. Their endless variety of moves would always keep people's eyes on them.

Noticing Zuo Mo's gaze, Gu Ming Gong hurriedly introduced, "Daren, this is the Thousand Bird Seal and most suited for searching. However, it is not easy to make and very pricey."

"It is very practical." Zuo Mo started to consider if he should outfit Guard Camp with seals like this. Other than A Wen, the mo shadow guard who had shocking speed, Guard Camp was very average in speed and unsuited to being scouts.

The Thousand Bird Seals could cover for Guard Camp's shortcoming to a great degree.

But Zuo Mo was not sure if Shu Long and the others could even use paper cranes. Paper cranes required ling power, while Shu Long and the others cultivated mo skills.

He requested a paper seal from Gu Ming Gong and gave it to Shu Long. No matter how Shu Long tried, he was unable to use it.

Zuo Mo could only give up on this tempting idea.

As expected, the heavens were fair. It was not realistic to get all the benefits.

In the past, Guard Camp always followed Vermillion Bird Camp. This was the first time they were fighting so far from the main base. Many problems that they had not encountered before were exposed now.

Zuo Mo was suddenly curious. How did the mo soldiers that were not fast deal with this problem?

He ran to ask Wei.

Wei explained, “The mo have many ways to solve this problem. For example, some mo physiques are shockingly fast or they have unique attributes. These kinds of mo are very powerful as scouts. Some mo armies would raise mo insects. They are extremely fast, and can conceal themselves. It is hard for enemies to detect them.”

Zuo Mo understood now. The xiuzhe had xiuzhe moves, yaomo had yaomo moves.

After development through so many years, the systems of yao, mo, and xiu had gradually been perfected. Xiuzhe had geniuses, how could all of the yaomo be stupid? Zuo Mo also learned from Pu Yao and Wei that the internal conflicts of yaomo were much crueler than inner conflicts among xiuzhe. The mo had the fiercest infighting.

Zuo Mo noted down this problem and decided to resolve it when he got back.

They waited for about fifteen minutes when Gu Ming Go who was standing with his eyes closed suddenly shuddered. He opened his eyes abruptly, “Southeast!”

Zuo Mo and the others became alert. Without a word, they flew towards the southeast.

After flying for about four hours, a mountain valley appeared in front of them.

As they flashed past the valley, Zuo Mo's body suddenly froze. Uncontrolled shock came into his eyes!

Chapter 515 - Dumbstruck Ye Ling

The black soil stood as a stark contrast, it seemed to have been dyed in ink and was clearly divided from the surrounding soil.

“Mo Grass Sea!”

Wei’s reminder came immediately as they spotted it.

“Mo Grass Sea?” Zuo Mo asked in response.

“Our luck is pretty good.” Wei explained, “This area has been recently seeded with mo grass seed. However, the mo grass seed has not germinated so I say that our luck is pretty good.”

“It is very powerful?”

“It is not powerful but after reaching maturity, the expansion rate of mo grass is astounding. It will spread like a poison and is able to survive on the poorest of soils. Its greatest ability is to absorb the ling power of the area it grows in.”

Zuo Mo inhaled sharply.

For xiuzhe, they would face great trouble if there was not any ling power in the air. This meant that the xiuzhe could only expend the ling power inside their body and it could not be easily replenished. If they did not have access to special methods, they

could only occasionally replenish their ling power with jingshi. Ling foods and ling dan were more reliable and caused fewer side effects but this would dramatically inflate the cost and difficulty of supplying the troop.

“But Guard Camp cultivates no skills.” Zuo Mo suddenly reacted.

“That is why I said our luck is pretty good.” Wei’s tone was very calm. “I feel you should have more confidence in Guard Camp. The present Guard Camp is nothing like it was in the past.”

A cold snort suddenly sounded in Zuo Mo’s mind. It was like the dark and cold hiss of a poisonous snake.

It was Pu Yao.

How could the clever Pu Yao not hear Wei’s insult?

Zuo Mo pretended to not hear it. Only when these two were at odds could he, the fisherman, get the rice! If the two worked together, he could not imagine how he would survive his days!

It was lucky that he brought along Guard Camp. If he had brought Vermillion Bird Camp, he would have been at a great disadvantage. The no grass sea was ineffective against Guard Camp. Zuo Mo’s heart rested slightly.

The other was very cautious. This could be understood from the area filled with no grass sea.

“Did you find the general position of the enemy’s base?” Zuo Mo asked Gu Ming Gong.

Gu Ming Gong shook his head. “This patch of black soil is very strange. The Thousand Bird Seal cannot fly over it.”

As expected!

This mo grass sea had not finished forming but its effect on draining ling power had started to emerge. The grey birds created from the Thousand Bird Seal were constructed from ling power and would be destroyed in they flew into this area.

But since they found the mo grass sea, then the other’s base was definitely in here.

Zuo Mo thought for a moment and then called for A Wen. After speaking in a low tone, A Wen nodded and then his plumed armor fanned out. Woosh, his body disappeared.

A Wen’s strength had progressed greatly. He was different from Shu Long and he was training as a lone soldier. His shocking talent caused his rate of improvement to be rapid. Pu Yao and Wei had a rare agreement and praised A Wen’s talents.

A Wen quickly returned.

He came back with the enemy base's general location. Just like Zuo Mo had thought, as the mo grass seed had not matured, the other had not established their camp for long time.

Under A Wen's direction, they silently approached the other's base.

Ye Ling had a head full of maroon hair, and his grey-white eyes looked extremely deep. The wrinkles on his face ran deep. He had an ordinary birth and no special bloodline. He also lacked talent in cultivating mo skills but with his outstanding work ethic, he had found a place in the army.

Even though he was only in charge of the supplies, this was already very good for him and his family.

His working attitude was extremely proactive and industrious. He almost never made mistakes. Over time, he quickly gained a reputation of being capable and trustworthy. Even Shi Dong who had eyes on top of his head was willing to partner up with him.

“Where is Shi Dong Daren now?” he asked.

“At Grey Cloud Sea Continent. The latest reports say that our scouts have come into contact with xiuzhe scouts. Many of our scouts have been wounded,” the vice commander hurriedly answered.

Ye Ling was not very shocked. “This is very normal. Xiuzhe are not weak. It would actually be abnormal if they did not react at all to us knocking on their door and killing their people.”

“Daren is right.”

“We need to be careful and prevent others from ambushing us.” Ye Ling’s expression was grave as he said, “Have the troops on high alert! There are smart people among xiuzhe, we cannot trip up on flat ground!”

“Yes! Daren!” the vice commander accepted the order.

Suddenly, a howl sounded that almost ruptured Ye Ling’s eardrums.

The duo’s expressions suddenly changed!

Someone had mounted a sneak attack on their base.

Zuo Mo’s face fell.

They had sneaked right up in front of the enemy. If they didn’t use this chance to mount a sneak attack, they would be struck by lightning!

Yet he had not expected the other's alertness to be higher than he had predicted. He had avoided the other's scouts but the enemy's defences were extremely thorough and they had been detected anyway.

The thing that caused this was an insect the size of a thumb. It was hidden in the soil and was extremely difficult to attack.

Something in the black soil under their feet seemed to be shifting. It rapidly advanced towards Zuo Mo's group.

Zuo Mo was the first to react. His expression changed slightly, "Black Leech Defense Line!"

Almost in an instant, Guard Camp finished falling into formation.

Vast power came from behind him. The shock and fear inside Zuo Mo quickly disappeared like snow on a hot day. The Great Day mo physique was stimulated and quickly activated.

"Little Mo Kill!"

Thick black mist shrouded Zuo Mo's right hand. He raised his hand and slammed it towards the flow of black leeches heading towards them.

A black shadow of a hand left his hand.

Boom!

The flow of black leeches seemed to strike wall and dispersed into countless smaller flows!

These slender black flows suddenly made a strange turn in the air and shot back towards Zuo Mo like black arrows.

If it was a normal xiuzhe, they would have panicked facing such a sudden change. However, Zuo Mo's group had already seen the power of the black leech defense line in Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie and expected that these black leeches were not easy to destroy.

At the very front of the large formation, Zuo Mo did not panic. He was immersed in an unique feeling.

There seemed to be unseen threads that were spreading out from his body. Each unseen thread connected to a hardship guard. This hardship guard would also have dozens of thin threads that were connected to other hardship guards.

These threads were connecting everyone!

Power flowed through these unseen threads, passing through the layers of connections before they gathered on Zuo Mo's body.

An burst of power tightly wrapped around Zuo Mo. Under the magnification of this power, any normal move would now carry the weight of a mountain.

The Great Day mo physique was unusually active. Every cell in his body seemed to be cheering.

Without thinking, Zuo Mo spread open his fingers and then grasped at the air in the direction of the slender flows of black leeches!

Pia!

The black leeches in the air suddenly exploded and turned to black mist.

Zuo Mo waved his hand. The mist instantly dissipated.

Yet when he saw the now organized mo army in front of him, Zuo Mo's expression instantly became grave.

His alertness had been raised when they encountered the black leech defense line. This was a temporary base yet the other had set up a black leech defense line. To say of nothing else, just the cautiousness of this planning was enough to create a headache for people!

The black leech defense line did not earn a lot of time for the enemy, but using such a brief amount of time, the other had

finished their battle preparations!

They were well-trained!

Just this quality was enough for Zuo Mo to not dare to underestimate the enemy.

————

Ye Ling appeared extremely calm. He had the same heavy gaze as usual, and did not show any panic. This brought his subordinates great bravery and confidence.

Yet what no one knew was that underneath this, Ye Ling was not as calm.

His gaze was locked onto the youth at the front of the enemy formation, and his mind was in turmoil!

He had seen the entire process that the youth used to defeat the black leech defense line. The youth seemed to be very familiar with the black leech defense line and had defeated it with confidence. Ye Ling knew that the black leech defense line, that he had set up, was very thin but he never expected the enemy to defeat it this easily.

The other didn't seem to be affected by the mo grass sea at all!

This was a shock to him. The mo grass sea had not completely

formed but its ability to destroy ling power was already present. If xiuzhe entered this area, they would be affected to various degrees.

But the other didn't seem to react at all. He was not the only one. Even the subordinates behind him didn't seem to be under any pressure.

What was even stranger was the shape of the other's formation!

Anyway he looked at it, Ye Ling found it familiar. Wasn't this the Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation of us mo?

The Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation wasn't a common thing. Only armies with power would cultivate this domineering and vicious killing formation.

Seeing a group of xiuzhe use the Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation of the mo to defeat the black leech defense line of the mo, Ye Ling was almost dumbstruck where he stood.

All Hail The King! This who was really the mo here!

Zuo Mo took the chance to examine Ye Ling.

“What battle formation are they using?” Zuo Mo secretly asked

Wei.

“I don’t recognize it. It probably is a new battle formation that came out after our imprisonment.” Wei’s brow creased as well. He hoped that he could help Zuo Mo gain victory. Only victory could prove that Guard Camp’s strength had improved under his guidance.

Could someone like Pu Yao compare to, I, Wei?

A warm sunny smile came back onto Wei’s face as he said with a hint of holy piousness.

“Do not worry. With the Crow Fiend Mo Killing Formation that I taught as well as your Great Day mo physique, we can flatten them.”

Oh, there was really nothing to be done, it was I, Wei, that taught Little Zuo Mo his Great Day mo physique

There was really nothing to be done there was really nothing to be done

Little Pu Pu

The light of I, Wei, will burn you with my radiance... ..

We’s smile became even more holier and warmer.

In the Ten Finger Prison, Pu Yao suddenly raised his head. The corner of his eyes twitched. There seemed to be a vast ocean of blood howling and roaring in his bloody eye. Nan Yue and the others trembled. A moment later, Pu Yao's cold voice squeezed out from between his teeth. "One month! If you cannot achieve this in one month, there is a good place waiting for you."

The scalps of Nan Yue and the others prickled as they fled in panic!

Chapter 516 - To Cross Swords

Shi Dong looked coldly at the xiuzhe scouts that were roaming nearby.

Starting from the first day of contact, the fighting between the two side's scouts never stopped. The scouts were the elite of an army. The fighting was short yet fierce, ending in serious wounds if not death.

Shi Dong did not feel surprised. He had spent many years in the military, and his heart was as hard as stone. The conflict between scouts were the prelude to a battle and he had confidence in his men.

These scouts had followed him for many years. Each one of them had been promoted based on their merit and service.

Yet the development of the situation still shocked him greatly.

In three short days, twenty seven elite scouts had been wounded or killed. Even with a rock-solid heart, Shi Dong felt a hint of coldness. The number of wounded and dead spoke to the violence of battle. But pitting their scouts against the enemy scouts, the other had sustained an insignificant number of wounds and fatalities. Shi Dong's gaze grew colder.

Shi Dong understood. They had encountered a great enemy!

However, this did not cause him to feel nervousness and uncertainty. It was the exact opposite. Under his icy expression, the battle intent in his mind was like the hidden turbulence under the thick layer of ice that was slowly rippling.

The vice commander looked at the xiuzhe scouts roaming at the surroundings. Even now, he couldn't quite believe it that his scouts were defeated.

“Does Cloud Sea Jie really have such a powerful battalion?” he murmured to himself in a voice filled with disbelief. At the start when they entered Cloud Sea Jie, they hadn't know anything but as they gathered together information, Cloud Sea Jie became clear in their eyes.

Nothing had mentioned that Cloud Sea Jie had such a powerful battalion!

The battalions they had defeated before had battalions that ranked in the top ten of Cloud Sea Jie but compared to this mysterious battalion, they weren't even worth mentioning.

Was this battalion the strongest battalion of Cloud Sea Jie, the Na Shan Battalion?

Shi Dong did not speak. There was no meaning in trying to guess the origins of this battalion. In his eyes, there was only victory. He was not concerned at all with the other's name or history.

The enemy scouts had created a dense net. Their scouts could not leave.

Subsequently the amount of information that reached Shi Dong decreased. This feeling was terrible. He seemed to be trapped in quicksand and any struggle was useless.

The other did not seem to be in a hurry to attack. Other than these scouts that stuck to them like glue, the other's primary force did not show themselves.

Suddenly, Shi Dong's mind shifted. He recalled Turtle Island. Was this battalion Turtle Island Battalion?

The information on Turtle Island Battalion was almost nonexistent. There was only scattered mentions in the information they gathered and that was just about a small conflict. Thinking about Turtle Island's recent reputation, and this mysterious battalion that suddenly appeared , Shi Dong instantly made the connection between the two.

So this was how it was

Gazing at the scouts, Shi Dong gripped the mantis blade at his waist tightly!

The other was dragging it out for time!

Yes! The other was trying to make time!

But why were they trying to drag for time? Shi Dong's thought became clearer. The other needed time, they were waiting for something! Were they waiting for Turtle Island's defenses to be completed?

It was not so simple

This short contact could not be said to be a conflict but Shi Dong could smell the danger level of the other's battle general.

An expert!

The other's aims definitely were not so simple. Also, defending Turtle Island was not a very good idea

Was it

Shi Dong's heart suddenly jumped. He turned around abruptly. "Inquire about Ye Ling's situation! Immediately!"

Frightened by his commanding officer's moves, the vice commander stilled for a moment before reacting. "Yes."

He took out a black insect on his hand and cut his finger. With a flick, a drop of blood entered the forehead of the insect. The insect started to fade in his hand at a visible rate until it disappeared.

Time slowly passed but the insect never came back.

The vice commander's expression changed.

As expected

Shi Dong whose expression did not change had his suspicions confirmed. He had just been speculating on the other's intentions, now he was definitely sure.

“Have we brought along any mo grass seed?” Shi Dong suddenly asked about something completely unconnected.

“Yes!” the vice commander reflexively answered.

Shi Dong gripped the mantis blade at his waist. He raised his head against the wind. The blue cap that represented the Sky Mantis flapped in the wind.

The ocean-like eyes suddenly gave off a sharp light. It was as though he drew out the mantis blade that was sheathed at his waist. His body was filled with the determination to advance.

“Our target is Turtle Island, advance at full speed!”

—————

The other was not easy to fool.

Gongsun Cha hadn't expected this mo army to suddenly accelerate without warning. It formed a perfect assault battle formation and headed straight for Turtle Island like a sharp blade!

Without a doubt, the enemy battle general had detected his aims. The counter-attack was expected, but it was unusually strong.

The great majority of people in this situation would turn back to act as reinforcements if their retreat was cut off. Yet this mo army did the opposite and advanced at an accelerated rate!

It was a decision filled with bravery!

Even though the two were enemies, Gongsun Cha could not help himself from sighing in praise.

The other was forcing him into a final battle.

If the other reached Turtle Island, even if he could win, the number of fatalities would reach a terrifying number. Turtle Island's defenses were very strong but Turtle Island itself could not hold that many xiuzhe. Xu Ling City had not finished rebuilding, and the defenses were next to nothing.

If this was any other time, Gongsun Cha would not hesitate to use these people to trade for a victory.

But given the situation right now

A ruined Cloud Sea Jie was not of any benefit for them. Even Gongsun Cha, who was only interested in being a battle general, could understand a concept as shallow as this.

Actually, when Zuo Mo had said the words at the time, Lil' Miss had been very surprised. But if there had to be one person that he would support unconditionally, there was only Zuo Mo.

As to whether Shixiong's decision was correct, the obstacles they faced, and what consequences there were, it was not within the realm of his consideration.

The only thing he would use his mind for, to scheme for, was victory!

“You want a final battle?” Lil' Miss' eyes flashed with an insane light. The shadow formed by the bangs at the front of his face seemed to cover his entire face.

“Then come!”

His mouth unconsciously curved in a smile that was as bashful as usual.

“Can we win?” Bu Si Dong’s sweat was running in rivers down his face. The exhaustion caused his voice to gasp.

They had just experienced an abnormally difficult session of training. Almost all the strength in their bodies had been squeezed out.

This really was demonic cultivation!

Before this, no one had ever heard of training like this. They didn’t even dare think of this. Even with the great benefits, they were full of groans and complaints. Some people had even planned on running away. But ever since those few that ran away were captured and thrown into the sword formation, the wails that occurred daily caused all of Black Martial Camp to feel their scalps prickle.

Ma Fan had found experts from Golden Crow Camp to set up fifty sword formations that were placed right beside the campsite.

Everyday when they trained, they could clearly hear the inhuman screams coming out of the sword formation.

Everyone settled down.

Bu Si Dong never thought of running away. He didn’t have any talent but he could endure hardship. In reality, the potential of a person was greater than they themselves realized. These people

were starting to adjust to this terrifying level of training.

The departure of Vermillion Bird Camp and Guard Camp could be concealed from other people but not from Black Turtle Camp that was adjacent to Vermillion Bird Camp. Everyone knew the counter-attack had started.

When they had the time, they would discuss the situation.

“They probably can.” The one who spoke was called Luo Wei. He was a sword xiu and had a natural advantage in the camp. He was also the primary attacker of their small team.

However, Luo Wei’s tone did not hold much confidence.

“I want us to be able to participate. Didn’t we come just to fight against the mo army? Just hiding here and training everyday, it is so irritating!” Da Ban couldn’t help but mutter from the side. He had a pair of conspicuous front teeth. He was unusually proud of them and wouldn’t think of using ling power to modify them. Consequently, everyone called him Da Ban.

Luo Wei said without raising his head, “If Vermillion Bird Camp and Guard Camp cannot win, then we aren’t even enough for a mouthful. Before, I felt I was strong, now I know how laughable that idea was.”

Everyone became silent.

Luo Wei was right. At the beginning, there were many rebellious people but after training for a few days, they finally understood how great the difference was between themselves and Vermillion Bird Camp.

“Who do you think is stronger, Guard Camp or Vermillion Bird Camp?” Bu Si Dong saw everyone was silent and hurriedly said.

“Does it need to be said, of course it is Vermillion Bird Camp!” Da Ban said without thinking.

Everyone’s interests were stirred by this topic and spoke up.

“I also feel it is Vermillion Bird Camp.”

“Vermillion Bird Camp! Ma Fan Daren is too strong!”

“Those animal from Vermillion Bird Camp are not human!”

All of them supported Vermillion Bird Camp. Compared to Guard Camp that had never showed its face, they had a direct experience with the strength of Vermillion Bird Camp. Some of them even felt that there wasn’t a stronger battalion than Vermillion Bird Camp in the world.

Bu Si Dong noticed that Luo Wei did not speak. He couldn’t help but ask, “Luo Wei, what do you feel?”

“I don’t know,” Luo Wei stopped what he was doing, “but I feel that since Guard Camp can rank together with Vermillion Bird Camp, it must have its strengths.”

When he spoke, he suddenly recalled when he had seen a person from Guard Camp the other day.

The other person just glanced at him, and he felt all the blood in his body freeze!

This incident had given him a deep impression.

He was preparing to tell everyone about the incident when Ma Fan Daren’s serene voice came like a ghost out of the ground.

“You’ve rested long enough, prepare for the next part of training.”

Everyone instantly jumped up as though something had bitten their behinds and sprinted towards the field.

Ma Fan’s figure slowly floated out of the air as he looked into the distance.

This really was so troublesome

And he was missing such a spectacular battle

Chapter 517 - Who Who Is The Mo Here

... ..

Ye Ling's position was quartermaster, it was his primary duty, but he was not unfamiliar with battle. In truth, in the mo military, people who could not fight were unable to survive.

The mo respected power. From childhood, they were taught the philosophy of fighting and its unparalleled and ultimate status. Status, wealth, mo skills, the hopes of the clan and others, all of them had to be earned through fighting prowess. This was a long battle that began in youth, a life that was cruel and filled with blood. Those that could survive this battle and achieve something were the elite of the mo.

Ye Ling was that kind of elite. Even if he was just a quartermaster, even if it had been many years since he last fought, this kind of instinct would not degrade.

The other's mo-esque style of fighting shocked him but he quickly recovered his calmness. His years of experience in the military allowed him to face anything calmly.

His preferred position as he commanded differed from Zuo Mo. His position was at the center of the battle formation.

For mo this was a rare position to stand in.

Mo revered directness and brute force. Their battle generals

usually stood at the front of the battle formation, as the tip of the blade! This could maximize the amount of strength they gathered from the entire battalion to unleash the strongest attack!

That was where Zuo Mo was standing.

Ye Ling couldn't help but feel slight strangeness. As a true-blooded mo, his position was not like the mo but more similar to the yao and the xiuzhe. The enemy was clearly a xiuzhe but what he used was a conventional mo battle style.

Who really was the mo here?

This absurd thought flashed through his mind.

He quickly refocused his attention. Threads of power responded to him. Everything in the surroundings suddenly became unprecedentedly clear. A feeling of strength grew quickly in his mind!

Such a familiar feeling!

Strangely, he felt emotional. The battle spirit in his blood had remained cold for many years, but now the excitement of his youth was reawakened. His eyes became misty black.

Like a ball of mist, his figure disappeared in the air.

Almost at the same time, every mo soldier under his command had their eyes turn red as though they were dyed in fresh blood.

Silently, murderousness grew!

—————

“[Mist Hand Seat]!” The holy smile on Wei’s face suddenly froze and he showed shock.

“What is that?”

Zuo Mo didn’t dare to be careless. In a flash, the enemy troop suddenly seemed to inflate. The murderousness made him feel great pressure.

“A very interesting mo skill.” Pu Yao’s voice suddenly inserted but his tone was full of undisguised schadenfreude. “I and Little Wei encountered this in the past. Tsk tsk, I really miss that time!”

Pu Yao dragged out the sound as he smacked his lips. He really appeared to be reminiscing about the past.

Little Wei

Wei’s smile became increasingly forced.

Hearing Pu Yao's words, Zuo Mo suddenly had a bad feeling. "It's very powerful?"

"Powerful?" The corners of Pu Yao's lips rose slightly as he shook his head. "No no no! It isn't powerful, but it is very interesting. Haha"

As though he seemed to recall something, Pu Yao roared with laughter. The laughter that was furious and as sharp as blades echoed in Zuo Mo's sea of consciousness.

Wei's expression became increasingly terrible.

Zuo Mo's bad feeling grew. Had they encountered a difficult enemy!

"I wonder how Ye Ling Daren is right now?" The vice commander was full of worry. "The other has gambled on Ye Ling Daren, and the troop they sent definitely would not be weak"

The vice commander's nagging had caused Shi Dong's patient to finally reach its end. He impatiently interrupted, "You don't need to worry for Ye Ling!"

"But"

Seeing the worry on his vice commander's face, Shi Dong thought and decided to say something. "Do not underestimate Ye Ling. What he cultivates is the [Mist Hand Seat.]"

"Ah!" The vice commander was shocked and his mouth was gaped so wide an egg could be shoved through it. After a long while, his mind refocused. He stammered out a question. "[Mist Hand Sea]? Heavens! Ye Ling Daren actually cultivates [Mist Hand Seat]!"

A military officer that was the quartermaster who cultivated the [Mist Hand Seat,] this was insane!

Shi Dong was silent for a moment. He suddenly said nonsensically, "It is a pity, if only he also cultivated the Mist mo physique"

The vice commander paused again but this time, he understood.

Shi Dong suddenly raised his head. His blue eyes narrowed slightly and his hand went to the mantis blade at his waist.

Looking down from the sky, the entire mo army seemed to stop without any warning. The entire process was carried out like clockwork, in sync and unified without any confusion.

In front of them, a troop was silently floating in the air.

Shi Dong gripped the handle of the mantis blade, his expression

was icy and his back straight as he slowly walked towards the front.

With every step, his presence increased. When he reached to the front of the formation, he was like an unsheathed sword, the sharp edges exposed to the air without any reservation.

The mantis blade was unsheathed!

Pointing forward!

When Gongsun Cha saw Shi Dong's action, his lips couldn't help but curl up. Without any warning, his peaceful eyes suddenly began to boil.

The shy and bashful smile suddenly held a thread of craziness and undisguised admiration.

The other dared to advance alone after detecting his intentions and aimed straight at Turtle Island. Just this action was enough to win Lil' Miss' respect.

When the opponent realized Vermillion Bird Camp's advantage in speed, the other advanced at full speed without holding anything in reserve. This action that seemed reckless had greatly weakened Vermillion Bird Camp's advantage of fighting on home ground. It forced Vermillion Bird Camp into an early battle with

him.

This was a pretty good opponent!

The wind blew the fine bangs at his forehead. Under the excitement and pleasure of facing a matching opponent, Gongsun Cha's neck turned red.

His consciousness spread like a net.

“Let's start!”

————

Mist Hand Seat?

Zuo Mo didn't have the time to ask further when Ye Ling had started to attack.

Woosh!

A ball of mist exploded within the mo army and grew rapidly. In a flash, it spread out and covered the sky. Thousands of mo soldiers were quickly swallowed by the grey mist and disappeared without a trace.

The grey mist roiled restlessly as though an enormous monster

was moving inside.

Zuo Mo was on his guard. Pu Yao and Wei's reactions right now proved that the enemy was powerful.

But as the battle began, Zuo Mo threw all other thoughts to the back of his head.

He stared at the grey mist as though he was staring at prey. Viciousness shone in Zuo Mo's eyes. Focused on fighting, Zuo Mo did not have any more terror or hesitation.

It might have been the stimulation from Pu Yao and Wei that Zuo Mo's attention was exceedingly focused. The power of the Great Day mo physique was yearning to go inside his body while his ling power and consciousness were circulating on their own.

After cultivating shen power, the connection between the three powers grew closer and moving one would activate and pull everything along.

But Zuo Mo's attention was not on his own body. His attention was focused all behind him!

He seemed to be standing inside a void with two thousand candle flames behind him each was a star.

Every hardship guard was like wisp of candle flame. They pulsed along with the rhythm of his own heart! The two brightest flames

should be Shu Long and A Wen. Zuo Mo seemed thoughtful.

Two thousand candle flames pulsed to the same beat.

The threads of power gathered between them.

Power and killing essence was continuously added. Zuo Mo felt his body was like an inflated balloon filled with dark killing intent and destructive power. They continuously beat against his mind.

“Kill!”

Zuo Mo’s roar carried a thread of pain as he slapped towards the ball of black mist!

“Kill!”

The hardship guards shouted angrily and attacked at the same time!

The black smoke condensed from killing essence gathered at Zuo Mo’s right pal as though it was the rivers flowing into the ocean.

The Day Script on Zuo Mo’s right palm suddenly activated.

It wasn’t the usual blinding golden light but a terrifying dark red!

Day Script Palm!

Woosh-hiss!

The sharp howl sounded in all directions!

The moment the dark red Day Script left Zuo Mo's hand, it furiously pulled at the air and all the ling power within ten li. The air seemed to be dyed with a layer of red and the temperature of the air shot up.

“Day Script Palm! Great Day mo physique!”

Ye Ling was so shocked he almost shouted. Zuo Mo was completely ignorant of mo skills and mo physiques but as a true-blood mo, Ye Ling was familiar with all kinds of famous mo physiques.

When he saw this dark red Day Script , he almost went insane.

The Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation, standing in the position of that mo would standing, people unaffected by the mo grass seed, these all shocked him.

But when he saw this Day Script , he completely turned into chaos.

All Hail The King!

Day Script Palm this this really was the Day Script Palm

Great Day mo physique, ranking second in colonel mo physiques!

Day Scrip Palm, one of the six transformations of the Great Day mo physique!

But wasn't the Great Day mo physique something only mo with the highest of bloodlines could cultivate?

When were even xiuzhe able to cultivate the Great Day mo physique? Was it now fashionable for xiuzhe to cultivate mo physiques?

Who really was the mo here

Wait!

Mo unless the other was mo as well!

Ye Ling was astounded at this daring and crazy idea that popped up. He seemed to be struck by lightning!

Mo!

Yes, the opponent was a mo!

Only mo could cultivate the mo physique. Ye Ling always paid attention to news from the front lines. They had never discovered any xiuzhe that cultivated the mo physique. The only thing similar to the mo physique were the dhyana xiu of the xiuzhe but the two had innate differences.

He was ten thousand percent sure this was the Great Day mo physique, and this Great Day mo physique that had been cultivated to an extremely high level! The cultivation difficulty of the Great Day mo physique was just as famous and terrifying as its ranking among colonel level mo physiques. Its six transformations were even harder to cultivate!

This definitely was not any dhayna technique!

The dark red Day Script pulled at all kinds of energies within ten li!

Even fine black smoke that were like razors were layered by the purest of mo killing essence.

Yes, he had not seen it wrong!

Ye Ling was frightened by his own thinking.

Mo?

A mo that had been lost in xiuzhe territories?

Lost in the xiuzhe world, possessing the highest bloodline, a mo that tried to create a mo army!

Oh, All Hail The King!

Chapter 518 - All Hail The King!

The dark red Day Script howled as it reached him almost instantaneously.

It really was the Day Script Palm!

At such a crucial time, Ye Ling did not feel any fear from being hit but instead felt extremely excited.

Day Script Palm!

Great Day mo physique!

All Hail The King!

His vision sudden became slightly blurred as a daring and insane idea revolved in his mind. He was extremely excited but his strong mind had been tempered through many battles showed in his unwavering spirit. He tightly gritted his teeth and channeled his mo skill to its limits.

The other's skill in the Day Script Palm was very profound but in his view, the other's battle formation was still slightly lacking.

This was his chance, and the only opportunity he could exploit!

Otherwise, with the Great Day mo physique working with the

Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation, his Mist Hand Seat and the Skynet Combat Formation had no chance of victory.

In his view, it was logical that a descendant of a noble mo lineage lost in the xiuzhe world to be lacking in their understanding of mo battle formations.

The cultivation of the mo physique could be reached through talent and mo skills but battle formations could only mature through experience in the military.

The grey mist suddenly shot out many thin chains made from grey mist, like tentacles.

They were sharks that smelt blood and furiously flooded towards the intimidating Day Script!

Pia pia pia!

The grey mist tentacles had not even neared the Day Script when they were crushed by the powerful presence of the Day Script and exploded!

As expected of the legendary Great Day mo physique!

Ye Ling's eyes grew bright within the grey mist. Strangely, there was joy on his face.

The grey mist tentacles shot at the Day Script at an even faster rate. The tentacles were densely packed and seemed endless. Explosions rang out but the number of grey mist tentacles were even more numerous as though there was no end to them.

Pia pia pia!

The grey mist from every destroyed tentacle would be dispersed by the Day Script. Looking from afar, it seemed as the Day Script was continuously consuming the grey mist tentacles!

Ye Ling methodically controlled every strand of grey mist.

He quickly started to show tiredness.

He was filled with shock. He found he had underestimated the other's skill in the Great Day mo physique. This was the deep mo layer, this was definitely the Great Day mo physique at the deep mo layer, only then could it have such domineering power!

A Great Day mo physique in the deep mo layer!

Once this idea came into his mind, he couldn't help but shudder!

Such an outstanding mo. In any of the mo jie, he definitely would be a genius unable to be dismissed!

He was so young, so filled with talent, and had such a limitless

future!

To be able to create a mo army in the xiuzhe world, he must be stubborn and resilient, determined and persistence. He couldn't dare think of the hardships involved!

All Hail The King!

Heavens, are you trying to make it up to your servant for being unable to cultivate the Mist mo physique, by delivering such a great opportunity in front of me?

All of Ye Ling's composure flew away.

However, he had to first deal with what was in front of him!

Ye Ling forced himself to calm down. He was unable to cultivate the Mist mo physique and he could only withstand this attack through the power of the battle formation.

Sharp howls suddenly rang out from within the grey mist.

Countless crescent-shaped mist blades suddenly flew out of the mist like a tsunami. They drew out strange curves in the air and shot at the Day Script that was incoming!

Looking down from the sky, this scene was spectacular.

Like whips, the grey mist tentacles shot out in ruler-straight lines, shooting out like spears. The deep howling as they cut through the air caused people's minds to waver!

Boom boom boom!

But the Day Script was still unstoppable. No matter if it was the grey mist tentacles or the crescent mist blades, they exploded once they got near!

But even so, the attacks continued each like a thunderous rain drop and managed to push back the Day Script!

The grey mist tentacles and the crescent-shaped mist blades were coming increasingly close to the Day Script.

Within the grey mist, every mo soldier was releasing their own attacks at the fastest possible rate. When each attack was released, it would be shrouded in a layer of grey mist. They did not need to control the direction of the attack, they only had to release attacks at the fastest possible rate.

Boom!

A crescent-shaped mist blade heavily struck the Day Script.

The attacks that came after slammed the Day Script like a storm!

The Day Script finally could not stand up and exploded!

All the energies within ten li pulsed along with this huge explosion!

Among the grey mist were sounds of panting. Every mo soldier had a face full of shock.

This was just the first round of the enemy's attack!

Zuo Mo frowned. The other's battle method was very strange. Was this the so-called Mist Hand Seat? However, this Mist Hand Seat was strange but he did not feel it was powerful. He was not so arrogant to think that he could defeat the other in one blow.

He felt his body was full of energy that could not be used up. He was filled with the desire to fight.

Come on, baby!

He shouted inside.

“He hasn't cultivated the Mist mo physique, no wonder he is so weak.” Pu Yao was greatly disappointed. He had felt the other could give Wei a shock but hadn't expected it to be damaged goods. He was full of disappointment.

In a blink, the duo's positions had switched. Wei's pious smile came back on. "Yes, such a pity."

Hearing the exchange between the two, Zuo Mo twisted his lips. The power of the Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation filled every corner of his body. His excitement activated the Great Day mo physique to its limits, his excitement caused him to turn into a battle maniac. He was like a lion with bloodshot eyes that wanted to charge and tear the enemy into pieces.

Come on, baby!

Overexcited, a strange blade that seemed to burn in flame appeared in Zuo Mo's hand!

Vast power flowed through his arm into the Midday Blade in his hand. Woosh, the golden flames suddenly jumped up high. At the same time, the Great Day Banded Flame inside Zuo Mo's body uncontrollably sprouted out.

Shrouded completely in golden flames, Zuo Mo held a blade that was also covered in golden flames!

Zuo Mo was immersed into excitement!

The Midday Blade was raised up high. Behind him, all the hardship guards raised up the mo weapons in their hands. Each mo weapon was shrouded in black mist!

If this strike landed, it could tear apart the sky!

Zuo Mo was like a bloodthirsty lion that stared at the roiling grey mist.

“Sire, please wait a moment!”

Within the mist, a hurried voice suddenly passed out.

Zuo Mo stilled.

A middle-aged person dressed in grey robes walked out of the grey mist. He possessed a pair of grey eyes that looked extremely deep.

He walked along to the front of the formation and bowed to Zuo Mo.

“Sir, I am the commander of this troop. We surrender!”

What! Surrender?

What sort of interjje joke was this?

Zuo Mo felt as though he was having problems with his hearing. Surrender? Hadn't the fight just begun?

The person in front had a respectful expression and was extremely polite. He looked very normal!

Mo military surrendering to xiuzhe?

Was there something wrong with his brain?

The suddenly surrender, or rather, the battle general's polite, respectful and sincere surrender forced every bit of Zuo Mo's burning battle spirit back inside!

"Sir, please allow us to surrender to you. We are willing to swear our allegiance to Daren!" Ye Ling's voice was deep and hoarse, carrying sincerity that even an idiot could detect.

The mo soldiers behind him shifted.

I I I

Forced back, Zuo Mo felt as though something was blocking him from speaking. In reality, he still held the Midday Blade up ready to strike. It was only his thoughts that seemed to be frozen in wax.

"To surrender to someone that cultivates the Great Day mo physique, this is our honor! Please allow us to follow behind Daren, we are willing to burn our lives for Daren to command. Daren's

commands are our honor!”

Ye Ling humbly bowed deeply.

“All Hail The King!”

Hearing the words “Great Day mo physique,” the restless mo army suddenly stilled. Immediately after, uncontrolled joy shone on many of their faces.

Moments later, all the mo soldiers bowed and shouted in unison.

“All Hail The King!”

Everyone behind Zuo Mo was stunned by this scene. Even the mature and composed Shu Long looked on with a dazed stare at the mo army and was unable to make a sound. The lively A Wen’s mouth was gaping. He looked as though he had seen a ghost.

The worst off was Gu Ming Gong. He was in complete chaos as he murmured to himself, “Illusion ... this must be an illusion ... is this a trick? Has Daren sent someone to pretend to be mo? Was this a trick from the start ... this old man ... which mother***ing jie is this ...”

Everyone behind Zuo Mo turned to stone. Even Pu Yao and Wei were almost driven slightly insane by the scene in front of them.

“Are they really mo? When did the mo become this spineless?” Pu Yao looked at Ye Ling as though he wanted to pluck out Ye Ling’s soul and examine it.

“Degeneration! This is degeneration!” Wei howled. He felt discomfort as though he swallowed a fly.

This guy was a neat freak.

But the one feeling the most discomfort was Zuo Mo.

His spirit had never burned like this before, never had such fighting spirit, never had been as impulsive as this

It all stopped and he had to suppress it!

Zuo Mo’s frozen face first turned pale and turn red. Energy flowed up, and his face was so red as though blood could start dripping out at any moment.

Big Bro, you’re messing with me!

A moment later, Zuo Mo could only wail inside helplessly.

But the other’s attitude was sincere, humble, and the tone as well as polite. No matter how suppressed the fighting spirit was, he could not vent it. Face flushed from suppressing it, Zuo Mo could not swallow the breath or breath out. He didn’t manage to say a

word at all.

The exciting battlefield suddenly sank into a strange silence.

Ye Ling's battalion still maintained their bows motionlessly. They were like a group of statues. Not one mo soldier moved.

A light of unusual determination flashed on everyone's face.

Great Day mo physique!

That was the Great Day mo physique of legend!

Only mo that had the most noble bloodlines and unparalleled talent could cultivate this kind of mo physique! This kind of mo possessed the potential to become king!

Every mo soldier seemed to see the great path shining in front of them!

All Hail The King!

Chapter 519 - On The Same Path

Complete silence!

A complete and deathly silence .

Everyone started to recover from the initial shock, especially Shu Long and his group. Even though this incident had occurred so suddenly and was so implausible, it had happened in front of him!

Everyone looked at Zuo Mo. Many people couldn't help but sigh inside—as expected of Daren!

Zuo Mo could not pay attention to them so much. His spirit was suppressed almost to the point of causing an internal injury, it took great effort to calm the energies roiling inside of him.

But as more and more gazes looked at him, he felt he needed to give, oh, display more of the mannerisms of a boss.

He straightened and coughed lightly. In the silence, it was unusually clear. He frightened himself.

Ye Ling and the other's suddenly became alert, their expressions even more respectful.

“I say, this” When Zuo Mo started to speak, the presence of a boss instantly dissipated, “you guys want to pledge allegiance to

me?”

“Yes, Daren!” Ye Ling’s response was clean and crisp.

“Why?” Zuo Mo asked curiously. His question attracted everyone’s attention. Truthfully, no one understood what was going on.

“Daren has the potential to become king,” Ye Ling unhesitatingly replied.

Everyone liked hearing flattery. Zuo Mo was not an exception. He instantly gave a smile. “You have pretty good eyes, you managed to find me when I am hiding so deeply?”

Gu Ming Gong who just recovered suddenly had a strange expression. But when he glanced around and saw the seriousness on Shu Long and the other people’s faces, he intelligently suppressed his impulse to laugh.

Shu Long, A Wen, and the others threw gazes of praise at Ye Ling. As Zuo Mo’s core troop and most loyal subordinates, Guard Camp was completely loyal to Zuo Mo. They originated as xiuzhe slaves. Compared to the old-timers of Vermillion Bird Camp, they were less skilled in the ways of social interaction and did not understand the customs of the xiuzhe world. Their thinking was simpler and even purer.

In their minds, Zuo Mo was the most outstanding, powerful, and

wisest Daren in the world!

Even if Zuo Mo told them to jump into a fire pit, they would jump in together without any hesitation.

In their minds, they only existed for Zuo Mo.

Gu Ming Gong felt Ye Ling was only giving platitudes but Shu Long and the others did not think so. To be able to recognize Daren's strength in such a short amount of time, this guy had pretty good eyes!

Unconsciously, Guard Camp's collective opinion of Ye Ling shot up.

Ye Ling's words caused Zuo Mo to float and feel as though he was an immortal. The incident of almost getting internal injury just now was forgotten immediately.

He grinned to the point his eyes were narrow lines. His face bloomed like a flower. "Potential to become king? Ohoh, tell me, slowly, in detail!"

"Yes! Daren!" Ye Ling thought that Zuo Mo was testing his abilities. He collected his thought with the utmost seriousness before he opened, "Daren is young and has cultivated the Great Day mo physique. In all of the mo world, Daren could be called a genius. Situated in such a dangerous place, Daren was able to create such a powerful army and create such a situation. Daren has

the signs of being a wise leader that can survive these troubled times. Only Daren who is strong, has talent, a resilient personality, and also one with great foresight, might become king!”

Shu Long and the others nodded and exchanged looks. As they communicated through their eyes, they showed expressions of agreement.

Shrunk in the corner, Gu Ming Gong was gaping. As he looked at the smug Zuo Mo, he felt this was impossible. The person speaking was serious, the person being praised was also serious. There was no flattery, no insincerity. It was terribly sincere and honest conversation.

But

The clever Gu Ming Gong opened his mouth a few times, but could not produce a word.

Oh, it was a pity that Eldest Shixiong and Gongsun Shidi were not present ah, he had forgotten, forgotten, he should have recorded it with a jade scroll.

Extremely happy, Zuo Mo instantly felt regret. This was one of those rare chances to grow face. He wanted everyone to see this.

Finally struggling out of his regret, Zuo Mo smacked his lips with lingering hunger and coughed pretentiously. “Oh, alright! However, we need to be low-key, low-key!”

No wonder Daren was able to survive in the xiuzhe world until now and had even amassed such a group. He really understood the way of concealment!

Ye Ling said with sincere reverence, “Yes, Daren!”

Having heard the flattery and having enjoyed it, Zuo Mo felt that leaving like this was not fair. He thought and then said, “Oh, since you have such sincerity, then from today onwards, you are Grey Camp. Shu Long will temporarily lead the camp, you will be the vice commander.”

Ye Ling was overjoyed. “Thank you Daren for bestowing the name!”

“But from today onwards, you have to take note and not reveal your identity as mo,” Zuo Mo reminded Ye Ling.

“Yes!” Ye Ling was full of admiration. Daren was extremely meticulous.

He turned his head and spoke a few words. The entire mo army changed their expressions. The mo that could enter the mo military all was of relatively strong strength and changing appearances were not hard for them. However, the mo sense of beauty was far different than xiuzhe. They preferred more rough and powerful appearances.

Then Ye Long greeted Shu Long.

Shu Long and the others had been xiuzhe slaves and oppressed by xiuzhe for a long time. They did not like xiuzhe but did not have any bad feelings about mo. Ye Ling's words just now had won their good opinion. Shu Long and the others felt as though Ye Ling spoke what they all thought!

A feeling of walking on the same path rose.

Shu Long said solemnly, "I will treat Grey Camp fairly, everyone work hard!"

"Yes!" Ye Ling was full of excitement.

Accidentally recruiting Grey Camp caused Zuo Mo's sneak attack journey to end in a strange manner but in all, he had still accomplished his objectives.

Under the efforts of Guard Camp and Grey Camp, they quickly began setting up a new base at the chaos rift. Compared to the crude base that Ye Ling had, the scale of the new base was astounding.

However, the mo grass sea was still uprooted. This was really too eye-catching.

At this time, Ye Ling suddenly came to find Zuo Mo.

“Daren,” Ye Ling said with hesitation.

“What is it?” Zuo Mo asked.

“Daren, please permit me to persuade Shi Dong Daren to surrender!” Ye Ling gritted his teeth and said with determination.

“Shi Dong?” Zuo Mo stilled and then he reacted. “You mean the other mo army?”

“Yes, Daren,” Ye Ling hurriedly said, “Shi Dong Daren was this subordinate’s previous commander.”

“Oh, tell me about him.” Zuo Mo’s interest was stirred.

“Shi Dong Daren is born from a rare branch of the mantis mo called the Sky Mantis Mo. Shi Dong Daren is the most outstanding battle general this subordinate has ever seen. He is resilient and determent, extremely perceptive in battle. If he was not limited by his birth as a mantis mo, his accomplishments would not be limited to just so!”

“How is he compared to you?” Zuo Mo asked curiously. Ye Ling’s Mist Hand Seat had left him a deep impression.

“This subordinate is inferior,” Ye Ling said seriously, “this subordinate has always served as Shi Dong Daren’s

quartermaster.”

“So that’s how it is” Zuo Mo instantly had the feeling he was making a great profit and hurriedly nodded, “then you can try!”

Ye Ling was overjoyed. “Yes!”

Smoke wafted off Shi Dong’s body. His grand cape was no torn and dirtied, his body covered in wounds of various sizes. He also had a tired expression.

Beside him, there were only half of the organized troops that remained and all of them carried wounds.

Shi Dong had not expected the other to be so powerful! Thinking about these nightmarish days of battle, his heart couldn’t help but shudder.

The enemy battle general was too powerful!

Other than at the beginning when the two were at a standoff, Shi Dong had been forced to watch as the balance of battle slowly tilted towards the enemy.

A slow yet resolute tilt!

He had tried all the solutions he could think of but was still unable to stop the tilt.

The other had suppressed them completely and did not give them any faults to use.

He had never thought he would encounter such a terrifying opponent!

Was this the legendary Xue Dong from Kun Lun? Or Tian Huan's Gongye Xiao Rong?

Wasn't this Cloud Sea Jie? Wasn't this a remote little place that Four Realm Heaven disdained to enter?

How could such a peerless battle general be here?

A golden battle general!

Only a golden battle general could suppress him to the point of hopelessness!

Shi Dong was just a step away from becoming a gold battle general. If it wasn't for his mantis mo bloodline, maybe he would be a gold battle general already. Since a very early point in his life, he had rarely encountered a match for himself. He never lacked confidence when directing battle.

But this time.

Looking at the small groups of three and five sword xiu that were nearby in the sky, he bit down on his lips with a pale face.

Just at this moment, a gasp of shock came from his vice commander.

He suddenly turned around his face with a sword-sharp gaze.

But when he saw the black insect in the vice commander's hand, he suddenly froze.

“A good opponent,” Lil’ Miss’ voice was full of praise.

No one dismissed his words. The hardness of this troop far surpassed their expectations. Even though Vermillion Bird Camp had quickly gotten the advantage, the other still withstood their assault.

Even though they could not stop the rising tide, the collapse in moral that people predicted had not occurred.

Even fighting to now with only half of their battalion left, their morale was still shocking steady. If this was a normal battalion, they would have crumbled long ago.

This kind of enemy was worthy of being respected.

Ever since Lil' Miss created his own core scripture, his consciousness expanded rapidly by the day. His last shortcoming disappeared. Lil' Miss who had been strong to start with, had become extremely terrifying, unusually and abnormally terrifying!

The advancement in skill caused by his increase in consciousness could be seen in this battle. From the moment the battle begun, the rhythm of battle was in his hands.

From beginning to end, he didn't give the enemy on chance. Steadily and unrushed, with a method that was almost suffocating, he pressed on the other's space leaving them no room to maneuver.

However, Lil' Miss still had a high opinion of Shi Dong.

If he hadn't had a breakthrough in his consciousness recently, the other would have been significant trouble for him to defeat. If the battle was fought in those conditions, less than one third of Vermillion Bird Camp would remain, and it wouldn't have been zero fatalities like it was now.

The other reason they had such an advantage was the enemy mo army's level was one lower than Vermillion Bird Camp. The investments that Zuo Mo made on Vermillion Bird Camp without any consideration for the cost finally showed their effects.

Lil' Miss was sure that the other had power that was nearing that of a gold battle general.

Of all of Turtle Island, only Gongsun Cha and Zuo Mo had the power to fight against him. Even Shu Long was lacking in comparison.

It was a pity that Shi Dong encountered Gongsun Lil' Miss. The terrifying Lil' Miss that even the renowned Corps Commander Yu Heng had fallen at the feet of!

Such a hardy opponent, Gongsun Cha sighed emotionally and turned to give the order to attack.

“Prepare to attack, let's finish this battle before sunset.”

Suddenly, Gongsun Cha's gaze stopped. He saw the enemy battle general leave the battle formation alone. The sword xiu at the front quickly flew back and reported to Gongsun Cha.

“Daren, they are surrendering!”

Chapter 520 - The Master Of Cloud Sea

No one had expected that the battle ended in this kind of manner.

When Lil' Miss received Zuo Mo's paper crane, he did not have any hesitation and led his troops directly towards the Cloud Sea Jie's jie river. No one knew that Turtle Island had achieved victory over the mo army. There were large numbers of xiuzhe gathered at the jie river and were preparing to flee Cloud Sea Jie.

When Lil' Miss appeared with the troops, he instantly caused panic in these xiuzhe. Even the xiuzhe that occupied the gathering points on the jie river assumed that Turtle Island had been defeated. In panic, they instantly abandoned their bases to flee Cloud Sea Jie.

Lil' Miss easily took over the bases on the jie river. There wasn't any conflict involved.

Those xiuzhe that had been running away quickly reacted when they saw Lil' Miss take over the gathering places.

Turtle Island had defeated the mo !

As expected, the news of their victory was quickly proven. Everyone was overjoyed!

At this time, control of Cloud Sea Jie landed completely in Zuo Mo's hands.

They had become the true masters of Cloud Sea Jie.

The xiuzhe that had been planning to escape returned to their homes. Without the mo army threat, who was willing to leave their homeland?

Turtle Island's strength astounded everyone!

At this time, which faction did not know of Zuo Mo's ambitions? But the situation had formed and they could not do a thing. Fight? The other could defeat the mo army. Wouldn't killing them be as easy as waving their hand?

The factions that were not willing to be subordinate to Turtle Island left Cloud Sea Jie. However, many families that had deep local roots decided to stay in Cloud Sea Jie.

Unexpected to Zuo Mo and Lil' Miss, the great majority of people decided to stay.

Zuo Mo later learned that most of the people in Cloud Sea Jie did not care who ruled them. Turtle Island's strength was also enough to protect them and for them to feel safe.

With the Sky-Splitting Calamity, war was spreading everywhere. These days, the sound tablet continuously broadcasted areas that had become battlefields, which areas had been turned into a patch of scorched earth, or was filled with mountains of corpses. It

seemed that within the span of one night, the xiuzhe world really entered a troubled era!

In a troubled era, preserving their lives was enough to satisfy most people.

But for Zuo Mo, this was just the beginning. He was extremely busy every day.

The enormous Cloud Sea Jie was the largest piece of territory he had ever controlled. The responsibilities as master of a jie were novel and puzzling for Zuo Mo, an ignorant country bumpkin with unorthodox origins. The complex matters were piled up like mountains and caused him a headache. He did not know where to start.

Out of helplessness, he could only ask Pu Yao and Wei.

“Hm, now you see, I guessed this would happen long ago.” Pu Yao did not reserve his disdain as a scornful smile hung on his face. “This guy is just a country bumpkin. He can manage some business that doesn’t require long term investment. But to be a small time landlord, ha, he doesn’t have the skill!”

Wei did not pay attention to Pu Yao’s disdain. He had a warm and friendly smile on his face. “Did you encounter some trouble?”

Neither of these two were good people!

In all of this, Zuo Mo was clear on this one point. Nothing more needed to be said about Pu Yao. He was an ungenerous person but Wei wasn't much better. He might look harmless and friendly, but his level of danger wasn't any lower than Pu Yao.

He did not respond to Wei.

He had to cause conflict between these two

Zuo Mo's eyes turned and he suddenly asked, "Pu Yao, how is your yao army?"

Pu Yao's expression instantly darkened. The anger in his bloody pupil roiled. Those damned talentless trash, idiots, garbage! Even when he used all his methods, the foundations of these people were too weak and they could not satisfy Pu Yao even now.

"Yao army?" Wei gave an interested smile. No wonder Pu Yao had been absent in this past while. So he had been working on a yao army.

It seemed this guy still held a grudge over him stealing away Guard Camp!

Zuo Mo disregarded Pu Yao's dark expression and said to himself, "No matter how powerful Ten Finger Prison is, it is only the Ten Finger Prison. It cannot solve all training problems."

"Useless words!" Pu Yao's voice was glacial and his expression

was unfriendly. He knew that Zuo Mo was right. Ten Finger Prison was very effective but it also had its limitations. It could not replace true combat. At the beginning, Nan Yue and the others had improved quickly, but recently the effects of lacking combat training had started to show. Their rate of advancement had slowed down.

But damn it, was the great Pu Yao Daren someone this boy could laugh at?

It seemed that it had been too long since the boy was straightened out. This guy was becoming outrageous!

Pu Yao was irritated. Just as he was going to punish Zuo Mo, Zuo Mo suddenly spoke, “I have a good solution.”

“Haha!” Pu Yao seemed to have heard a great joke and roared with laughter. He did not disguise his look full of disdain. “You, the country bumpkin, has a solution! This is too funny!”

Immune to Pu Yao’s disdain since long ago, Zuo Mo’s expression was unconcerned. “You can listen first and then laugh.”

Pu Yao’s laughter suddenly stopped. He stared hard at Zuo Mo and a moment later, he squeezed out between his teeth, “You better have a solution. Otherwise, hee hee!”

Zuo Mo said solemnly, “Many chaos rifts have appeared in the Sky-Splitting Calamity. These chaos rifts have connected the

worlds of yaomo and xiuzhe. It is correct for me to say so.”

“Don’t waste words!” Pu Yao said coldly.

There was a faint smile on Wei’s face. He sat motionlessly and listened carefully.

“The yaomo and xiuzhe territories can be connected through the chaos rifts rather than travelling through Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie like in the past. The distance between the two sides has shortened!”

Just as Pu Yao was running out of patience, Zuo Mo suddenly said, “Maybe we can create a transportation formation and transport Nan Yue and the others over here!”

“Transportation formation?” Pu Yao paused and then had a thoughtful expression. A moment later, he shook his head. “Impossible! We cannot determine their location!”

“You know that some transportation formations are composed of a yin and a yang component. What if we get Nan Yue and the others to set up the yin formation?” Zuo Mo asked in response.

Pu Yao’s eyes suddenly lit up. He was an extremely smart person and instantly understood what Zuo Mo was thinking.

These transportation formations were divided up into yin and yang formations with the two situated in different places. This

way, the two formations could still connect and so there would be a passage. If Nan Yue and the others could set up a yin formation in the yao world, a yang formation set up here, that meant

The chaos rifts formed from the Sky-Splitting Calamity were actually natural transportation formations.

Pu Yao quickly thought of the difficulty involved. He shook his head and said, “The transportation formations are too complex. None of the others understand formations.”

“We have sun seeds,” Zuo Mo said proudly. “The sun seeds can enter the Ten Finger Prison and be taken out. We can engrave the transportation formation onto the sun seed and use the Ten Finger Prison to pass it to Nan Yue. Wouldn’t that work?”

“Hm, this idea is interesting!” Pu Yao stilled and then had a pondering expression. A beat later, he said, “We need to try and find out.”

Zuo Mo’s idea was very daring.

“I can supply sun seeds to you. You can find Gu Ming Gong for the transportation formation. That guy is very clever,” Zuo Mo said generously.

“Hmph!” Pu Yao snorted, he did not respond to Zuo Mo. “You only have to assign the daily affairs of Cloud Sea Jie to those local powers and get them to take care of it. If they do it well, reward

them. If they don't, they get punished. Gather their powerful xiuzhe and make a battalion with your people as the leaders. Adding on your own battalions, who can rebel?"

Zuo Mo slapped his head and understood.

Pu Yao just used a few words and smoothed everything out, pointing straight at the crux of the matter!

Zuo Mo wasn't stupid. He had been bewildered because he never had experience dealing with these matters before. After being guided today, he instantly understood!

He left the sea of consciousness with excitement.

From beginning to end, there was a faint smile on Wei's face. It was unknown what he was thinking.

Shi Dong looked coldly at Ye Ling.

Ye Ling was unaffected. "Does Shi Dong Daren have any questions?"

"What you say is true?" Shi Dong coldly spat out, his hand on the mantis blade at his waist.

“Completely true!” Ye Ling said sincerely. “All of my subordinates saw Daren’s Great Day mo physique. If Shi Dong Daren has any questions, you can ask any one of them.”

Shi Dong’s expression did not change. “His subordinates are xiuzhe!”

“There are xiuzhe!” Ye Ling corrected the mistake in Shi Dong’s words, “Guard Camp, which is the camp that my superior, Shu Long Daren commands, cultivates mo skills. Shi Dong Daren might have heard of the skill, [Hardship Guard]!

“[Hardship Guard!]” Shi Dong’s pupils suddenly contracted. Of course he had heard of this name. This mo skill was something usually cultivated by the guards of mo generals and had an extremely high in reputation.

“Yes, it is the [Hardship Guard] that most mo general’s guards cultivate,” Ye Ling said with a grave expression. “But the [Hardship Guard] that Shu Long Daren and his group cultivate has been modified by a very powerful daren and is based on the Great Day mo physique. It is called [Great Day Hardship Guard]!”

Shi Dong could not stop himself from showing shock.

“A daren that can use the Great Day mo physique to modify [Hardship Guard], could they possibly be xiuzhe?” Ye Ling asked in response.

Shi Dong was silent.

He knew that Ye Ling was correct. Someone that had the ability to use the Great Day mo physique to modify [Hardship Guard] was a powerful elder who definitely had a profound understanding of mo skills. This kind of powerful person would not likely be a xiuzhe. This didn't just mean they couldn't be xiuzhe, they also could not be yao. There was only one possibility, it was a powerful mo, and an unusually powerful mo!

“Cultivates the Great Day mo physique, has created a mo army, and has a mo elder of immeasurable power, I cannot think of an identity for Daren other than mo.” Ye Ling was calm and wise.

Shi Dong was silent for a moment before he asked, “What about those xiuzhe?”

“This is the xiuzhe world! Shi Dong Daren!” Ye Ling reminded Shi Dong. “A purely mo troop cannot survive here. Daren needs xiuzhe!”

Shi Dong gave a bitter smile. He was persuaded.

He sat down dejectedly.

Ye Long looked understandingly at Shi Dong. He said gently, “I know what Shi Dong Daren is feeling. For you, surrendering is hard to accept, but if you look at it from the opposite angle, Shi Dong Daren, isn't this a great opportunity?”

He looked hard at Shi Dong and asked, emphasizing each word, “Shi Dong Daren, how many years has it been since there was a king arose from our Little Savage Jie?”

Shi Dong’s body shook. He raised his head, his gaze as sharp as a knife. “You think he can become king?”

“Maybe, maybe not.” Ye Ling’s tone was indifferent. “But Daren is the mo with the greatest potential to become king that I have ever seen!”

“So you gambled everything?” Shi Dong asked. His tone was filled with disdain.

Ye Ling was unaffected and smiled as usual. “What else do we have? Shi Dong Daren?”

Shi Dong became silent again.

Chapter 521 - Followers

Having solved his problems, Zuo Mo could finally release a breath. He began thinking about finding a water cloud embryo for A Gui.

A Gui's recovery was going well. Even though she was still very wooden, she had more reactions.

“In a few days, we can go to search for water cloud embryo. By that time, you will completely recover!” Zuo Mo was very happy. If they found a water cloud embryo, he could heal A Gui.

Zuo Mo didn't feel any distaste for A Gui's ugly appearance. A slight smile was on his face.

His hand felt a coldness. A cold little hand grabbed his hand.

A Gui was improving by the day. Every time she found Zuo Mo nearby, she would immediately appear next to Zuo Mo. The thing she liked to do the most was hold Zuo Mo's hand.

Zuo Mo allowed her to grip his hand, his other hand rubbing her head. He said with a smile, “When you have healed, Silly Bird and the others will be very happy.”

In the corner, the fat Silly Bird was napping with her eyes closed. She didn't respond.

Looking at the bird nest she created out of A Gui's hair, Zuo Mo couldn't help but roar with laughter.

A Gui still stood silently next to Zuo Mo motionlessly.

————

“Why are you sitting here? Do you have something on your mind?”

Ming Jue Zi's voice came from behind Nan Yue. He walked next to Nan Yue and sat down. In this recent while, everyone was training together. The hellish training and shared hardship had caused their friendships to strengthen.

Just now when cultivating in the Ten Finger Prison, Pu Yao had viciously scolded Nan Yue. When Nan Yue left the Ten Finger Prison, she had ran out alone. Everyone was worried and sent Ming Jue Zi, who was most skilled in communication, to comfort Nan Yue.

“Am I too dumb?” Nan Yue's tone was melancholic. The rims of her eyes were red and her expression was sad. “I'm always unable to met Pu Daren's expectations.”

Even the persistent Nan Yue had been scolded to such a state. Ming Yue Zi was even more afraid of Pu Yao.

“None of us can met Pu Daren's expectations,” Ming Jue Zi

comforted. “It is not that you are not working hard, it is that Pu Daren’s requirements are too high! Really, not even the elites in the top yao art houses can reach what Pu Daren is demanding! It is extremely good that you can do what you have done! Out of all of us, you have improved the quickest!”

Nan Yue’s lips were tightly pressed together and she did not speak.

“Pu Daren might be stern but it is for our sake. Look at our present strength. Compared to before, which one of us hasn’t multiplied in strength?”

As he spoke, Ming Jue Zi compared his past and present strength and found to his shock that he had improved so much without noticing it!

“I miss Daren.” Nan Yue’s voice held a sob. “Daren is never like this.”

Thinking about the time that Zuo Mo had spent teaching her, Nan Yue missed it.

“Yes, I wonder what Daren is busy with?” Ming Jue Zi sighed as well. He gazed into the distance. “However, doesn’t Pu Daren also work with Daren? Everyone is speculating. Pu Daren might be an elder of Daren’s clan. I don’t know what Daren’s lineage is. But for his clan possess such a powerful elder, it might be one of the legendary great families.”

“No matter what Daren’s identity is, I am Daren’s follower! I will forever follow Daren!” Nan Yue’s tone was determined.

“En, same with me.” Ming Jue Zi retracted his cheer and showed a serious expression.

Nan Yue suddenly stood up. Her eyes were still red, but her expression became determined again.

“What is it?” Ming Jue Zi was slightly puzzled.

“I am going to cultivate!” Nan Yue said without turning her head.

“I am Daren’s follower!”

The figure disappeared with the wind as she threw down the strong oath.

————

Gu Ming Gong’s eyes were swollen like two ripe peaches. He had not rested for ten days and nights. Even a jindan could not tolerate working conditions like this! Anyone who saw his figure right now would not be able to recognize him as the grandmaster of forging and sealing, Gu Ming Gong.

He stared at the sun seed in front of him.

The first time he saw the sun seed, Gu Ming Gong had been so excited his body had been trembling. Treasure! Peerless treasure! When he learned that this was the seed produced by the Sun Shen Tree, a pleasure like that of an orgasm had risen in his body.

Oh, heavens!

Sun Shen Tree, the legendary Sun Shen Tree, hadn't it gone extinct a long time ago?

When he learned he would be able to get a few seeds to study, he felt so happy he almost fainted. There was nothing as tempting as legendary materials to a seal xiu skilled in forging.

Then he learned the other person's intentions. They just wanted him to engrave a transportation formation inside the sun seed.

He almost went crazy!

Transportation formation! What he said was a transportation formation! This kind of priceless treasure was being used to make a transportation formation? He almost threw the other out!

He could not tolerate such frightening waste!

However, the other quickly taught him what the outcome of being uncooperative was.

The great Boss personally ran over to persuade him and motivated him in a meaningful tone before leaving. The pitiful Gu Ming Gong was frightened out of his wits. Even though Boss had not mentioned one word of the Soul Setting Divine Light, and did not say what would happen if he did not cooperate, but Gu Ming Gong sank into unprecedented terror.

He didn't dare to slack off in the slightest. So what if it was a waste, he was just the worker

He quickly found that this guy in black clothing, floated around like a ghost all day, was the strictest and most terrifying supervisor in the world.

The situation was also more complex than he had imagined. The sun seed was extremely rare. He had never seen one before, and even the forging records had never mentioned the qualities of the sun seed.

Gu Ming Gong had to start from the beginning.

The sun seed was filled with the domineering sun shenpower. The sun shen power had formed as the Sun Shen Tree grew, and was extremely domineering. Ling power would be consumed by the sun shen power when it was added and it was impossible to carve a formation inside.

He ran to explain to Pu Yao and was verbally slapped and rebuked by Pu Yao.

Pu Yao's viciousness told him that he only needed a result etc etc.

The pitiful Gu Ming Gong had the desire to ram his head into the wall and commit suicide! It was a pity that when one landed in the hands of a demon, one was even unable to seek death.

Gu Ming Gong that was slapped and could only study even more ferociously and try everything he could think of.

“Hahahahahaha! I did it! I did it!”

The insane laughter echoed in the room. Woosh, Pu Yao appeared like a ghost. Without a word, he picked up the sun seed with great carefulness.

To Pu Yao, the sun shen power inside the sun seed was akin to a powerful poison.

Unable to linger, Pu Yao's consciousness retreated. Pu Yao showed joy and then disappeared soundlessly.

The fighting in the Grey Clan's council meeting had not stopped since the meeting started.

Cang Ze was silent in the corner. He didn't have any right to speak in this place. A hint of impatience flashed indiscernibly

through his eyes at the elder's fighting.

He felt those noisy elders had gone senile with age.

Without Daren, would there be the Grey Clan of the present? In the future? In these trouble times, how many of the small clans like the Grey Clan could survive?

Did they still think that this was the safe rear that the fires of war could not reach? Right now, was there still a rear?

Clans without combat capabilities were like a piece of fat meat. No one would hesitate to leap and take a bite.

Pu Daren had been helping everyone train the battalion. The Grey Clan that only thought about protecting themselves were too stupid!

He was Daren's follower!

Cang Ze's spine was straight as he listened expressionlessly to the discussions of the elders.

The Chief Elder noticed Cang Ze's discontentment. His mind shifted and he suddenly spoke, "A Ze, what do you think about moving the clan?"

An elder said discontentedly, "Chief Elder, A Ze is so young, what

does he understand”

A cold light flashed through Chief Elder’s eyes and he interrupted in a grave voice. “Shut your mouth! A Ze is the future clan leader. When you speak, use your mind!”

The elder retreated with a red face.

Chief Elder was extremely authoritative and influential. Cang Ze was the appointed successor to the Grey Clan so everyone’s gaze instantly landed on Cang Ze.

Cang Ze did not shrink back. He did not look at the elders and said directly, “I am Daren’s follower. No matter where Daren goes, I will follow!”

Everyone stilled. They finally recalled the matter that A Ze was Xiao Mo Ge’s follower.

In the yao world, they put great importance on the oath of a follower. Becoming the follower of someone strong was the dream of many people. Not many would easily go back on their word.

Chief Elder also knew the displeasure A Ze was feeling. He said with a smile, “A Ze, continue.”

Cang Ze suddenly swept tall of the elders with his gaze and said gravely, “Elders, are we safe? Is the world safe? Are we strong? Strong enough that no matter what comes, we can protect

ourselves?”

The room was silent.

“We do not have a battalion, we do not have battle generals, even with the [Grey Scar Art] we have no ability to protect ourselves. And then? We will be swallowed by other people, our Grey Clan’s greatest secret, the [Grey Scar Art] will land in the hands of others. Our enemies would not surrender such a good chance!”

Cang Ze stated this cruel reality without any courtesy.

“Will Daren swallow us? Will Daren need our [Grey Scar Art]? Elders, did you forget where this [Grey Scar Art] came from?”

“What is safer than being under the command of a peerless battle general that could defeat Corps Commander Yu Heng?”

“This is an honor!”

Heat flashed through Cang Ze’s eyes.

All of the elders shifted.

After a moment of silence, the Chief Elder did not disguise the praise on his face and said, “I hadn’t expected that our group of old people do not see as clearly as the young one, A Ze.”

Those elders that had been objecting to moving the clan all had shamed expressions.

“Sky-Splitting Calamity The Sky-Splitting Calamity!” Chief Elder’s heavy sigh echoed in the room. “I don’t know how much blood will flow because of this! Everyone, do not dream and be foolishness, troubled times have come!”

Everyone had grave expressions. They digested what Chief Elder was saying.

Chief Elder suddenly stood up. With a serious expression, he said loudly, “In such troubled times, if our Grey Clan is to survive, we need a stronger leader. Due to this, I recommend A Ze as the new clan leader!”

Cang Ze shouted in shock.

Moments later.

“I second this!”

“Seconded!”

“I agree!”

A new era had arrived.

Chapter 522 - Beak Island

When Nan Yue and the others saw Zuo Mo, their expressions were spectacular. Even though they knew that Daren was young, the shock when they saw him with their own eyes far surpassed what they felt in the Ten Finger Prison.

What shocked them even more was that Daren was in the xiuzhe territories! They finally understood why Daren had them change their appearances to look like xiuzhe when they came through the transportation formation.

However, just like Ye Ling, Nan Yue and the others did not have any doubts about Zuo Mo's identity as a yao despite their shock of where they were. A guy that knew all kinds of lost yao arts, successfully completed a prison-breaking battle, and defeated Corps Commander Yu Heng, other than a yao, what could he be?

Xiuzhe? That joke would be so bad

On this point, their thoughts were also the same as Ye Ling. They felt that Daren was definitely a genius from a noble family that was lost in the xiuzhe conquered territories. No wonder no one in the yao world had found Daren!

They finally realized. Daren wasn't in the yao world at all.

Right now, Zuo Mo was truly the master of Clouds Sea Jie in name and power. There were many cloud islands in Cloud Sea Jie and he picked a calm cloud island to settle the Grey Family.

The first day that Nan Yue and the others arrived, Pu Yao immediately started arranging a new training regime for them.

Pu Yao was full of ambition. As one of the top battle generals of the yao world, someone that had once dominated the world, he decided to made Nan Yue and the others in to the best battle generals of the yao world!

He decided to let Wei realize the truth—why Little Wei could only be a gravestone armor, and I, Pu, had been the best battle general once!

The pitiful Nan Yue and others didn't even have the chance to breathe before Pu Yao kicked them into insane training routines. There was a boundary of jinzhi set up around the cloud island. It was a natural demonic training ground.

After Zuo Mo recruited the other powers, Cloud Sea Jie quickly settled down. The ones selected were those with good reputations in Cloud Sea Jie. The only two yuanying that Cloud Sea Jie had seemed to have disappeared from the world after streaking naked in front of the public at the Sun Shen Temple. They hadn't shown up at all when the mo army had invaded this time.

Many people speculated that they had left Cloud Sea Jie long ago. They really had been greatly embarrassed this time. What face did they have to stay in Cloud Sea Jie?

After arranging everything, Zuo Mo decided to enter the Cloud

Sea to search for water cloud embryo.

This time, he did not take many people along. The Cloud Sea depths were not suited for large scale battles.

Their group was made up of a guide, Zuo Mo, Wei Sheng, Zong Ru, A Gui, and the Little Ones. They looked more like a tourist group.

Even though they were few in number, their combat capabilities were amongst the top in Cloud Sea Jie! Zuo Mo, Wei Sheng, and Zong Ru working together might hold up against a yuanying. Zuo Mo had not planned to take A Gui along but Pu Yao told him that it was most effective to consume the water cloud embryo when it was caught so Zuo Mo decided to take A Gui along.

Silly Bird stalked imperiously and proudly beside A Gui and ignored Zuo Mo. Lil' Pagoda and Lil' Fire were cuddled up in A Gui's embrace. Lil' Black held onto A Gui's hair in a death grip. Tenth Grade and Sunshine appeared to be bodyguards and flew around A Gui.

Zuo Mo felt great exasperation.

In terms of shamelessness and wretchedness, the Little Ones that Zuo Mo taught truly learned it all.

Zuo Mo didn't have a solution. In any case, taking one or taking all of them along was the same. He changed his way of thinking,

they were pretty good fighters.

Nothing needed to be said of Silly Bird, she was the strongest of the Little Ones. Even Zuo Mo didn't have a good measure of her abilities. The next strongest was Tenth Grade. He had made trouble for the insects frequently, and his skill had completely changed. Lil' Pagoda was Zuo Mo's soul-tethered talisman. It played everyday and never did anything productive. It could probably only be used when setting up formations. Zuo Mo had not seen Sunshine fight before. Lil' Black's combat abilities were zero but he was a good helper when finding treasure. Lil' Fire could be used to relieve boredom on the road.

Zuo Mo brought along his group and departed.

The guide was called Kang De. He made a living by hunting water cloud embryos and was very familiar with the depths of the Cloud Sea.

According to Kang De's plans, they first needed to fly to a place called Beak Island and then descend into the Cloud Sea from there. Beak Island was a very famous Cloud Sea port in Cloud Sea Jie. The depths of the Cloud Sea were filled with all kinds of dangers. If one tried entering from a random spot, they frequently did not return.

Beak Island had been used as an entrance to the Cloud Sea for a very long time. That part of the Cloud Sea was very safe and there were no strong beings.

The distance between Turtle Island and Beak Island was

extremely far and there were many parts of the trip that did not have transportation formations. Fully prepared, Zuo Mo had taken along the Black Turtle which saved them the pain of having to flying long distances.

Wei Sheng, and Zong Ru were in seclusion everyday. Zuo Mo played with the Little Ones every day and when he had the spare time, he would slowly study the golden leaf he obtained from the Sun Shen Tribe.

He didn't know what secret method had been used to make this golden leaf. The content on it was extremely rich but because it was from the ancient era, there were many areas that were very hard to understand. Zuo Mo's attitude was very good. He was not impatient and only studied it occasionally. Other than the methods to cultivate shen power, he was also interested in the ancient secrets.

For example, he found out from the golden leaf that in the ancient era Cloud Sea Jie had been barren and there were no other tribes living here. This was probably the reason that this shen temple had managed to survive.

What stirred Zuo Mo's interest was that the golden leaf hinted that the shen temple had been searching for something constantly in Cloud Sea Jie but never found it. Zuo Mo finally understood and some of his own questions were resolved.

Big Brother Qin Ling had once said that the level of this shen temple was not ranked low within the Sun Tribe. Shouldn't such a high-ranking shen temple be constructed in a large and populated

area? Why did they build it in the remote and barren Cloud Sea Jie?

But the golden leaf did not mention what they were searching for. However, it was certain that they did not find it because the tone of the records was slightly regretful

Zuo Mo never stopped cultivating his shen power but his progress was extremely slow. It was much harder to cultivate shen power compared to the three powers. Fortunately, Zuo Mo was not in a hurry. The only thing that made him slightly dejected was that after the three powers equalized and his ling power had increased, but he was still a thread away from jindan.

If he could break through to jindan, his power would multiple in the span of one night!

His shen power would increase as well, and enter a new realm!

However, Zuo Mo was very content at this time. Shen power, Soul Setting Divine Light, Great Day mo physique, and the Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art, which of these was not powerful and unique? He was able to learn all these, what could he be discontent about?

A person could not be so greedy. Zuo Mo was idle and satisfied.

Half a month later, they finally reached Beak Island.

Zuo Mo looked at the large numbers of xiuzhe on Beak Island and was slightly shocked. “So many people?”

Kang De explained, “This is the best time to search for water cloud embryos and is also when Beak Island is most popular. Whether the yearly harvest is good or not depends on your luck during this time.

“These people are all searching for water cloud embryos?” Zuo Mo was so shocked his chin was almost on the ground.

“The great majority are. The Cloud Sea has other products but this period of time it is most profitable to hunt water cloud embryo.” Kang De was clearly very familiar with the present situation.

“High demand, low supply, wouldn’t it be difficult for us?” Zuo Mo frowned slightly.

Kang De shook his head. “How can it be so easy to capture a water cloud embryo? Island Master, do not worry. You see many people, but the number that will gain something will be very small. They are also not very strong and cannot go deep into the Cloud Sea. The best quality water cloud embryos are deep in the Cloud Sea.”

Zuo Mo’s heart was slightly reassured.

Zuo Mo’s group had changed their appearances so no one

recognized them. But Lil' Pagoda and the others attracted the attention of these xiuzhe. The heat and greed in their eyes caused Zuo Mo to frown slightly.

“Brother, are you selling this fire ling beast? We can negotiate the price!” An eagle-nosed man came over. From nearby, his compatriots looked over.

Lil' Fire jumped in fright and burrowed into A Gui's arms.

Lil' Fire's intelligent response caused this eagle-nosed male's gaze to heat up.

“No.” Zuo Mo's face darkened as he walked ahead.

“Hey, don't go.” The eagle-nosed male blocked Zuo Mo and said with a smile, “This little brother really wants it and is definitely sincere. Brother, give a price, we can negotiate!”

Kang De suddenly spoke, “He Family Brothers, my daren has said we are not selling, do not keep bothering us.”

The eagle-nosed male's eyes narrowed slightly and flashed, “Someone that can identify of this one's origins should be someone familiar. I, He Wei's eyes are stupid. Sir, who are you?”

Kang De smirked coldly, “Don't bother trying to find out my identity. Let me advise you, be good. Otherwise, humph, none of your brothers will be able to escape.”

This was slightly troublesome.

He Wei's heart shook. Someone that could identify his origins was definitely someone familiar! The other's tone was so harsh he clearly had a powerful background and didn't need to consider him.

He Wei was experienced and knew when to bow. He smiled and said, "Brother, what are you saying, this little brother came up to ask, and does not have malicious intentions."

He perceptively stepped out of the way.

He watched as Zuo Mo's group left and thought hard, who was this?

His brothers quickly came over. "How is it? Are they not selling?"

"No," He Wei's expression was solemn, "and one of them recognizes us. It definitely is someone familiar but they have changed their appearance.

"Who cares, just steal it. That fire ling beast is definitely very high grade. If we can get it, Second Brother, your strength will multiply!" one of the people said nonchalantly.

“This group’s origins are not simple, if they are not rich, they are powerful!” He Wei thought back to the meeting and felt the other was calm and clearly did not think highly of them. He shook his head and said, “This group might be from a large faction. Let’s not cause trouble.”

The other people all had unconcerned expressions.

The geography of Beak Island was extremely unique. It appeared as though a bird was opening its mouth facing the sky. The entrance to the Cloud Sea was where the mouth was open.

There was almost no cloud mist at the entrance. Looking down, it was possible to see an endless path that disappeared into the Cloud Sea.

Beak Island was actually a mountain peak that had a section above the Cloud Sea.

“Daren, let’s go down.”

Kang De said respectfully.

Chapter 523 - Xuan Kong Temple

Zuo Mo and the others did not pay attention to the He Brothers. Even Kang De did not keep them in mind. Beside him was the true master of Cloud Sea Jie. People like the He Brothers were not worth a mention.

As they descended into the Cloud Sea, the light gradually dimmed. The thick Cloud Sea blocked most of the sunlight but this was not as dark as Zuo Mo had imagined. There were many cloud grasses floating in the cloud layers and each released faint light that illuminated the world below the Cloud Sea.

Kang De saw Zuo Mo and the others curiously examining the cloud grasses and hurriedly explained, “This place is a great producer of cloud grasses. The quality is very good, and occasionally, merchants from the outside will come and buy them. However, this is worthless locally.”

“What is the use for this?” Zuo Mo asked curiously.

It was the first time he saw cloud grasses. These cloud grasses were shaped like sea grasses, the blades had the thickness of a pinky, completely white, and would release faint light. The individual bushes were about the size of a basket, and it was possible to occasionally see enormous ones that were multiple zhang in area.

“They can be used to forge water element ling dan, but only first grade,” Kang De said. “Those that aren’t strong wouldn’t dare to

come down. Those that are strong do not care about these cloud grasses. These cloud grasses reproduce extremely quickly and can be found everywhere.”

Zuo Mo understood.

Everyone walked down. This mountain path was misty but the mist was thin.

“Under the Cloud Sea, what is most common is all kinds of cloud beasts. There are many people that come to hunt cloud beasts. Cloud beasts are water-oriented, and many people like them. But to get high-grade ones, they need to go deep into the Cloud Sea.”

Zuo Mo asked curiously, “What qualities of the cloud beasts are outstanding?”

“Being of the water element, their most powerful ability is their illusory spells. Since their body is formed from cloud mist, unless one encounters fire spells, other spells cannot inflict major damage.” Kang De was clearly familiar with this area and his words flowed without needing to think.

“How long has Old Kang been here?” Wei Sheng asked Kang De.

Kang De couldn't help but sigh. “More than a decade. Actually, there are several other entrances to the Cloud Sea other than this one, but this is the most famous one. Consequently, this place has the most xiuzhe making a living here.”

Wei Sheng smiled. He had endured poverty before but his heart was dedicated to the sword. The hardships of life did not leave any mark behind and he naturally did not feel anything. Zuo Mo couldn't help but think back to his time at Wu Kong Mountain when he fought everyday for each piece of jingshi. He instantly felt sympathy.

Seeing Kang De's expression was slightly heavy, Zuo Mo hurriedly changed the topic. He said with a smile, "Those who have not come down definitely could not imagine that the scenery down here is very good!"

The faint cloud mist was like silk. The cloud grasses floating in the Cloud Sea slowly swayed with the Cloud Sea.

"Haha, Daren has good taste. But the scenery later will be even better!" Kang De laughed openly.

As Kang De said, the scenery below was even more beautiful.

After walking for four whole hours, their field of view suddenly broadened. They had passed through the thick Cloud Sea!

The thick Cloud Sea slowly rippled above their heads and countless cloud grasses drooped down from the Cloud Sea. These cloud grasses were extremely large, all of them multiple mu in area. The blades that dangled down were dozens of zhang in length. Looking from afar, the Cloud Sea was a curved ceiling, and the drooping cloud grasses were like densely packed waterfalls of

light. The scenery was spectacular and endless!

“It’s so beautiful!” Zuo Mo was astounded.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were also shocked by the spectacular scene in front of them. Lil’ Pagoda and the others instantly became excited and flew around A Gui. Lil’ Fire was so excited it started to chirp.

Kang De smiled slightly. He was used to the scene in front of him and had become habituated to it a long time ago.

The xiuzhe that walked past them all smiled. Every greenhorn that entered the deep of the Cloud Sea for the first time would have this expression.

There was a constant flow of xiuzhe passing by. Everyone hoped to get something early. The price of the first batch of cloud beasts and water cloud embryo was usually the highest of the year.

At this time, Zong Ru whose eyes had been closed all this time suddenly made a sound and turned his head slightly.

Several dhyana xiu attracted his attention. The leader was one wearing purple dhyana robes. He had white brows and hair, and had an extraordinary mannerism. Behind him were three dhyana xiu in blue robes who were all very young.

These dhyana xiu also noticed Zong Ru. The purple-robed

dhyana xiu's eyes flashed. He did not speak but his palms came together as he bowed towards Zong Ru.

Zong Ru's eyes were still closed but a warm smile came onto his face. He also returned the greeting with his palms together.

Noticing Zong Ru's action, Wei Sheng looked over.

The other also noticed Wei Sheng. A thread of shock flashed across the purple-robed dhyana xiu again but his expression did not change. With a harmonious air, he bowed towards Wei Sheng.

Wei Sheng did not speak and bowed slightly in acknowledgment.

From beginning to end, the two sides did not speak, but a strange exchange had occurred between the two sides.

Only when the other had gone far away did Zong Ru and Wei Sheng take their eyes away.

"These people are not simple," Wei Sheng said in a deep voice. "The dhyana xiu in purple robes is very powerful, and possibly a yuanying. Even if he isn't, he isn't far from becoming one."

Zong Ru nodded and agreed, "They should be from one of the great temples. We can ask Yi Zheng. He should know."

Zuo Mo who had been wandering in his thoughts finally focused.

Seeing the two acting as though they were facing a great enemy, he couldn't help but inquire. The two narrated what just occurred. Zuo Mo thought and then decided to go ask Yi Zheng.

Kang De hadn't planned on talking but he still couldn't help but say, "Daren the Cloud Sea is thick. Paper cranes and normal flying swords cannot be used here, and cannot deliver messages to the outside."

Zuo Mo waved his hand and said, "No worries, I have my ways."

Zong Ru casted a small illusory spell which projected the appearances of the dhyana xiu. Zuo Mo memorized it and then entered the sea of consciousness. Ha, other people could not use paper cranes but he could go through Pu Yao and pass the message out.

But he hadn't expected Pu Yao to snort when he saw the people and said, "There's no need to ask other people, I know their origins."

Zuo Mo said suspiciously, "You know?"

Pu Yao smirked coldly, "We fought so long in the past, it's impossible for me not to recognize them. They are baldies from Xuan Kong Temple. Ha, you better be careful."

"Xuan Kong Temple?" Zuo Mo almost shouted.

The biggest powers in the xiuzhe world were the four realms, Kun Lun, Tian Huan, Xi Xuan, and Xuan Kong.

Xuan Kong Realm was the holy land of the dhyana xiu, and the gathering place of all the famed temples in the world. Xuan Kong Temple was also the leader of all the temples in the world! Yi Zheng's Great Buddha Temple might also be one of the ten great temples, but compared to Xuan Kong Temple, there were not in the same class.

“You better not encounter the baldies of Xuan Kong Temple. Otherwise, hee hee” The bloody sea of Pu Yao's red eye roiled.

Zuo Mo was frightened by Pu Yao's vicious expression. He hadn't seen Pu Yao act like this when it was Kun Lun. “Are they more powerful than Kun Lun?”

“More powerful than Kun Lun? Not that powerful,” Pu Yao said coldly, “Kun Lun is the top in fighting power, but none are more powerful than the baldies in dragging people down. The baldies are mother***ing fanatics that do not fear death. There was one battle in the past when the baldies wanted to exterminate us ‘evil’ yaomo and sixty yuanying committed suicide by exploding! If it wasn't laozi that noticed something was wrong, we would have fell for it, and been blasted to pieces.”

“Exploded six sixty yuanying” Zuo Mo stammered. He was unable to talk smoothly. This secret piece of information was so shocking he lost the ability to think. Sixty yuanying, sixty yuanying collectively exploding themselves. How crazy would they have to be to do that?

One yuanying from Tian Huan was enough to cause chaos in Cloud Sea Jie , sixty yuanying

When Zuo Mo came out of the sea of consciousness, Zong Ru and Wei Sheng looked at him. They had noticed Zuo Mo's terrible expression long ago.

Zuo Mo opened his eyes and said in a dry voice, "They are from Xuan Kong Temple."

"Xuan Kong Temple?"

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru inhaled sharply. Kang De's expression instantly turned ashen.

Xuan Kong Temple! The leader of all dhyana xiu, one of the four great sects in the world!

"Why have they come here?" Wei Sheng's sword heart was like stone and he quickly calmed down.

Zong Ru's Samadhi was also extremely high. His mind shook and then he recovered his calmness.

Zuo Mo also recovered his calm. So what if it was Xuan Kong Temple? Hadn't he managed to trick the elder from Tian Huan? He had been frightened by the simultaneous suicide explosion of sixty

yuanying that Pu Yao had mentioned.

He turned around his thinking. He was just a little character. They wouldn't give him such a grand treatment.

He suddenly thought of something. He had to tell Guard Camp, Grey Camp, Nan Yue and the others to not show themselves in the short term. If the group of fanatics really caught them, they would definitely try to exterminate and kill yaomo.

Pu Yao was extremely dissatisfied with this action of retreating but he also knew there was no chance of victory if he had Zuo Mo face Xuan Kong Temple at this time.

Wei held a slight smile as he watched Pu Yao and Zuo Mo fight. But from any angle, it seemed that he was laughing at Pu Yao.

After sending out the orders, Zuo Mo saw the terror in Kang De's eyes and his ashen complexion. He hurriedly comforted. "Let's go, don't bother with them. The Cloud Sea is so large, and everyone has their own aims. We won't encounter them."

Kang De's complexion finally improved. He felt that the words were right. He knew just how large the Cloud Sea was. How likely would it be that they encountered each other and competed over the same item?"

However, after this incident, Zuo Mo lost all of his interest. The beautiful and vast scenery instantly became tasteless.

“The Cloud Sea is endless and there are many paths. If it is someone who is unfamiliar, they would definitely get lost.” The cloud over Kang De’s mind gradually dissipated. Even though everyone was coming down from Beak Island but the possibility of encountering each other was pitifully small.

Zuo Mo swept the surroundings and suddenly asked, “Why is no one flying?”

Kang De hurriedly explained, “The Cloud Sea is different than other places. It is best not to fly in here. The ling power vibrations can easily attract the attention of many cloud beasts that hide in the cloud layer. At the beginning, many people thought they were powerful and just charged recklessly through but they never came out in the end. After such a long time, no one dared to fly in there.”

“So that’s why!” Zuo Mo finally understood.

Fortunately, everyone was of deep cultivation. Walking was not a problem.

After walking down for several hours, the cloud layer above their heads that was filled with cloud grasses became further away. Some cloud mist appeared along the road. The cloud mist was extremely unique. It was gathered and did not dissipate. Even when the wind blew past, it did not move at all.

Little paths flickered in and out of view between the cloud mists

as though there were complex spider-webs spreading into the cloud mist.

Chapter 524 - Omen

Looking at the little path that was leading into the Cloud Sea, Zuo Mo released a breath for some unknown reason. Truthfully, the suddenly appearance of the Xuan Kong Temple's dhyana xiu gave him enormous pressure. Anything that could attract Xu Kong Temple's dhyana xiu was not going to be anything normal. Zuo Mo wasn't interested at all. He just didn't want anything to happen as he tried to heal A Gui.

“There are so many divergent paths, you know all of them?” Zuo Mo asked Kang De in curiosity. There were hundred of these little paths that criss-crossed and confused the eyes.

“Daren don't worry, this subordinate has been hunting here for over a decade and won't walk wrong even with the my eyes closed,” Kang De said proudly. He then introduced, “These little paths might look complex, but if one goes through a few times, they can learn them. Starting from here, we will enter the true Cloud Sea. The cloud mist here is not thick, the deeper we go down, the thicker it becomes.”

Kang De led the group at the front.

They walked onto a curved little path and quickly disappeared in the Cloud Sea.

“Shishu, are those people suspicious?” Ming Jing asked

probingly. Of the three young disciples, his mind was the nimblest and he noticed Shishu's abnormalness.

Pu Yao was correct, these people were dhyana xiu from Xuan Kong Temple. The white-browed purple robed dhyana xiu was called Ding Zhen, and the disciples in blue robes were third-generation disciples. Ding Zhen had come out with these disciples for them to gain experience. Along the way, they had received a message from the sect leader and turned to Cloud Sea Jie.

Ding Zhen nodded, "That dhyana xiu is from an unknown sect, he actually possesses wish power, it really is rare."

"Wish power?"

The three disciples stammered, their face filled with belief. The dhyana xiu that they had seen didn't appear much older than them. He also did not look special.

Wish power was one of the rarest powers of all the dhyana xiu powers. The three of them were among the top ranks of the young disciples of Xuan Kong Temple and naturally knew what wish power meant.

The number of people Xuan Kong Temple, the greatest temple in the world, who possessed wish power could be counted on the fingers.

"There are always better people, the world outside is filled with

hidden dragons and crouching tigers.” Ding Zhen glanced at the trio. “Also, that sword xiu’s sword essence is so pure and condense that I have only seen such a thing before on a few Kun Lun disciples. If you encounter him, do not be careless.”

The other disciple reacted the quickest. “Shishu, could they be disciples from Kun Lun?”

“Not Kun Lun.” Ding Zhen shook his head, “The sword essence of Kun Lun does not feel like this.”

The expressions of the three disciples relaxed. It was good that it was not Kun Lun. Kun Lun had dominated the top position of the Four Realm Heaven for thousands of years. Even disciples of Xuan Kong Temple were not willing to encounter Kun Lung disciples. The four great sects fought openly and in the shadows, but there were rarely any direct conflicts. All of them were colossal beings. If fighting really started, it could not easily end.

As long as those were not disciples of the other three sects, they didn’t feel the need for any consideration. The enemies they were wary of and would treat equally were only disciples of the four great sects, people that were on the same level as themselves.

Seeing the unconcerned expression on the faces of the three disciples, Ding Zhen shook his head inside. But when he recalled how he had been similarly proud when he was young, he smiled and let it pass.

The disciples of Xuan Kong Temple had the right to be proud.

Along the way, Kang De chatted about all the strange tales and rumors of the Cloud Sea. His oratory skills were not good but he was very experienced and knew many details. Zuo Mo's group listened attentively.

This trip took a day and night before the cloud mist started to become thick enough to obscure their vision. The pure white mist that seemed like cotton almost filled all of their vision. Little paths flickered in and out of the view in this cloud mist. If they were not careful and wandered off into the cloud mist, they would lose their direction. Then it would really be dangerous.

Zuo Mo curiously examined the cloud mist floating in the air. These cloud mist were in the air but they did not float everywhere. These little paths were very fine but there wasn't any mist on the path.

Zuo Mo asked Kang De about this.

Kang De scratched his head. "Daren, this subordinate has never thought about this. This subordinate has been here for over a decade. Even though the cloud mists will change annually, but these little paths rarely change."

"Would there be any dangers here?" Zuo Mo asked.

“There are rarely any dangers in this area. Xiuzhe frequently come through here so cloud beasts and other things have been cleaned out,” Kang De said.

As Kang De finished speaking, Zong Ru who was walking in the rear of the group, with his eyes closed, suddenly made a sound and stopped walking.

A cold light flashed through Zuo Mo and Wei Sheng’s eyes. They instantly stopped moving and held themselves warily.

Kang De was extremely confused.

“Something is nearing us,” Zong Ru said in a low voice.

Zong Ru’s Samadhi deepened and his sixth sense was extremely sensitive. Unless Zuo Mo expanded his consciousness, he was not a match for Zong Ru. However, Zuo Mo and Wei Sheng were powerful people. At almost the same moment Zong Ru spoke, they had also detected danger!

Wei Sheng held his black sword in his hand. Zuo Mo’s shen power turned into the three powers and was held in waiting.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Several white mist arrows suddenly shot out of the cloud mist with tearing sounds.

Zuo Mo's movement were extremely rapid. His consciousness shifted and several [Ice Mirrors] were cast. Ever since he listened to Kang De speak about the unique qualities of the cloud beasts hears, Zuo Mo felt that yao arts were more suited to the Cloud Sea.

[Ice Mirror] was a kind of little yao art. When Zuo Mo used it, it was so fast people could not catch it.

Bam bam bam!

The ice mirrors shattered and a cold energy spread in the air.

Several white shadows that charged out of the cloud mist instantly froze as their bodies entered the cold energy.

Inside the cold energy were three cloud beasts that were shaped like squirrels. Their body was frozen by the cold energy into ice, and they still maintained their charging position.

They were transparent and glowed like ice statues. Their faint blue eyes were beautiful.

Bam bam bam!

They crashed onto the ground and instantly shattered into a pile of ice.

The ice quickly melted into water, and then dissipated into cloud mist to disappear.

“Cloud mice!” Kang De’s expression was shocked as he murmured to himself, “No! No! How can there be cloud mice here?”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo’s brow furrowed. “You are saying these things should not appear here?”

Kang De refocused and hurriedly said, “Yes Daren! Cloud mice are very sensitive to the movements of xiuzhe, and usually live deep in the Cloud Sea where there are no people. Also”

He halted.

“Also what?” Zuo Mo asked in a deep voice.

“Cloud mice would rarely attack xiuzhe proactively.” Kang De’s expression was not well. “Cloud mice are very gentle and their temperament makes them suited to be pets. Female xiuzhe often like them. It is the first time that this subordinate has seen cloud mice attack xiuzhe unprovoked.”

“State your point!” Zuo Mo saw Kang De’s hesitating and his face darkened.

Kang De gritted his teeth and stated his speculation, “This subordinate thinks that something might have happened deep in

the Cloud Sea so these cloud mice are acting”

“I understand. We will be careful and take precautions for our safety.” Zuo Mo understood what Kang De meant but he was definitely unwilling to go back like this.

Before departing, he had made the decision to find a water cloud embryo.

This matter did not just concern A Gui, but also his birth and origins. He had a strong feeling that the relationship between he and A Gui was definitely not simple!

Zuo Mo had prepared fully for this trip. He had asked Gu Ming Gong for several transportation seals and he was not afraid of encountering danger.

Seeing Zuo Mo’s determined attitude, Kang De could not do a thing. The other person was his boss.

“Shishu, something’s not right.” Ming Jing’s expression was not well. They had encountered several waves of attack. He felt a thread of uncertainty. Ming Jing had come to the Cloud Sea to hunt cloud beasts before and was not unfamiliar with this place. The unusual situation was clearly a sign of something wrong.

“What is not right?” Ding Zhen asked.

“This disciple has come to the Cloud Sea before. These cloud mice are fearful of people and would never attack xiuzhe first. Right now, they are so restless, this disciples suspects that something under has changed,” Ming Jing carefully responded.

“A change?” A light suddenly flashed through Ding Jing’s indifferent eyes. He seemed slightly excited as he looked towards the depths of the Cloud Sea.

Ming Jing jumped in fright at Ding Jing Shishu’s burning gaze. It was the first time he saw such a gaze from the composed and indifferent Ding Zhen Shishu. Was there

His mind suddenly shifted as he recalled Ding Zhen Shishu having received a message from the sect leader in the middle of their journey. Ding Zhen Shishu immediately had hurried to Cloud Sea Jie by travelling day and night.

Was there something that the sect leaders cared about that was hiding in the depths of the Cloud Sea?

Ding Zhen glanced at Ming Jing. Ming Jing’s heart jumped. Shishu’s gaze was as sharp as a sword and seemed to pierce to the bottom of his heart.

“Let’s go.” Ding Zhen’s expression became aloof again as he started to walk deeper into the Cloud Sea.

Li Shu's mood was terrible.

The mission of the Sun Shen Temple had failed. Even though the sect leader did not punish him, but thinking about what he had lost, there seemed to be a fire burning inside of him.

The invasion of the mo army and the news that Turtle Island had instantly taken over all of Cloud Sea Jie had also arrived in his ears.

Turtle Island's power shocked him again. To be able to win against a mo army, even a normal mo army, Turtle Island was more powerful than they appeared.

They had disguised themselves so well that he had not discovered their true strength!

It was a pity that the sect had no interest in Cloud Sea Jie after the Sun Shen Temple. Chaos rifts were continuously appearing in the jies governed by Tian Huan. Several small-scale yaomo battalions had been discovered in several jie, and the strength the sect had to spare for minor endeavors had instantly become limited.

This was to the point that the number of battalions sent to the front lines had dramatically decreased. If their homeland was invaded by the yaomo, there would not be any value in guarding

the front line.

Jingshi, materials, ling grains, and etc. Every kind of resource supply was having problems. These were all major problems.

Elder Shen was sent to the front lines and Li Shu received orders to go to a place called Tong Yu Jie to assist the local battalion because they had discovered a small yaomo battalion there.

Tong Yu Jie was the producer of the ling jade which was important to Tian Huan. Ling jade was a very important raw material for forging seals. The importance of Tong Yu Jie to Tian Huan did not need to be said.

In comparison, the remote Cloud Sea Jie that did not produce anything significant and wasn't worth a mention.

The Sky-Splitting Calamity had come without any warning and caused every sect to descend into chaos, and their responses disorganized.

No matter how much Shen Wu Hai and Li Shu wanted to settle their debts, the order had come down and they could only obediently accept the missions.

But, he really was not content

Chapter 525 - Cloud Crystal Mist Flow

In the seven days and nights they advanced through the mist, the coldness inside the cloud mist increased. Everyone had to channeling power to withstand the cold energy. Zuo Mo and the others finally understood why only those jindan and above dared to enter the deepest reaches of the Cloud Sea. This coldness alone was not something those below jindan could withstand.

Zuo Mo had the Great Day Banded Flame and the precious treasure of the Sun Crystal Seed. The coldness did not affect him at all. What shocked him was that the Little Ones, each played happily and were extremely lively. Even Lil' Fire whom he had thought would not be able to persist didn't seem uncomfortable at all in the coldness.

They occasionally encountered some cloud beasts along the way, but fortunately, they did not encounter cloud beasts that were two powerful.

Kang De's expression was full of worry. The abnormality of the Cloud Sea caused him to feel extremely unsafe.

"Daren, the cloud river is up ahead," Kang De's expression lightened. "Past the cloud river, we can find water cloud embryos."

This sentence caused morale to rise and the group accelerated forward.

Soon later, a large river appeared in their field of view, but when

their eyes landed on the cloud river, they all stilled.

Kang De suddenly became overjoyed and exclaimed, “Cloud Crystal Mist Flow! How can there be Cloud Crystal Mist Flow at this season?”

There wasn’t any cloud mist on the surface of the river yet what was flowing inside the river was not river water, but densely packed ice crystals. These ice crystals were each the size of an egg and were rhomboid. It was clear and transparent, and there was a small ball of cloud mist which slowly flowed inside each rhombus.

When the wide river surface that was tens of li in expanse were filled with this kind of ice crystal, countless rays of lights reflected and was dazzling.

Zuo Mo raised his hand and an ice crystal flew into Zuo Mo’s hand. Strangely, once the ice crystal left the river, it quickly melted into a thread of cloud mist that disappeared into the air.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru had never seen this before and tried to grab the ice crystals as well.

Wei Sheng made a light sound of surprise. “Such heavy coldness!”

Kang De said with a smile, “The cloud mist would condense into a flow of water and gather in the cloud river. Every decade, a cold flow would come. When the coldness invaded the cloud river, it

would form the Cloud Crystal Mist Flow. The little ball of cloud mist inside these ice crystals are the purest of cloud essence and is something great for forging! Every time the Cloud Crystal Mist Flow appears, there would be troops of xiuzhe that come here to harvest the cloud essence! We are very fortunate to encounter this!”

Zuo Mo found that many xiuzhe had appeared on the shores of the river. Each person’s face was full of joy as they used all the talismans they had to gather cloud essence.

Kang De took out a jade bottle and started to carefully gather cloud essence.

Zuo Mo snickered and said, “We cannot enter a treasure mountain and leave empty-handed!”

Finishing saying this, hundreds of jade bottles and boxes appeared in front of him.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru also started to harvest.

If cloud essence was forged into flying swords, the flying sword would become more nimble and quick. Wei Sheng threw the black sword into the air. The black sword hummed lightly and then suddenly produced a strong suction. Like a whale, it sucked in ice crystals. When the ice crystals left the river, they quickly melted and then the thread of cloud essence was sucked into the black sword before it could dissipate.

Zong Ru activated his Attainment Golden Body. When the enormous golden figure appeared, a faint and authoritative dhyana presence spread. A blurry bottle suddenly appeared in one of the hands of the mountainous golden body. The mouth of the bottle was pointed towards the river and countless ice crystals flowed into the bottle like birds returning to their nest.

In comparison to the other two, Zuo Mo was lacking. Even though his efficiency was high and he filled up all of his jade boxes and bottles, he still was not satisfied.

His eyes turned and then he suddenly thought of the [Yin Fire Bead Chapter]. Didn't this cloud essence belong to the yin? He then tried to cast the spell of the yin bead and motioned at the cloud river.

Bam!

Hundreds of ice crystals in the river suddenly exploded. The threads of cloud essence were like a barrage of rain that shot into Zuo Mo's hands and gathered into a thumb-sized bead. This bead was round and glowing as though it was carved out of crystal. What was most marvelous was that there was a faint cloudy mist floating around it that made it very beautiful.

Zuo Mo saw that this method was workable and he laughed. He became even more motivated.

Lil' Pagoda laboriously flapped its eaves to absorb cloud essence. In Zuo Mo's eyes, the xiuzhe that had forged Lil' Pagoda's was

creative, but his method had been very primitive and crude. The reason that Lil' Pagoda was able to reach this level was completely through relying on piles of talismans and rare materials.

Gold, wood, water, fire, earth were the five levels of the pagoda. Zuo Mo had put the sixth-grade Jade Hook Tree on the wood level and Zuo Mo's unique Great Day Banded Flame was on the fire level. The gold level was filled with vast amounts of gold crystal sand. Now they had coincidentally encountered the Cloud Crystal Mist Flow. It was definitely a one in a thousand opportunity.

As the cloud essence continuously flowed into Lil' Pagoda's body, its dim water level slowly lit up and then exuded faint cloud mist.

The xiuzhe on the river shores were disturbed by the noise going on over at Zuo Mo's side and gave respectful and awed looks.

“Attainment Golden Body!” Ding Zhen's eyes suddenly became bright. The figure behind Zong Ru's back was blurry but it was the dignified golden body. His shock overtook his ability to speak and he was silent for a while.

“Shishu, what is the Attainment Golden Body?” Ming Jing was astounded. What could cause Shishi to lose his composure?

The other two people also stopped what they were doing.

“I hadn’t expected that it was the Attainment Golden Body!” Ding Zhen forced a calm smile, “It is a wondrous dhyana scripture. Ever since the thousand year battle, it had disappeared. I had thought it was lost and it is unexpected that a branch has survived. No wonder this boy was able to attain wish power. The successor of [Attainment Golden Body] is as extraordinary as one would expect!”

The three disciples showed expressions of understanding. So this was a lost dhyana scripture.

Ming Zhu who had been silent suddenly spoke, “The other two are also very strong.”

Hearing this, Ding Zhen stilled. Of the three disciples, Ming Zhu was the most stoic but he was usually correct in his words. Ding Zhen’s gaze finally moved away from the Attainment Golden Body. When it landed on Wei Sheng’s black sword, his pupils expanded.

“Such heavy fiendish energy! Such heavy killing intent! There is actually such a vicious weapon in the world!”

When he looked at Wei Sheng, he found that the other’s gaze was clear without any maliciousness and his actions were honest. It was possible to see that the killing intent of the sword had not influenced his mind. He couldn’t help but praise, “Such a determined and strong-minded man!”

His gaze moved to Zuo Mo.

He made a sound of surprise and his expression became bewildered. "Strange, there's something strange!"

He said to himself, "He clearly is not in the stage of jindan, so how was he able to reach this place? His hand technique is also very strange, I cannot understand it."

He kept on shaking his head.

When his gaze turned to Lil' Pagoda, his eyes lit up but then he said regretfully, "It is a pity."

The three disciples were confused by his words.

Ding Zhen did not explain and just said, "These three are of extraordinary origins. We need to be extremely careful in our journey this time and not get in conflict with them."

Seeing the unconcerned faces of the three disciples, Ding Zhen's brow furrowed. But when he thought about how they would have him, a yuanying, supporting them, he couldn't help but laugh. He was too cautious.

He did not continue to persuade them and said with a smile, "You may want to harvest some more. It would be difficult to encounter such pure cloud essence in the future. It is a very good gift to give to your shixiong and shidi when you return to your sect."

This time, even Ming Zhu took out a jade bottle and started

harvesting.

Of the three, Zong Ru was the first to finish. The bottle became even more defined. It had grown longer and there was a blood red lotus on the surface of the bottle that flickered. The bottle was shrouded in cloud mist as it slowly faded into the golden body.

Zong Ru's palms came together as he stood up and bowed towards the cloud river.

Zuo Mo had also formed hundreds of cloud beads. He had used up all of the ling power inside his body. He stopped, threw a few ling dan into his mouth and sat down cross-legged to recover his ling power.

Lil' Pagoda seemed to be over stuffed as he swayed back into A Gui's arms and laid down with its tummy facing up.

The black sword's absorption of the cloud mist had not decreased.

Wei Sheng stared attentively at the black sword and found to his surprise that the shape of the black sword was slowly changing.

The body of the sword became even narrower, and caused the sword to look longer in comparison. Compared to its previous vicious appearance, it seemed nimbler and more spirited. Despite

appearances its length was actually shortening. The long sword which had been the length of a person was now about the same length to Wei Sheng's ribs. The ruler-straight sword was still simple and unadorned, it had a deep black luster that did not give off any light.

The present black sword was still a size larger than normal flying swords but was much more delicate in appearance than in the past. It was as though an ancient wild beast had hidden away its thick claws and teeth to silently settle down.

There wasn't any aura of viciousness or fiendish energy, no killing intent, but for some unknown reason, Wei Sheng's heart was full of a faint joy.

It took two whole hours before the black sword stopped absorbing cloud essence.

The black sword suddenly disappeared and then reappeared in Wei Sheng's hand.

Wei Sheng gripped the hilt of the sword which was the perfect thickness and length for his hand. A smile blossomed on his face.

Kang De had finished before Zong Ru did. He had not expected to encounter the Cloud Crystal Mist Flow and had not prepared. However, he was not greedy and was very satisfied with the surprise.

“Daren, after crossing this cloud river and walking for two more days, we will enter the grounds of harvesting water cloud embryos”

Before Kang De finished speaking, his voice suddenly choked off. Almost at the same time, Zuo Mo and the others looked at the cloud river.

A blue light suddenly flew out of the cloud river, covered in layers of ice crystals, and struck a xiuzhe. The xiuzhe hit was instantly frozen into a statue of ice. He didn't even had the time to scream before he dropped into the cloud river and disappeared!

“Ice Breath Beast!” Kang De's face turned ashen and his voice trembled.

The xiuzhe who were harvesting by the river shore instantly started to panic. Each of them had ashen faces as they turned and tried to escape.

Dozens of blue energies flew out of the river. The xiuzhe that were struck instantly turned to ice sculptures. Even the expressions of their faces were preserved as though they were alive.

This time, even Zuo Mo's group changed expression!

These dozens of xiuzhe were all jindan but were able to withstand one blow of this blue light!

What was even harder to believe was that the ones that were hit were the xiuzhe who had turned in order to escape!

Zuo Mo's heart shook. Such high intelligence!

Suddenly, someone exclaimed in shock, "Heavens! The cloud river is growing!"

As he had said, the layers of ice crystals were growing upwards. They quickly reached the same level as the rivers of the shore and they were still rising!

At this time, several bolts of blue light suddenly shot at Zuo Mo's group!

Face ashen, Kang De's soul almost left his body!

Chapter 526 - Clear Cloud Python

Kang De was closest to Wei Sheng. Wei Sheng's two thick eyebrows shifted. The slender and straight black sword appeared in his hand, drawing an arc and then a horizontal slash.

A faint black ripple spread.

When the blue light hit the black ripple, it disappeared without a trace.

Zong Ru's eyes were still half-lidded. His expression had not changed but at some time in the brief moment since the start of the attack, his right hand had formed a seal.

Dong!

The Attainment Golden Body suddenly formed behind him, one hand raised high as though it was holding something up. In this instant, a dignified dhyana presence rippled outward and spread with the Attainment Golden Body as the center! Zuo Mo, A Gui and the others were enclosed within it.

When the blue lights came into contact with this intangible ripple, they exploded in the air beautifully like fireworks.

From beginning to end, Zuo Mo had not needed to act.

He stared at the roiling cloud river as though he was thinking of something.

Unlike Zuo Mo's group which remained uninjured, the fatalities and wounds of the other xiuzhe were extremely high. The blue light that the ice breath beasts exhaled was very domineering and normal ling armor could not block it.

If they were hit, they definitely would turn into ice statues.

The xiuzhe that could stop the attack either had great treasures or were very powerful. Zuo Mo's gaze landed on the four Xuan Kong Temple xiuzhe. They were the most-attention catching group.

None of the four moved.

The domineering blue lights seemed to be stopped by an invisible wall ten zhang away from them.

Zuo Mo was intimidated.

The other's move was revealed they were more skilled than their group. He was now one hundred percent sure that the leading dhyana xiu was a yuanying! Those that were not yuanying were not able to resist like this.

Ding Zhen's expression was unchanged but his heart had become slightly clouded. The abnormal change of the cloud river was abnormal.

"It is the ice breath beasts." Ming Jing's expression was not well as he continued, "Fifth-grade cloud beasts, their most powerful move is an ice breath attack. Ling armor below fifth-grade cannot stop it."

"Did they appear previously in this place?" Ding Zhen asked.

"Never," Ming Jing shook his head and responded, "At most third-grade cloud beasts would appear here. Even fourth-grade beasts were extremely rare, much less fifth-grade!"

The expressions of the other two disciples were not well. For them, fifth-grade cloud beasts were targets they had to face seriously. If the beast had the advantage and the benefit of the geography, they would have turned and fled without Shishu's help.

Fortunately Shishu was present. For a yuanying xiuzhe, fifth-grade cloud beasts were easily dealt with.

"Shishu, should we save them?" Ming Jing looked at the terrible state on the shores. There was a hint of pity in his eyes as he spoke.

"We have more important things to do, do not stray," Ding Zhen looked towards the other side of the shore and said in a deep voice.

“Shishu, we are to cross the river?” Ming Jing probed. Even though he knew that they had an important mission, there was the cloud crystal mist flow that had appeared out of season and the ice breath beasts that should not have appeared in the cloud river. Everything implied that something was unusual here.

“En, stay behind me,” Ding Zhen said faintly. He swept across Zuo Mo’s group and then turned his eyes away.

Ding Zhen stepped out like usual and stepped onto the cloud river. Step by step, he walked as though he was on solid ground, steady and unhurried. The three disciples walked behind him and stepped exactly where he had.

The moment Ding Zhen stepped onto the cloud river, the cloud river suddenly started to boil. Countless cold blue lights shot out of the cloud river and rained down on the quartet.

Ding Zhen’s expression was normal and did not change as though he did not see them.

The storm of blue lights created countless fragments of energy as they hit the invisible wall. Ding Zhen and the others were not affected, and seemed to stroll towards the other shore.

The xiuzhe who saw this all inhaled in shock.

“So powerful!” Zuo Mo swallowed. “This guy definitely is not the average yuanying!”

Admiration floated onto Wei Sheng’s face. The power that Ding Zhen displayed far surpassed their own. However, the admiration was quickly replaced by motivation. He unconsciously gripped the black sword in his hand.

The black sword that had completely changed in appearance after swallowing great amounts of cloud essence seemed to feel Wei Sheng’s battle spirit and lightly vibrated in Wei Sheng’s palm.

Wei Sheng felt the slight tremor from the black sword, and lovingly caressed the sword that had become long and narrow.

Kang De had been rescued from the jaws of death. An experienced person, his ashen face gradually became normal again. “Daren is wise. The ice breath beasts are fifth-grade ling beasts. The ice breath they exhale is glacially cold. Normal ling armor cannot withstand it.”

His gaze landed on the ice statues on the shore and couldn’t help but feel some grief.

As they spoke, the ice crystals spilled out as the cloud river rose.

“Daren, let’s return!” Kang De gathered his courage and urged. His voice was full of terror, “This subordinate has made a living for

more than a decade in the cloud sea and has never seen”

Suddenly some of the xiuzhe which had fled successfully stumbled back with terrified faces.

“The Clear Cloud Python! Save us”

Kang De stopped. In this instant, his gaze became stunned.

An enormous snake’s head suddenly shot out of the cloud mist and swallowed the xiuzhe who spoke in one gulp! The snake’s head was enormous like a mountain that was hundreds of zhang tall. In front of it, xiuzhe were as minuscule as ants in comparison. It was made from the cloud mist, its two eyes grey-white and empty. Just this enormous snake head was enough to scatter some people’s minds.

Now even Zuo Mo and the others could not keep their calm. Their expressions changed drastically!

Just the snake’s head was so terrifying, so how large would the body of the snake be?

What was even more terrifying was the presence exuded by this enormous figure was almost enough to make them suffocate.

In this instant, Zuo Mo knew that they were not on the same level. Without hesitation, he grabbed A Gui and sprinted towards the cloud river.

“Let’s go!”

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were in sync with Zuo Mo. At the border of life and death, Wei Sheng grabbed Kang De who was trembling. Zong Ru started to move at the same time. Like arrows flying out of the bow, they shot towards the river. Silly Bird who always seemed to most unconcerned had the fastest reaction. With almost abnormal speed, she flew to the front of the group.

Compared with the titanic beast behind them, the ice breath beasts in the river were adorable like pets.

Blue lights flew like rain out of the river and shot at Zuo Mo and the others.

At this time, no one kept anything back. Even Zuo Mo seemed to go crazy, endless yao arts flying off his fingertips.

He dared to guarantee that he had reached a peak state in casting yao arts!

He didn’t dare to keep anything back and he didn’t even have the time to think as instinct took over his body.

Arrr!

The cloud sea behind him seemed to shake. Terrifying power

swept across like a gust of wind! In front of this kind of power, the blue lights of the ice breath beasts were weak like candles in the wind, extinguishing easily!

“Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art!”

At this time, Zuo Mo didn't even look and threw the strongest yao art he knew out behind him!

The wasteland beast appeared!

The lantern-sized red eyes flashed with an eerie light. As the wasteland beast appeared, it destroyed the wave of power that came at them with a swipe!

Compared to the Clear Cloud Python, the wasteland beast was much smaller. However, the wasteland beast stared attentively at the other. Furious battle spirit that was rare to see rose up in its bloody pupils!

The Clear Cloud Python also detected the power of the wasteland beast. It stared at the wasteland beast as lightning gathered in its empty grey eyes.

The wasteland beast crouched and then leapt at the Clear Cloud Python!

The Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art had drawn out all the power in Zuo Mo's body. If it wasn't that the three powers could be

changed into each other, Zuo Mo could not have cast the Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art after casting so many yao arts.

His body suddenly dropped down and just as he was about to fall into the cloud river, he suddenly felt his neck tighten.

It was Silly Bird that had grabbed onto him at this crucial time.

Zuo Mo threw a grateful look at Silly Bird but found to his shock that Silly Bird was rolling her eyes. He instantly became furious!

Zuo Mo's other hand was tightly gripping A Gui.

A Gui's face had not changed at all as though she did not know what a dangerous situation she was in. Zuo Mo couldn't help but reflect that it was not a bad thing to be like A Gui sometimes. Lil' Fire and Lil' Pagoda in A Gui's arms gave off terrified shrieks once in a while.

Grabbing onto two people, Silly Bird was still faster than Wei Sheng and Zong Ru. She kept a secure lead at the front.

The next scene caused Zuo Mo to gape. Silly Bird was extremely nimble even as she dragged the two of them through the rain of blue light. None of the blue lights managed to hit them.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were also dodging but they still had to stop to defend against some of the the blue lights.

A true bird would not show their face!

Zuo Mo's mind moved quickly as he marveled. The bird seemed more powerful than he had imagined!

Such a good laborer, how had he forgotten it. Waste, such a waste

As though she detected that Zuo Mo was scheming something, Silly Bird's body suddenly dropped.

Zuo Mo who had been thinking of how to wring Silly Bird dry suddenly felt his vision turn blue. The surface of the cloud river was less than half a zhang away from him. He was even able to see the ice breath beasts that were hiding under the ice crystals.

Silly Bird's action was clearly a provocative one to the ice breath beasts in the cloud river. Countless blue lights headed for his face, their goal was Zuo Mo!

Zuo Mo's soul almost departed. He watched as blue lights took over his field of view.

Then his neck tightened again and all the blue lights disappeared instantly.

In that instant, Zuo Mo felt that his heart almost stopped

breathing.

Zuo Mo instantly reacted and swore, “You dumb bird, fat bird, chubby bird, ge will roast you cough cough hiss!”

Seeing Zuo Mo disheveled in the air, Wei Sheng and Zong Ru had sympathetic expressions. They carefully maintained a distance from the raging Silly Bird.

Compared to the raging Silly Bird, the ice breath beasts couldn’t even count as pets!

At this time, a great sound came from behind them.

Affected by the tremor, the cloud river seemed to boil and ice crystals shot out of the water.

Boom!

With a muffled sound, Zuo Mo and the others found that the large cloud river under them seemed to be torn apart by several great forces. It broke apart!

They couldn’t help but stop and look back.

Chapter 527 - Thieving Baldies!

Only half of the Clear Cloud Python's head was left, a portion of the cloud energy had been scattered and swirled inside the cavity. The enormous pain caused it to furiously twist its body. All of the clouds within dozens of li were pulled in and the wind cut past like blades.

Where was the wasteland beast?

Zuo Mo's eyes were wide as he furiously looked around to search for the traces of the wasteland beast but he could not find it anywhere.

For some unknown reason, he felt a wave of sorrow.

Even though he knew that the wasteland beast was a yao beast summoned using the [Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art] and would not truly die, he still felt a thread of grief. In his mind, the wasteland beast was undefeatable. On multiple occasions, it had been the wasteland beast that had saved him at the crucial moment. In his mind, the wasteland beast was like one of his comrades.

Zuo Mo stared hard at the Clear Cloud Python that was still twisting around. In this moment, he hated himself for not being strong enough.

Silly Bird also detected danger and accelerated. The Clear Cloud Python quickly disappeared from Zuo Mo's vision.

A rare thread of trepidation flashed through Ding Zhen's composed eyes. He leaned back to look at the enormous body of the Clear Cloud Python and could not move his gaze away.

Eighth-grade yao beast, was something that even he feared!

Ding Zhen felt a thread of regret. He should not have brought Ming Jing and the other's along. He had not expected the Cloud Sea was so dangerous that it had cloud beasts that were eighth-grade like the Clear Cloud Python. Even he needed to be wary against an eighth-grade yao beast. Ming Jing and the others would not even have a chance to escape. No matter where, eight-grade yao beasts were the top rank of the food chain and powerful existences that yuanying xiuzhe did not dare to provoke!

This was really fortunate this time. If they had been a bit slower when crossing the river, then it would be dangerous.

However

His gaze was fixed on the people that had just crossed the river, and murderousness flashed through his eyes. He clearly remembered the wavering in his heart the moment the strange beast was summoned. No one knew the shock he felt at that moment. He did not recognize the wasteland beast but the unique desolate and ancient presence on the wasteland beast attracted Ding Zhen's attention the moment it appeared.

The suicide attack of the wasteland beast what had heavily wounded the Clear Cloud Python caused him to reassess the power of the wasteland beast.

The Clear Cloud Python was an eighth-grade yao beast!

A xiuzhe that could possess such a powerful ling beast definitely would not have a simple background.

Ding Zhen didn't even think in the direction of yao arts. There was a distance between the two groups and the river was shrouded in cloud mist so their view was obstructed. Also, all of their attention had been focused on the Clear Cloud Python.

Eighth-grade yao beasts, even Ding Zhen had only ever seen a handful.

It was only when the wasteland beast appeared that they attracted Ding Zhen's attention.

Ding Zhen was considering if he should act against the other. His attitude towards Zuo Mo's group was quickly changing. He did not know Zuo Mo's goal in entering the deep of the Cloud Sea but he felt a direct threat. He also was suspicious that Zuo Mo's group was also going after that thing in the Cloud Sea.

He would not allow anything unexpected to happen on this mission.

But when he met the gazes of Zuo Mo's group, he suppressed the murderousness he felt because their gazes were full of undisguised wariness.

The other was prepared against a him!

Highly experienced old-timers!

Ding Zhen instantly understood. He smiled like usual and nodded towards Zuo Mo's group. He then turned with his three disciples and disappeared into the Cloud Sea.

————

Crossing the cloud river safely, they could hear the howls of the Clear Cloud Python from across the river. But for some reason, the Clear Cloud Python seemed extremely wary of the river and did not cross it. Moments later, the shouts of the Clear Cloud Python faded.

The cloud river that had been torn into pieces spread everywhere, carrying along the ice crystals

Silly Bird relaxed her claws and Zuo Mo collapsed on the ground. He was almost completely out of energy. Even Wei Sheng had an expression of trepidation on his face. Kang De's expression was stunned. He had not recovered from the situation.

“He intended to kill us just now,” Zong Ru suddenly spoke.

Wei Sheng and Zuo Mo stilled. The two exchanged a look and their expressions became grave. They knew just how fantastically sensitive Zong Ru’s perception was.

“There is no good baldy in the baldies of Xuan Kong Temple!” Zuo Mo said hatefully.

Wei Sheng laughed.

“Alive I’m still alive am I dreaming” Kang De’s voice was trembling as he talked to himself.

Zuo Mo and Silly Bird rolled their eyes at the same time. Their movements were in unison and it could be seen that the two of them were about the same in virtue.

Wei Sheng patted Kang De’s back and comforted him, “It isn’t a dream.”

Kang De seemed to be crazy. Everyone knew that he had not recovered from the shock of danger just now and were understanding towards his reaction. Zuo Mo shoved a bunch of ling dan into his mouth, crossed his legs and then started to meditate. Wei Sheng and Zong Ru guarded him to prevent any accidents from occurring.

As the ling dan entered his throat, it turned to a wave of heat that

spread through his entire body.

Zuo Mo was the only one that dared to consume ling dan in this manner. His channels were larger than normal people, and the paths his ling power took to circulated through his body frequently differed from normal xiu. He did not need to worry about collisions between large streams of ling power.

He manipulated the circulation of shen power according to the methods on the golden leaf.

The circulation of shen power was more complex than any of the three powers, but its effect was also larger than any spell, mo skill or yao art.

Just an hour later, Zuo Mo opened his eyes. He had completely recovered.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru released a breath. If this was any other person, they would definitely be surprised at Zuo Mo's quick recovery rate, but the two did not find it strange. In their view, nothing normal happened to Zuo Mo.

Kang De also gradually became calm but his face was still slightly white.

“What was the big thing just now?”

“It is the Clear Cloud Python.” Terror rose in Kang De's eyes as

he tried to keep his tone calm. “It is the most powerful cloud beast in the Cloud Sea. From long ago, people have spoken of it but no one had ever seen it with their own eyes. Many people did not believe it, I also did not think it was real. I hadn’t expected it to be true.”

“Clear Cloud Python?” Zuo Mo’s eyes were thoughtful but he didn’t have any memory of it. “What grade?”

“I don’t know.” Kang De shook his head.

“It should be eighth-grade,” Wei Sheng suddenly said.

“No wonder it was so powerful!” Zuo Mo stilled. Then he said with surprise, “No wonder it could defeat the wasteland beast!”

Just as he finished talking, Pu Yao’s cold snort sounded in his mind, “My ass!”

Zuo Mo’s expression froze.

“Passing the Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art to you is a waste!”

“Ha, the honored wasteland beast was killed by an eighth-grade little fat snake, Teacher, oh Teacher, please do not climb out of your coffin!”

“Shaming you even in Cloud Sea Jie. I actually took on such trash

as a student, I should poke out my own eyes!”

“The misfortune of the school!”

“The humiliation of yao world!”

Pu Yao’s disdain and mockery was thrown at Zuo Mo him with everything he was able.

Wei suddenly inserted with a smile, “You cannot completely blame Little Mo! The common saying is right, there are no stupid students, just terrible teachers.”

A deathly silence, murderousness spread in the sea of consciousness!

“Little Wei, it seems you are seeking death!” Pu Yao was full of murderousness.

“So sorry so sorry, I know, I know, the truth is slightly hurtful.” Wei’s face was full of innocence and apology but he looked extremely proud.

Bam bam bam bam

The two of them started to fight immediately.

Zuo Mo's face was full of exasperation. These two were really extreme!

He turned towards Kang De. "How far until there are water cloud embryos?"

Kang De thought and then said, "Not too far, about two more days of travel and we can arrive. However"

He halted in speech.

"However what?" Zuo Mo asked.

Kang De gritted his teeth and said, "Daren, this subordinate doesn't dare to guarantee that there will be water cloud embryos there. Something big definitely happened in the Cloud Sea."

"En, this cannot be blamed on you." Zuo Mo waved his hand and then stood up. He said, "We will go immediately to find water cloud embryos."

Zuo Mo decided once they found a water cloud embryo, he would use the transportation seals and get everyone to leave this dangerous place.

Kang De calmly quieted down. He also knew if he secretly ran away, he would not be able to escape the Cloud Sea. If he followed Daren, he would have at least a small guarantee of safety.

The group stood and continued to advance.

After walking for an hour, Kang De's face gradually became ugly. He suddenly stopped walking.

“Daren, the road is not right.”

“The road is not right?” Zuo Mo and the other stilled.

“This subordinate is extremely familiar with this route and did not feel it at the beginning but now, this subordinate is certain that the road is not correct! It seems someone has modified it.” Kang De's expression was puzzled.

Zuo Mo and the others changed expression.

He closed his eyes and spread out his shen power. When he opened his eyes, murderousness flashed through his eyes.

“Those damned baldies!”

As he spoke, he suddenly raised his hand. A ball of light suddenly exploded in his hand. Light charged into the surroundings. It was the art used specifically to defeat illusory arts [Bone-Crushing Obscuring Flash]!

The Cloud Sea in the surroundings flashed but did not change.

Zuo Mo's expression changed.

Another [Bone-Crushing Obscuring Flash!]

Only after the third [Bone-Crushing Obscuring Flash] did the scenery change.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru had terrible expressions. They had not detected the illusory art that the other had set down at all! Zuo Mo's face was black. He had used [Bone-Crushing Obscuring Flash] three times in a row to defeat the illusory spell the other set up. This was enough to show the difference in power between them.

The other's move was extremely evil. It was just a little illusory spell. If they did not detect it, they would fall! If they got lost in the Cloud Sea, they would not come out alive!

Thieving baldies!

Kang De looked around and then his eyes suddenly lit up. "I know where we are!"

Finishing, he hurriedly walked towards the cloud mist on the right.

Zuo Mo and the others quickly followed.

"The Xuan Kong Temple baldies really do want to deal with us,"

Zuo Mo gritted out.

“Rationally we are not in conflict with them unless they have a target? Are they afraid that we will interfere?” Wei Sheng showed a ponderous expression.

Zuo Mo said with a snicker, “They definitely have something they are after. Otherwise, why would they come to the Cloud Sea? Something that can attract a yuanying baldy of Xuan Kong Temple definitely would not be a normal treasure! Since they have involved us, hee hee”

He smirked coldly. Originally the two sides were only travelling in the same direction, you search for your treasure, and I’ll search for my water cloud embryo. He hadn’t expected the other to be so malicious and sneakily to move against them in secret.

Xiao Mo Ge’s personality was to settle all scores. There was no reason to slight himself.

So what if they were yuanying? Zuo Mo could not fight him for the treasure but in terms of setting down traps, if Zuo Mo did not have ten thousand ideas, he had at least a few thousand.

Don’t let ge encounter you

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth and cursed inside.

Chapter 528 - Cloud Messenger

Kang De lead Zuo Mo and the others out of the mist, as expected from someone who had made a living in the Cloud Sea for over a decade.

However, before they could be happy about leaving the mists, they detected the signs of a battle. It was clear that a fierce battle had just occurred here.

Kang De squatted down and carefully examined the marks left on the ground.

He quickly stood up. His face was slightly pale but relatively calm compared to before. “Daren, it is the cloud messengers!”

“Cloud messengers?” Zuo Mo’s face was confused.

Kang De explained, “Cloud messengers are a kind of cloud beast unique to the Cloud Sea. They are fifth-grade and are extremely fast. Their territorial instincts are strong and they react with great enmity towards those who trespass in their territory.”

He had a serious expression. “Daren, there were not any cloud messengers here in the past!”

At this time, Zuo Mo felt a strong sense of danger. A streak of flowing light sudden shot out of the cloud mist and appeared in front of Zuo Mo.

At this time, Zuo Mo's hand had just started to rise!

This streak of light came so quickly it was like lightning!

Fortunately, Zuo Mo had been on guard when he saw the marks on the ground. The shen power in his body had turned into the three powers. Zuo Mo was shocked but not panicked. His reaction was extremely rapid. Seeing he did not have the time to raise his arm to block, instead his hand turned over and he slapped up in a backhand!

The bright script appeared!

Day Script Palm!

Pia!

Zuo Mo's Day Script Palm accurately hit the flowing light. The unexpectedly the light did not shatter. The flowing light was like a rebounding ball that used the power of the Day Script Palm to escape. Being thrown back by the strike, it increased in speed and went back into the cloud mist.

Zuo Mo's hairs suddenly stood up. An expression of disbelief was on his face!

The Day Script Palm that had always dominated his enemies was

unable to even harm this thing.

This wasn't possible!

The battle occurred in a flash, but Zuo Mo, Wei Sheng, and the others had keen eyes and saw its appearance.

The cloud messenger was extremely strange in form. Four tentacles came out of a flattened body. Each tentacle had a ball of light at the end which shrouded its body in light. When it flew, its entire body was rotating at high speed, its four tentacles extended out to a point. This caused the space shield to also flatten and appear like a dart.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru's faces changed slightly. They understood just how powerful Zuo Mo's Day Script Palm was. The cloud messenger was able to withstand a full-on blow and not be damaged. Both of them were shocked. The cloud messenger was also lightning fast!

They were xiuzhe with a great amount of battle experience and instantly recognized the danger.

The thick, almost tangible cloud mist was a great hindrance to their vision but for the cloud beasts it was the best camouflage.

The tip of Wei Sheng's black sword rose lightly. Zong Ru's Cross Prayer Wheel appeared in his hand as the two prepared to face a great enemy!

Kang De's heart was also in the air. Cloud messengers were the cloud beasts that xiuzhe who hunted in the Cloud Sea, like himself, dreaded encountering the most. Ice Breath beasts only lived in the cloud river. As long as they did not go near the cloud river, they would not be encountered. But cloud messengers would be commonly encountered once people went deeper into the Cloud Sea. There were an innumerable number of xiuzhe that had died due to cloud messengers each year.

Even though cloud messengers were only fifth-grade, but with its terrifying speed and in this environment covered in mist, it was impossible to always defend against.

However, cloud messengers rarely left their territories. There hadn't been cloud messengers here before, what was going on with the Cloud Sea this year

Kang De was full of bewilderment.

"Careful, this thing's space shield is strange," Zuo Mo was the first to react and shouted a warning.

Before Zuo Mo finished saying this, countless flowing lights shot out of the cloud mist like a barrage!

The sound was like a vast bell. It was not loud and arousing but it rang out like thunder echoing within the clouds. With Zong Ru as the center, the cloud mist within five li suddenly stopped flowing in this instant.

Abhinna: [Truth Speech]!

Zong Ru's first attack was the killing move he rarely used, the abhinna: [Truth Speech]!

Compared to the time he used it at Nan Sheng Village, the present [Truth Speech] was completely different in terms of power.

The strange space shield of the cloud messengers could not stop Zong Ru's [Truth Speech]. The flowing lights suddenly stilled. Even though they were not completely stopped, but the murderousness intent had dissipated.

Zuo Mo, Wei Sheng and Zong Ru knew each other well. Zuo Mo and Wei Sheng acted at the same time.

What was the cloud mist most afraid of? Fire!

The cloud mist was formed from water moisture. When the sun rose, the cloud mist would quickly dissipate!

Zuo Mo's control of fire had reached the level comparable to yuanying. He had formed the Great Day Banded Flame from the Great Day mo physique and combined with the Sun Crystal Seed, he had even been bathed in the shen fire back at the Sun Shen Temple. His skill level in controlling fire was something he could dominate jindan xiuzhe with!

Bringing his hands together, the golden flames engulfed his hands. As he spread his hands apart, the flames suddenly spilled out like a golden piece of cloth thrown into the air and covering all of the cloud messengers!

Wei Sheng's coordination with Zong Ru was also exquisite. The black sword swung out in a circle. Intimidating sword essence smashed out like a twister! The thick cloud mist was blown away by the sword essence and instantly cleared out an empty space dozens of zhang in diameter!

Dozens of cloud messengers were instantly exposed.

These cloud messengers were also affected by Zong Ru's Truth Speech but were not visible in the mist. Facing such targets, how could Wei Sheng miss them?

The black void that represented hundreds of years of Wu Kong Sword Sect's history showed its power as Wei Sheng swung his sword! Power that was hard to detect with the naked eye pushed and pulled, and caused the space shield of the cloud messengers to creak.

At the same time, one of Zuo Mo's hands circled as another twisted!

The cloth of flame that had spread and trapped the cloud messengers suddenly tightened!

The cloud messengers gave strong and powerful chirps. They had managed to struggle out of the Truth Speech effects but the domineering Great Day Banded Flame was glued onto their space shields and would not stop burning.

Great Day Banded Flame was a sixth-grade flame!

The cloud messengers were terrified. They furiously struggled in the circle of Great Day Banded Flame and tried to escape!

Yet the tyranny of the Great Day Banded Flame far surpassed their imagination. It tore apart the space shields of the cloud messengers. As the space shields were penetrated, the Great Day Banded Flame started to burn the cloud messengers. The body of the cloud messengers disappeared at a visible rate no matter how they struggled.

In a short span of a few breaths, all of the cloud messengers around Zuo Mo were cleared out!

Wei Sheng was not lacking in comparison. His sword essence had broken through to the peak of sword essence manifestation and was at the door step of “domain”! This was a level that normally only yuanying sword xiu reached!

The black and empty sword essence was like the endless void, deep and without boundaries.

The space shields of the cloud messengers covered by the sword essence started to corrode and thin at a visible rate until they disappeared. Their bodies also disappeared at the same speed.

The combined attacks of the trio had killed hundreds of cloud messengers. Kang De's eyes were left wide in awe!

Clink clink, many disks the size of a thumb fell from the air. The trio did not move and maintained their defensive state to carefully examine the surroundings.

Looking at the experienced and crisp teamwork between the three, Kang De had a strange feeling. He had this feeling that Daren and the others seemed very familiar with the dangers in the Cloud Sea. With the three working together, hundreds of cloud messengers had turned to dust with the flick of a finger and was a great blow to Kang De's expectations!

The cloud messengers were fifth-grade cloud beasts and did not have a true ranking among the cloud beasts in the Cloud Sea. However, their lightning fast speed, and their numbers had caused countless xiuzhe to die in the Cloud Sea. Daren and the others were coming into contact for the first time but had found the cloud messenger's weakness in such a short amount of time in order to kill them. Were Daren and the others really entering the Cloud Sea for the first time?

Of course, Kang De did not know that Zuo Mo and the other two had experienced a place far more terrifying than the Cloud Sea. On the Sealed Extinction battlefield, Zuo Mo and the others had long become used to the fiend souls that could appear at any time. The

number of fiend souls they killed were innumerable.

“What is that?” Zuo Mo picked up a disk and asked.

The disk was the size of a thumb and the material felt like ivory. It was clean white and warm, the surface covered with natural patterns.

“It is a messenger seal, Daren.” Kang De’s tone was even more respectful. “Every cloud messenger would form a messenger seal in their body. The messenger seal has naturally forming seal formations. Many seal xiu will buy them. Other than to study the formations, they are good materials to forge cloud-type talismans.”

Natural seal formations?

Zuo Mo made a small sound of surprise, he brought the messenger seal in front of his eyes and closely examined it.

He quickly discovered something. These patterns that looked chaotic were actually seal formations. So interesting! Zuo Mo’s interest was stirred. It was not the first time he saw a natural formation but every time, they would give him surprises.

Where did the formations of xiuzhe originate?

From nature!

Actually, no matter if it was xiuzhe or yaomo, everyone's cultivation method was different but they all were derived from nature, from the world, from copying and mimicking.

Things that had natural formations were among the best materials for forging. Zuo Mo instantly knew the value of the messenger seals.

“Ah, such a pity, we are in a hurry this time.” Zuo Mo picked up the messenger seals on the ground as he muttered, “They are easy to kill, the materials are good, where else would we find something as profitable as this?”

Cold sweat poured down Kang De's head. Easy to kill? Cloud messengers were easy to kill? The cloud messengers that were the top thing people did not want to encounter had become the most profitable prey to hunt in Daren's mouth. Kang De was speechless, but thinking about how Daren and the others killed hundreds in a brief moment, he chose to close his mouth.

Zuo Mo was planning to get Vermillion Bird Camp to come hunt cloud messengers. This was definitely a good business!

The cloud messengers in the cloud mist might have been scared by the attacks of Zuo Mo's group and not one other cloud messenger ever popped out again.

Zuo Mo picked up the messenger seals on the ground and then started moving again. Finding a water cloud embryo was the most important matter.

Kang De once again led the way.

Zuo Mo could feel that they were continuously descending because the ambient temperature was gradually decreasing. The cloud mist became even thicker, and Zuo Mo suddenly found that the patch of cloud mist were formed from tiny ice droplets.

Kang De's expression became even more grave and his speed slowed down.

Zuo Mo and the others tried to be more aware as they carefully followed behind Kang De. They were prepared to fight at any moment. They may have appeared to kill off all the cloud messengers easily but all of them were wary since the cloud messenger which was just fifth-grade had been able to take Zuo Mo's Day Script Palm and come out undamaged.

Yet even so, an accident still happened!

Chapter 529 - The Mist People

The cloud mist in front of them was a faint blue. If one looked closely, they would find that each ball of mist was composed of countless tiny faint blue ice crystals. These faint blue ice crystals floated in the air and did not fall.

The blue endless mist sea was like an ocean and gave people the feeling of being immeasurable.

“This this” Kang De’s face was pale as he gaped. His expression seemed as though he had seen a ghost.

Zuo Mo’s heart jumped as he hurriedly asked, “What is it? Is something wrong?”

“This this is ice mist!” Kang De stammered out.

“Ice Mist?” Zuo Mo looked at the vast light blue mist and nodded. This name was pretty accurate. However, looking at Kang De’s expression, there definitely was something that was not right. He couldn’t help but ask, “What is it? What is wrong?”

Kang De swallowed hard, his face pale as though his face was powdered. “Daren may not know, but the ice mist is only found in one place. That is the Ice Mist Haze territory at the deepest part of the Cloud Sea. How can there be ice mist here?”

Zuo Mo recognized the situation. “You are saying there should

not be ice mist here?”

Turning his face, he looked at the vast blue mist sea and shook.

Something definitely unexpected had happened!

He suddenly thought of a question and his expression changed. He hurriedly asked, “What about the road? Would the road”

“Daren, the road is gone!” Kang De’s expression was full of terror.

Zuo Mo’s heart sank. “Then the water cloud embryos?”

“This subordinate does not know.” Kang De shook his head. “This subordinate has never gone into the Ice Mist Haze territory. There are rarely people that go deep into the Ice Mist Haze territory. It is too dangerous! Daren, look at this ice mist, they are extremely cold. If one does not have a treasure or enough power to protect their body, then just contact with the ice mist is enough to freeze them!”

Wei Sheng raised the black sword, and the tip sand into the ice mist.

A layer of frost quickly spread on the surface of the black mist at a visible rate.

Wei Sheng shook it lightly and the frost on the black sword disappeared. He raised his face and his expression was solemn. “We need to be careful!”

Zuo Mo saw what Wei Sheng had done from beginning to end, if even Wei Sheng felt they needed to be careful then the danger the ice mist posed was clear.

But

Zuo Mo looked at the quiet A Gui beside him, his heart filled with unwillingness. Water cloud embryo! Only a water cloud embryo could heal A Gui!

At this moment, Zuo Mo felt extremely conflicted. No matter what, he needed to find the water cloud embryo but he did not want Wei Sheng and Zong Ru to end up in danger because of him.

Wei Sheng glanced at Zuo Mo and instantly understood Zuo Mo’s intentions. He smiled, “Just mere ice mist, Shidi, do not be nervous. Finding the water cloud embryo is important, let’s go!”

Turning around, he walked straight into the ice mist!

Zong Ru smiled slightly. “Daren, time is tight!”

Finishing, he walked into the ice mist.

Zuo Mo's heart instantly warmed and he was moved. Seeing this, he did not hesitate and took out a transportation seal. "Your cultivation is too low, return first. This transportation formation will take you straight back to the island."

Kang De had never gone to the Ice Mist Haze territory before and could not act as a guide any further. Kang De was also weak relative to rest of the group and the ice mist was abnormally dangerous. They did not have the attention to spare to protect him so Zuo Mo let him return.

Giving the transportation seal to Kang De, Zuo Mo took A Gui and walked into the ice mist.

Entering the ice mist, he felt the bone-boring coldness come from all directions. Even Zuo Mo, with his powerful body, couldn't help but shudder. Suddenly, a wave of warmth wrapped around him. The Sun Crystal Seed appeared above his head and released fine light that covered Zuo Mo, A Gui, and the Little Ones.

Zuo Mo jumped in fright. The Sun Crystal Seed had always been silent in his body and never moved. Sometimes, he would almost forget the existence of the Sun Crystal Seed. He hadn't thought that the coldness of the ice mist would have stimulated the Sun Crystal Seed out.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru raised their own defenses.

Wei Sheng was covered in thin sword essence. This layer was extremely thin and wrapped around Wei Sheng's body like a

membrane. When the ice mist came into contact with this layer of sword essence, it would disappear as though it was swallowed.

Zong Ru held the Crossed Prayer Wheel and slowly turned it. Fine golden sutra characters swam in the surroundings and flicking in and out of view. The strange cold of the ice mist could not break through this seemingly thin barrier of sutra characters.

When Zuo Mo caught up, the three silently took up positions of a triangular formation with Wei Sheng at the front.

“The world is large and has all kinds of wonders!” Wei Sheng said emotionally. “This time, my vision has been broadened by this trip to the Cloud Sea! No wonder so many elders like to travel the world!”

Zuo Mo’s head shook like a rattle drum. “If it wasn’t for the water cloud embryo, I won’t come to this ghastly place! Oh, but the cloud messengers are good”

Wei Sheng saw Zuo Mo’s greedy state and he laughed. A strange feeling rose.

In terms of strength, Shidi could be considered a great genius that rivaled him but his personality was completely different than any young genius he had ever seen. Of the geniuses that he had encountered, like the astounding Lin Qian or the many others, they were either had great intelligence and deep talent or they had persistent hearts. Even he himself had only focused on the sword and nothing else.

But Shidi was far from being considered the peak of intelligence. His personality was lively, he was business-like and greedy for money. He learned all kinds of trades, spells, sword scriptures, seals, formations, forging, he learned a little of all of these, and many strange and weird things that Wei Sheng had never even heard of.

If one saw the things that Shidi learned, he was definitely the classical example of what not to do.

But even so, Shidi's strength had reached a level that was hard to believe.

He didn't understand how Shidi had cultivated the way he did. Wei Sheng shook his head and laughed, throwing the question to the back of his mind.

"Does Shidi recognize the water cloud embryo?" Wei Sheng asked.

"Yes." Zuo Mo nodded. He had made good preparations.

Wei Sheng rested his heart. He suddenly realized that while Shidi looked unreliable usually but he never made major mistakes. Thinking about this, Wei Sheng was thoughtful.

The further they walked in, the heavier the coldness of the ice mist was. The blue color of the ice mist increased and the ice

crystals that formed the ice mist became bigger.

There were still remnants of cloud grasses lingering on the ground. These cloud grasses had been frozen into little ice statues. They would occasionally see corpses of cloud beasts but they had also been frozen into ice and on their surface was a strange blue layer.

The trio's expressions became solemn. All the traces indicated that when the ice mist arrived, these cloud beasts had not had a chance to escape.

Suddenly, A Gui turned her head but no one noticed. Her empty and wooden eyes stared into the depths of the ice mist, a purple light flashed across her eyes.

Zuo Mo was slightly worried that the sudden appearance of the ice mist would have destroyed all the water cloud embryos.

Suddenly, a wave of rustling noises came from the ice mist. The three instantly showed wary expressions, stopped moving, and went on guard!

A pair of blue eyes appeared in the ice mist.

The trio felt a strong feeling of danger!

Without any hesitation, the black sword in Wei Sheng's hands suddenly sliced forward!

The black and empty sword essence tore apart the ice mist in front of them and exposed the other's true body!

A female whose body glowed like crystal appeared in front of them. She had a pair of deep blue eyes, her hair was a pure snowy white and her chin was sharp it had an uncanny and beautiful resemblance to work of craftsmanship. Her small lips did not hold any blush. Layer upon layer of light blue ice mist spin around her and her body that was bare flickered in and out of view.

When Zuo Mo and the others look down, they were astounded.

Countless blue ice crystals moved on the ground like quicksand. Her lower body was completely made up of this kind of blue ice.

“Mist People!” Pu Yao and Wei's exclamations sounded in Zuo Mo's mind at almost the same time.

Zuo Mo's heart suddenly jumped and he rushed to ask, “What are the Mist People?”

He had a bad feeling. This was the first time that Pu Yao and Wei shouted in shock at the same matter.

“How is it possible?” Wei murmured to himself. The aloofness on his face had disappeared and what replaced it was deep disbelief as though he was seeing a ghost.

Pu Yao's face was not much better. His expression suddenly changed as he shouted, "Quick, run!"

Run?

Zuo Mo's mind blanked. Not good!

Pu Yao usually looked down on everything. This was the first time Pu Yao did not hesitate in telling him to run!

This would only be one kind of circumstance—the other's strength was such that even Pu Yao was wary!

In a flash, Zuo Mo's mind was abnormally clear. He prepared to call Wei Sheng and Zong Ru to flee when something suddenly changed!

At some unknown time, their legs had been wrapped up in slender flows of ice mist. No matter how they struggled, they were unable to move!

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru instantly detected it and their expressions changed. Yet no matter how they channeled ling power, the slender flows of ice mist did not move at all.

The three had hopeless expressions.

None of the Little Ones were an exception and were firmly tied

up as well. Silly Bird that was usually the boss had been tied until she looked like a knot.

The mist person looked indifferently at them. The ice crystals under her body supported her and slowly moved her near them.

Zuo Mo knew that they were finished. The difference in strength was too great, so great that they didn't even have a chance to escape.

“What are the Mist People?” Zuo Mo's expression did not change as he asked in his sea of consciousness.

Pu Yao and Wei definitely knew.

“An ancient tribe!” Wei's tone could not recover its usual calm. “They are not too famous, but they have endured. It is possible to see traces of their presence in every era. I had not imagined they would have survived until now!”

Pu Yao's expression was complex. He was widely read and knew what the Mist People were.

Everyone had assumed that the ancient tribes had died out long ago. Who could have thought that they would see the lucky survivors of an ancient tribe in the depth of the Cloud Sea!

Pu Yao who had received the elite education of yao knew much more about all kinds of secrets than normal yao. However, about

ancient tribes, no matter if it was the xiuzhe world, the mo world, or the yao world, the conclusion was unusually in consensus.

They had died out long ago!

Ancient tribe?

This time, even Zuo Mo was shocked.

A tribe as powerful as the Sun Tribe had died out for tens of thousands of years. An ancient tribe had managed to survive?

Suddenly, the gaze of the mist person landed on Zuo Mo and they walked right up in front of him.

Chapter 530 - Ink Jade Bones

In the deathly silence, there was only the rustling as the mist person moved.

“Hey hey hey, let’s talk peacefully, let’s talk peacefully.” Zuo Mo’s heart was shaking but he still pushed a smile on his face. The other’s power was unfathomable to him. Of course, it was possible that this patch of ice mist had unusual qualities.

“Give it!” Like her appearance, her voice was unusually icy.

“Give what?” Zuo Mo’s face was bewildered, “Give what?”

“I smell the scent of my clansmen on you.” The mist person’s crystal-like eyes stared at Zuo Mo. Her voice was glacial and emotionless.

“The smell of your clansmen?” Zuo Mo was confused. There was a scent of mist people on his body?

However, out of the corner of his eyes he saw a flash of purple energy in A Gui’s eyes. A Gui’s body had been gradually recovering, the purple energy that had almost disappeared from her body had seemed to recover some vitality.

Also, the mist person seemed to feel that A Gui was not very strong and the ice mist flows that restrained her were the weakest.

Ever since A Gui had begun somewhat recovering, she had never used her strange power again. But when he saw the purple energy in A Gui's eyes, a thread of hope suddenly rose!

His mind spun furiously as he hurriedly said, "Ah ah ah, is it that I am a mist person? I'm really sorry, my memory has been erased. Ah, am I really a mist person?"

His intention had been to distract and buy time, but when he finished speaking, even he felt it was possible that he really was a mist person. His birth had always been a mystery, so

A rare thread of excitement rose in his mind.

"You are not," the mist person coldly replied.

The thread of excitement calmed. What rose was a thread of disappointment.

"Then I do not know."

A thread of puzzlement flashed through the mist person's sapphire eyes. Her head bowed, she sank into thought.

Suddenly, an unique vibration came from his ring. Zuo Mo couldn't help but make a sound of surprise.

The mist person was attracted by Zuo Mo's exclamation and

raised her head.

At this time, the ice mist chains on the silent A Gui, suddenly shattered without warning! Pia, the ice mist flows shattered into a light blue icy mist!

A Gui's right hand was slightly raised as her body twisted strangely on the spot. She was like a puppet that was pulled into a strange position as the purple light in her eyes brightened!

There was no sound, no light. The mist person in front of Zuo Mo seemed to be robbed of strength, her body softening as she fainted on the ground.

The ice mist flows around Zuo Mo, Wei Sheng and Zong Ru instantly dissipated.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru seemed to be relieved of a great burden. Their eyes were shocked as they stared at A Gui. A Gui did not detect their stares as though she had not done a thing and stood quietly next to Zuo Mo.

Wei Sheng asked Zuo Mo, "Has A Gui recovered?"

"I don't know." Zuo Mo spread his hand with a grimace.

The shock he was feeling far surpassed Wei Sheng and Zong Ru. It was like a tsunami occurring in his mind. He almost didn't dare to believe his eyes! This was not the first time he saw A Gui fight

but before this, Zuo Mo had been like other people, and did not know the method A Gui fought with.

But this time, he recognized it!

Shen power!

What A Gui was using was shen power!

A kind of shen power that was completely different from his sun shen power but it was undoubtedly shen power!

In the past, Zuo Mo had cultivated the three powers but knew nothing about shen power so he hadn't recognized that what A Gui used was shen power. Now that what he was cultivating was shen power, he could immediately see that A Gui was using shen power.

There were no words that could describe the shock Zuo Mo was feeling at this moment. A Gui actually cultivated shen power! At this time, countless questions flooded his mind.

All the clues pointed to the fact that he and A Gui had an unknown connection. It was very probable that she knew of his past. Even the five element glass bead inside his body seemed to have a certain connection to A Gui.

He could cultivate ling power, he was able to cultivate mo physique, he was even able to enter the Ten Finger Prison. These clues that had been ignored in the past suddenly became so clear!

Then there was the Soul Setting Divine Light, and the sun shen power that were also of the same mold!

His birth definitely had a close connection to shen power!

But

Zuo Mo bit down on his lips, his expression changing.

Shen power had disappeared a long time ago!

Suddenly recalling that the Four Realms hunted the descendants of ancient tribes, Zuo Mo unconsciously shuddered!

Then thinking about how someone had changed his appearance and erased his mind, a dark and dangerous presence suddenly rose as though it was a figure barely discernable in the thick mist.

Was it

Zuo Mo's heart shook and he did not dare to keep thinking.

He remembered all of his questions. He definitely was going to get to the bottom of all of them! His gaze landed on A Gui standing quietly by him and his gaze softened.

The image of A Gui blocking attacks for him with her own body was still clear in his mind, as though it was yesterday.

No matter what, he had to find a water cloud embryo!

Resuming his normal composure, Zuo Mo's gaze became determined again. Wei Sheng and Zong Ru who had been paying attention to Zuo Mo all this time finally released a breath. Seeing the two's expressions, Zuo Mo did not want them to worry and smiled.

At this time, he suddenly recalled the strange vibration that had come from his ring.

He hurriedly started to rummage through his ring.

It was this!

Zuo Mo's pupils suddenly contracted!

At some unknown time, the pile of bones in the corner of the ring had become a bright red like burning hot metal!

Ink jade bones!

The strange vibration just now had come from the ink jade bones!

Shocked, Zuo Mo took out all the ink jade bones. As the dark red ink jade bones were taken out, the ice mist that flooded the surroundings suddenly rushed towards the ink jade bones like sharks scenting blood.

This pile of ink jade bones in front of Zuo Mo seemed to be a powerful whirlpool or a bottomless hole that kept on consuming ice mist.

Sss sss sss!

The ice mist that was being pulled in turned to slender flows that howled.

Zuo Mo and the others were amazed.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were alright. Even though they were astounded, they did not know about all the events of the Sun Shen Temple and just thought the ink jade bones were a treasure. Zuo Mo truly jumped in fright. No one knew better than him about the origins of the ink jade bones. That was something he had found in the Burning Shen Realm of the Sun Shen Temple. At that time, he had seen the ink jade bones were of a good color and special quality. He had thought it was a treasure since it was not rotted after tens of thousands of years so he kept them until now.

Thinking about the “presence of clansmen” that the mist person had just mentioned, and then looking at this spectacular scene, Zuo Mo instantly understood. The ink jade bones were most likely an ancestor of the mist person. Then they had been captured by

the Sun Shen Temple and jailed in the Burning Shen Realm.

The mist person who had been unconscious suddenly woke up with a moan.

The trio's expressions suddenly changed and they realized that they had forgotten to check if the mist person was dead or alive! It might have been that A Gui had not completely recovered or that the mist person was too strong that this was the first time Zuo Mo had seen someone survive A Gui's attack!

A Gui's eyes were completely dim now and had reverted back to the usual woodenness. She did not react at all to the awakening mist person!

Damn it!

The three were just going to act, especially Zuo Mo. He was preparing to use shen power!

Yet the next scene stunned them!

They could see tears on the mist person's face, they were like the pearls dropping off a broken necklace and fell down. The faint blue teardrops became faint blue beads once they left her eyes. When they landed on the ground, they caused a clatter.

It was the first time Zuo Mo and the others had seen someone cry like this. All of them were stuck to their spot.

“Tears of a mist person! I don’t know how a brat like you can have such good luck!” In the sea of consciousness, Pu Yao shook his head and sighed.

“Luck?” Zuo Mo didn’t quite understand. Everything that was happening right now did not seem to have a connection with luck.

“The mist people have cold personalities and the majority of them would not cry once in their life. The beads formed from the tears of the mist people are called mist people tears, and was an ultimate water element treasure! Even more importantly, once a mist person cries in front of someone, the person will receive their friendship!”

Pu Yao had great knowledge and described the lore.

“Really?” Zuo Mo didn’t quite believe it. If this woman suddenly went crazy, they wouldn’t be able to deal with it.

“It is true,” Wei said solemnly. His voice carried a strange emotion. He felt a mixture of feelings upon seeing the descendants of ancient tribes.

Zuo Mo finally calmed his racing heart. Pu Yao and Wei usually were at odds. If both sides agreed it was true, then it should be true.

He gave a look to Wei Sheng and Zong Ru to stop them from

fighting. The two did not understand but refrained from taking action.

The mist person only cried for a while before stopping.

Standing to the side Zuo Mo didn't know how much ice mist the bones had absorbed. The color of the bones had gone from the burning red to a faint blue. The bones became a wondrous glowing blue, transparent like crystal.

Rustling suddenly sounded in the surroundings. The figures of numerous mist people flickered in and out of the ice mist.

Zuo Mo and the others changed expression!

The mist people came from all directions like the tide, surrounding Zuo Mo's group in the middle

Zuo Mo was furiously replaying that what Pu Yao said, "receiving the friendship of the mist person" and hoping it was true, otherwise

The dense crowd of mist people appearing caused Zuo Mo's scalp to prickle!

The next action of the mist people caused Zuo Mo to be shocked and also sigh in relief! The mist people orderly knelt down like the tide washing over the crowd. There was excitement on all of their faces.

Zuo Mo understood his own weight and knew that the mist people were not kneeling to him. As expected, what they were kneeling to was the pile of crystal bones!

He hurriedly pulled Wei Sheng and Zong Ru to hurry to the side. At this time, it was good to be perceptive.

Crack, crack!

As he moved away wave of strange sounds came from behind Zuo Mo. Turning around Zuo Mo, he was stunned as though he was struck by lightning.

The crystal bones were moving, all of them standing up. One bone flew on top of another bone, and a skeleton gradually formed. There seemed to be an invisible hand that was piecing the bones back together.

A hair-raising fear that was hard to describe rose in Zuo Mo's mind. His hair all stood on end!

Chapter 531 - The Tribe Of Mist People

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were also shocked by the skeleton. Even Silly Bird that was usually proud was unusually obedient the moment—the skeleton was not weak! Of all of them, the only one that showed calm was A Gui.

A Gui silently stood next to Zuo Mo and ignored everything happening in front of her.

The crystal skeleton was transparent. Every piece of bone was like a piece of art. The entire crystal skeleton was exquisitely beautiful. When the last bone attached the skeleton, the entire skeleton suddenly lit up with a blinding blue light. The blue light spread in all directions in ripples. The mist people who were touched by the blinding light were extremely excited.

The ink jade bones that Zuo Mo had picked up from the Burning Shen Realm were not whole. There were three bones missing, the skull, a rib, and a fingerbone.

But there was no imbalance that could be seen from this incomplete crystal skeleton as though it even like this it was complete. Wei Sheng and Zong Ru had terrible expressions. They suddenly had felt that the ocean of ice mist suddenly seemed to come alive!

Zuo Mo also detected the transformation of the ice mist. He was astounded. Shen power!

This was shen power!

The shen power released by the crystal skeleton was unusually gentle, so soft that it was almost impossible to detect. If Zuo Mo was not cultivating shen power, and was far more sensitive to shen power than others, he definitely could not detect it!

Zuo Mo was not very shocked that the skeleton was releasing shen power. He had picked up the skeleton from the Sun Shen Tribe's Burning Shen Realm so the skeleton definitely came from the ancient era. It was normal for the skeleton to have a connection to shen power. What he was shocked at was that the skeleton also still contained a trace of life!

The shen power released by the skeleton was weak and gentle but Zuo Mo could feel the presence of life contained within it!

Even though this presence of life was very weak, but it was truly life force!

Zuo Mo looked uncertainly at the skeleton. Was this a joke? A skeleton tens of thousands of years old suddenly coming back to life ... this was ridiculous!

Fortunately, the skeleton did not change any further. Its light gradually dimmed.

The mist people that had been prostrated on the ground stood up. Several mist people that seemed to be of advanced age carefully

went forward, picked up the skeleton, and disappeared into the ice mist.

A middle-aged mist person walked in front of Zuo Mo and made a strange bow to Zuo Mo's group. "Respected Guests, all future generations of Mist People will remember what you have done for the Mist People Tribe! No matter when, you are our friends!"

Even though Zuo Mo felt slight pain that the ink jade bones had been carried away by the mist people, this also resolved a possible calamity. He hurriedly said, "You are too polite! This was just a coincidence!"

"Speech is unable to express the gratefulness of our clan. Everyone, please, no matter what, come to be guests at our tribe for a few days so that we can act as hosts!" the middle-aged mist person said sincerely.

Zuo Mo was slightly conflicted, "Apologies, we need to search for a water cloud embryo"

The middle-aged mist person looked at A Gui and understood. He then showed a smile and said, "Sire, do not worry. We know many places where water cloud embryos grow." Finishing, he spoke in a low tone to a mist person beside him. The language they spoke was strange and Zuo Mo's group could not understand.

The mist person nodded as he listened and after he bowed respectfully to Zuo Mo's group, he turned and disappeared into the ice mist.

“I have ordered him to harvest water cloud embryos. Water cloud embryos are not rare in this area of the Cloud Sea, but there needs to be great care taken with the method of harvesting that few know off. Although the effects of the water cloud embryo are best when they are just harvested, our clan has some special methods that can maintain its efficacy after being harvested,” the middle-aged mist person said to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo instantly had a joyful expression on his face as he thanked the other person, “Many thanks! Many thanks!” Wei Sheng and Zong Ru also had happy expressions. They had travelled for so long and expended such effort, but obtaining their target did not take any effort!

The middle-aged mist person waved his hand and said, “Compared to the boon that Sir has given our clan, this minor matter is nothing.”

He ushered Zuo Mo to the side, “Guests, please!”

Zuo Mo’s expression suddenly became slightly strange. After hesitating for a moment, he said, “That”

The middle-aged mist person had a puzzled expression. “Sir, please voice any matters you have!”

Zuo Mo’s old face was slightly red as he pointed at the mist person tears on the ground. “That can I first pick those up?”

Zuo Mo did not notice that when he said this, the female mist person who had cried suddenly had a slight blush.

The middle-aged person roared with laughter. His hand moved, and those mist person tears flew into his hand. He handed them to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo carefully took them with a wide smile. These mist person tears were good treasures! Things that could receive a judgment of “good treasure” from Pu Yao were definitely extraordinary treasures.

Following behind the middle-aged mist person, the bone-achingly cold ice mist seemed to recognize them. It became a serene coolness that was comfortable.

The middle-aged mist person was extremely amiable and conversed while he continuously introduced the mist tribe to their guests. It was fine for Zuo Mo who already knew the history of the mist people, but Wei Sheng and Zong Ru gaped as they listened. The descendants of an ancient tribe that were isolated from the world?

“Then the skeleton is” Zuo Mo asked carefully and curiously. He was slightly worried that this would be a forbidden topic but he could not resist his curiosity.

“It is the totem of our tribe, called Lan!” The middle-aged mist person’s eyes flashed with excitement and happiness. He then sighed, “Ever since our clan has moved to this jie tens of thousands of years ago, the totem of our tribe had vanished suddenly soon after. We lost all sense of where it was. Ever since then, the shen power of the mist people weakened gradually so we are only able to live in the depths of the Cloud Sea isolated from the world.”

“Totem!” Zuo Mo finally realized. He had many guesses about the skeleton but he had not imagined it was a totem of a tribe.

When the mist people lost their connection to Lan was definitely when the Sun Shen Temple had imprisoned Lan in the Burning Shen Realm.

The Sun Shen Tribe had declined and its last shen temple turned to dust. Yet Lan who they had captured managed to barely survive.

When Zuo Mo spoke of this, everyone couldn’t help but sigh.

The middle-aged mist person nodded. “So it was the Sun Shen Tribe, no wonder! Even though we are isolated from the world, there are always one or two of our number that are sent into the ice mist to collect information. I heard that the bloodlines of the ancients have all died out on the outside?”

Looking at the middle-aged mist person’s unresigned expression, Zuo Mo didn’t know how to comfort him and could only nod.

The middle-aged mist person was silent. As this news was confirmed, the last bit of hope he had was extinguished. A moment later, he said in puzzlement, “Why have they died out?”

Zuo Mo shook his head. “I don’t know, there are probably many reasons.” For some reason, he did not want to tell the other about the thousands of years of pursuit and killing Four Realm Heavens did to the descendants of the ancients.

He saw the depressed expression on the face of the middle-aged mist person and comforted, “Now that Lan has been found, the Mist Clan can resume its previous strength, that is just a matter of time.”

Hearing this, the middle-aged mist person finally showed a smile. “Yes! As long as Lan is present, our clan can continue!”

He was full of confidence in Lan!

They quickly approached the public gathering area of the mist tribe.

Along the way, an area appeared in front of Zuo Mo’s group, it contained blue pools of various sizes. The sizes of these pools were all different and the water was deep blue. Looking around, it seemed like thousands of mirrors. There were blue balls of mist floating on top of some ponds. It was possible to faintly discern the figures of mist people within the mist.

“These are the mist pools of our clan.” Seeing Zuo Mo’s group show curiosity, the middle-aged mist person explained, “Lan disappeared, we lost our totem and our belief had no place to go, and we were unable to produce shen power. The ancestors spent great effort to create this Mist Pool body cultivation method to help our clan survive until now.”

“Powerful!” Zuo Mo praised sincerely. No matter what, any person that could create their own method were very able.

Seeing Zuo Mo and the others, the mist people along the way bowed.

Walking out of the mist pool area, large sections of blue building appeared in everyone’s view. These buildings were completely blue as though they were constructed from crystal and gave off the feeling of transparency. The walls flickered with light. It was this layer of light that blocked off the gazes of people outside and prevented them from seeing inside.

Each building was not large and could only be called a small house. Other than the material that were exquisite in feeling, the style of the buildings were simple and basic. Occasionally, they could see faint wall paintings sketched in faint grey strokes.

There were more mist people here than in the mist pools but Zuo Mo and the others found to their surprise that the strength of the mist people here seemed to be much weaker than the mist people they had originally met.

Zuo Mo suddenly saw an altar out of the corner of his eyes. The skeleton was on top of it.

The sacrificial altar was surrounded by mist people as they worshiped it devoutly.

Zuo Mo found to his shock that the shen power of the skeleton was stronger than just moments ago!

“It is a pity that we have lost Lan for too long. There is no priest in the clan. We can only worship daily and hope that Lan can recover as soon, and is able to protect the clan!” the middle-aged mist person said emotionally.

“It will be very fast.” Zuo Mo strangely followed up.

The middle-aged mist person paused and then smiled.

When he finished saying this, Zuo Mo suddenly seemed to feel something. The skeleton on the sacrificial altar seemed to be looking at him! This discovery caused his heart to jump but when he looked closely, the feeling had disappeared.

Zuo Mo smiled. It seemed that he was really too nervous. Lan didn't even have a skull, and no eyes, how could Lan be looking at him?

Shaking his head and smiling, he followed the middle-aged mist person to walk towards the largest building.

“This is the conference room of the clan.” The middle-aged mist person was apologetic. “We have been isolated from the outside world for too long and do not have any buildings to receive guests. Everyone, you will have to make do. Please forgive us for our shortcomings!”

Zuo Mo and the others hurriedly said that he was too courteous.

Walking into the conference hall, they found that the inside had clearly been just cleaned. There was a layer of pure white grass laid out on the ground. The table was piled up with all kinds of fruits and foods. Even though it was simple, it made people feel very comfortable.

Stepping on the white carpet, everyone felt a wave of coolness seep into the body and their minds clear up. Their nervousness instantly eased and their tiredness swept away. It was unspeakably comfortable.

A good thing!

Zuo Mo's eyes lit up.

Chapter 532 - Bie Han

Xuan Kong Temple.

In the hall, Bie Han was prostrated on the ground. He was not of tall height, his figure thin with hallow cheeks and an ordinary appearance.

“Bie Han, how many years have you been in the temple?” A warm and thick voice came from behind the thick cloth curtains.

“Seventeen years,” Bie Han answered after a long moment of silence.

“Seventeen years, time has passed so quickly,” the sect leader sighed emotionally. “You are good, I have seen your improvement in these years and is very comforted.”

Bie Han was silent.

“In the younger generation, other than Little Zhe, only you are able to become a gold battle general.” Heard from behind the cloth, the sect leader’s voice seemed to have a strange power and was so warm it permeated the heart.

“Little Zhe has done well in Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie. I know you can also do well.”

Bie Han was silent.

“Your killing energy is too heavy, I am worried about you.” The sect leader’s words were full of concern. “Having you chant sutras every day was in the hopes that your violent energies can be dissipated. I had always hoped that you would not be required to go into battle, and hadn’t expected”

The sect leader sighed.

A moment later, he said serenely.

“Go, your Ding Zhen Shishu will encounter danger in Cloud Sea Jie. Take the battalion to reinforce him. Ask Ding Guang for information. You may leave.”

Bie Han was silent. After kowtowing three times, he turned and left.

The large doors of the hall closed without any wind. The hall was pitch black.

A voice suddenly sounded, “Sect Leader, do we really need to send Bie Han? He is a dangerous person!”

“This matter is very important, we cannot be careless.”

“Cloud Sea Jie might be an intermediate jie, I’ve never heard of

any powerful factions”

“Tian Huan was just tripped up there. Shen Wu Hai is not among the top powers of of Tian Huan but he had yuanying cultivation.”

“But Bie Han”

“He is a knife, a vicious knife. We have to be careful his tendencies do not harm our people, but now that troubled times have come, it is time to use this knife!” the sect leader said peacefully.

The middle-aged mist person noticed that Zuo Mo was interested in the white grass carpet. He introduced, “These are cloud carpets woven from cloud silk grass. Cloud silk grass mostly grown in the deep of the cloud sea and it takes great effort to harvest. But the most difficult step is processing it. It takes several months of effort to process each strand of cloud silk grass.”

The trio gaped.

Just now on the road, Zuo Mo finally learned the name of the middle-aged mist person. He was Bing Yao, the clan leader of the mist people. The female mist person who had first encountered Zuo Mo was Bing Yao’s daughter, Bing Yue.

Finished speaking, he waved his hand. The cloud carpet instantly

shrank to the size of his hand and flew into his palm. He handed the cloud carpet to Zuo Mo and said vigorously, “I was troubled over what gift to give to Little Zuo. Since Little Zuo likes this, then this cloud carpet is Little Zuo’s!”

Zuo Mo jumped in fright and waved his hand to refuse it. “No no no ! This one is already grateful that your clan is helping us search for water cloud embryos”

Zuo Mo had just learned the value of this cloud carpet from Bing Yao’s description. If one strand of cloud silk grass needed that much effort to process. Zuo Mo didn’t dare to accept such a valuable gift.

Pu Yao suddenly shouted urgently from the sea of consciousness, “This is very good, accept it!”

“I know it is good,” Zuo Mo responded unconcernedly.

“You know my ass!” Pu Yao couldn’t stop himself from cursing. “This can be used to pass tribulations!”

Tribulations?

Zuo Mo’s mind shifted but before he could inquire further, he heard Bing Yao say with a smile, “Brother Zuo, do not refuse. This cloud carpet can calm the mind and remove mental barriers. We mist people are born with cold minds, and this is useless to use. Processing the cloud silk grass are what our younger ones use to

cultivate Ice Mist. We feel that it is a pity to throw it away so we have woven it into carpets. Also, Brother Zuo has returned Lan back to us, and A Yue has offended you just now, it really is”

Bing Yao’s speech caused Bing Yue to blush from behind him.

“This cloud carpet is just a token. No matter what, Brother Zuo has to accept it!” Bing Yao’s expression was serious.

Seeing this, Zuo Mo knew that he could not refuse and accepted it. Xiao Mo Ge was usually shamelessly greedy but that was against outsiders. If the other really thought of him as a friend, he couldn’t do things so shamelessly.

He was not black-hearted enough

Zuo Mo mockingly self-reflected as he took out the copper mask from the ring. He handed it to Bing Yao. “I found this mask beside Lan. I do not know if this is also something belonging to Big Brother Bing’s clan.”

Bing Yao took the copper mask and examined it closely for a while. He shook his head and said, “The style does not look like an object of my clan. We will have to ask Lan for sure. If it is of my clan, I will have a thick face and accept it. If it is not, Lan will definitely know its origins and I will return it to Brother Zuo at that time.”

Zuo Mo said with a smile, “No matter if it is or not, this is given

to Big Brother Bing.”

Bing Yao smiled slightly and put away the mask.

Right after, Bing Yao started inquiring to the outside world. They knew some, but what they knew was very general. Zuo Mo spoke of the wars between xiuzhe and yaomo, and then the Sky-Splitting Calamity, and also the fact that he had taken over Cloud Sea Jie.

Bing Yao listened with wide eyes and a gaping mouth. He had never expected the change in the outside world would be so drastic!

However, when he learned that Zuo Mo was the master of Cloud Sea Jie, he had a happy expression. With this, they, the mist people, were in much better circumstances.

Bing Yao patted his chest and said, “If Brother Zuo needs the mist people in the future, do not be courteous!”

Zuo Mo felt very good about this open and generous mist clan leader. He said with a smile, “I only hope that Big Brother Bing does not find me troublesome in the future.”

Bing Yao roared with laughter. “I think that Lan would not forgive me.”

The two sides chatted for awhile more before Bing Yao bid his leave for Zuo Mo and the others to rest.

“Shidi, what you are cultivating is shen power?” Wei Sheng suddenly asked.

Zuo Mo knew that he could not conceal this any longer and nodded. “En, it is called Sun shen power, an inheritance from the ancient Sun Tribe.”

“So you were the one behind the Sun Shen Temple matter!” Wei Sheng was not stupid and instantly understood. He then asked curiously, “Come, let me try your shen power, I have never seen shen power before.”

Zong Ru’s face was also turned over. He clearly was also extremely curious as well.

Zuo Mo suddenly moved into a strange posture, his two hands crossing and twisted together, his body leaning slightly towards the right as the tip of his right foot was just touching the ground. An extremely hard and yang power suddenly spread in all directions with him as the epicenter.

Wei Sheng’s pupils suddenly contracted. Threads of black energy suddenly floated out of the black sword in his hand as he swung the sword repeatedly in the air. Pia pia pia, explosions occurred at the tip of his sword.

Zong Ru’s expression changed and he spun the Crossed Prayer Wheel. The sutra characters that were shrouded in wish power shielded him from the front.

Bam bam bam!

Three sutra characters exploded before they managed to stop this wave of shen power.

Resting his sword, Wei Sheng thought back and said after a moment, "Such a strange power! As expected, it is different than anything else."

Zong Ru was also savouring it. He followed, "Normal spells would have a difficult time stopping it."

Zuo Mo thought and then stated his conclusion. "Shen power can be seen as the product of combining three powers together."

"Three powers?" Wei Sheng's expression changed.

"En, ling power, spiritual consciousness, mo skills." Zuo Mo's words flowed. Wei Sheng Shixiong was a genius. Zong Ru was low-key, but in order to have cultivated wish power, he also did not lack talent. These things might be of great use to him. He used even more care and energy to explain and spoke of everything he had felt and concluded regarding Shen power. He also told them the basic methods to cultivate shen power.

As to how much inspiration they would get, that depended on their individual luck.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru both sank into deep thought.

The two had already found the edge of power. To them, shen power was akin to opening a window to another world.

There was too much content they needed to digest. Like two wooden puppets, they sat motionlessly and entered a meditative state.

Seeing this, Zuo Mo did not disturb them. He took A Gui and the little ones to sit at the side.

Taking up A Gui's hand, Zuo Mo hurriedly inspected A Gui. Since he knew it was shen power, Zuo Mo's inspection was even more detailed and focused. Even though his understanding of shen power was still very shallow, he still made discoveries.

What he was first sure of was that the purple energy inside A Gui's body was a kind of shen power.

It was a very strange shen power!

Zuo Mo felt that if it was shen power, it definitely would not be normal, but even so, the shen power inside A Gui's body shocked him.

Dark, cold, strange, and able to consume any life!

The moment the Sun shen power came into contact with A Gui's shen power, Zuo Mo felt as though he was suddenly pulled into a deathly silent void. There was no sound, no light, no heat!

It was a void that created hopelessness!

Zuo Mo's mind in that instant was like a candle's flame wavering in the wind and was almost extinguished!

Fortunately, his shen power was much stronger than A Gui's shen power. The Sun shen power was innately extremely hard and yang so this difference had saved Zuo Mo's life.

His shen power was carefully withdrawn from A Gui's body, Zuo Mo looked at A Gui's ugly and wooden face. For some unknown reason, Zuo Mo was in a low mood.

His eyes were full of deep worry.

As his understanding of shen power deepened by the day, Zuo Mo was clear how great the effects of shen power was on people. It wasn't just shen power, the three powers also had effects. Xiuzhe that cultivated fire spells usually had fiery tempers, those that cultivated ice type spells were usually cold and unaffected by emotion.

Such a strange and dark shen power, and the terrifying seal of all six senses, A Gui

Thinking about the manner in which A Gui had used shen power before she had been wounded, Zuo Mo's worries increased.

Zuo Mo had found a long time ago that A Gui's body was in a terrible state. If it was not for this strange power, it probably would not have survived until now. But only today did he understand the terrifying nature of this shen power!

The scene of A Gui shielding him appeared suddenly in his mind.

That hopeless and deathly void, even just one moment in it caused him to shudder. The shen power had also been in A Gui's body all this time

There seemed to be something weighing on Zuo Mo's heart and he felt unspeakably uncomfortable!

Water Cloud Embryo!

If they could find a water cloud embryo, he could definitely heal A Gui. Then he would find a way to heal A Gui's wounds and eliminate this terrifying shen power from A Gui's body!

It was the first time Zuo Mo felt that time was passing by so slowly.

Each day was like a year.

Chapter 533 - Sin Battalion

Bie Han turned his head back to look at the temple floating in the sky. The tower peaks could be faintly discerned sticking out from the top of the clouds.

By his side, a strange battalion was standing silently.

This battalion was extremely strange. Some of them had cow heads, others horse bodies, some had rhinoceros horns growing out of their foreheads. Any xiuzhe that saw this battalion would be in a for a great show. Mo, these people were all mo!

They were motionless like statues, their eyes dull and a deathly grey-white. Golden seal scripts covered their bodies like beautiful tattoos.

This battalion was one of the most famous battalions of Xuan Kong Temple. It had a strange name—Sin Battalion!

Bie Han turned his gaze away and led at the front. The entire battalion slid past like water.

“Cloud Sea Jie” Bie Han said lightly to himself. The surroundings were completely silent.

In Sin Battalion, there were no vice commanders.

Zuo Mo suppressed the urgency he felt and kept his expression calm as he talked about all kinds of topics with Clan Leader Bing Yao. The young people in the clan liked to crowd around the two of them and listen to the stories. After being kept in isolation for so long, they were full of curiosity about the outside world.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru woke up from their meditation. Both of their presences showed clear changes. Zuo Mo was extremely happy. It seemed that his words had been of some help to them even though he did not know how great of gains they achieved.

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru saw that Zuo Mo was surrounded by many people, so they went into the corner to keep on pondering about shen power.

Fortunately, Zuo Mo had gone to many places and was comparatively experienced. Otherwise, he would have run out of topics long ago.

No matter what Zuo Mo said, the young mist people listened with great interest.

Suddenly, a figure stumbled in. On his back was an unconscious mist person. Zuo Mo's pupils contracted. This was the individual who had been sent to harvest water cloud embryos that day!

Bing Yao's expression suddenly darkened. With a flash, he

appeared in front of the wounded mist person. A blue energy flashed on his hand as he carefully examined the other person.

Then he questioned the mist person who had carried the wounded companion with a stern tone. He was inquiring in great detail but due to the difference in language, Zuo Mo did not understand.

After finishing, Bing Yao raised his head and explained to Zuo Mo, “Someone fought and injured him. People are travelling into the restricted land.”

Zuo Mo suddenly recalled the group from Xuan Kong Temple and his heart jumped. He hurriedly asked, “Big Brother Bing, will you allow my fellow to examine this person’s injuries?”

Bing Yao nodded and retreated to the side. Zuo Mo indicated for Zong Ru to come forward. Zong Ru put his hand on the injured mist person and then after a few moments, he nodded towards Zuo Mo.

“Has Brother Zuo discovered something?” Seeing this, Bing Yao couldn’t resist asking.

Seeing Zong Ru nodded, Zuo Mo instantly understood and explained, “On our way, we encountered four dhyana xiu from Xuan Kong Temple. Based on the injuries of this brother, he was wounded by a dhyana xiu. I speculate that it could be the four dhyana xiu from Xuan Kong Temple.”

“Xuan Kong Temple!” Bing Yao’s face darkened. In the recent days, Zuo Mo had been introducing the state of the outside world to them. He had a general understanding of what Xuan Kong Temple was.

Bing Yao did not hesitate and said decisively, “No matter what, this clan will fight to the last remaining member and will not allow anyone to enter the restricted lands!”

Finishing, several mist people ran out of the conference hall. Strange howls sounded in all directions.

Hearing the howls, large numbers of mist people warriors gathered like the tide from all directions in the conference hall.

As Bing Yao spoke to them, all of the mist people had murderousness on their faces.

“Brother Zuo, your group can first stay” Bing Yao eased his tone as he turned to Zuo Mo to speak.

“Big Brother Bing is too polite!” Zuo Mo said with a serious expression. “This little brother has been waiting for an opportunity! Big Brother Bing does not know, but this group of thieving baldies have tried to entrap us on our way through the Cloud Sea. I have been thinking about how to get even, and this opportunity has delivered itself! Also, this brother was wounded in the pursuit of finding water cloud embryos for us. There is no honorable rationale for us to stand back and only observe!”

Bing Yao's eyes were filled with an admiring light. He patted Zuo Mo's shoulder heavily. "Good! I will accept you as a brother! Go! Let us go together! Hmph! Xuan Kong Temple!"

"Shishu, the person just now was so strange," Ming Jing said with lingering shock. The blue figure had been like a ghost. If Shishu had not attacked and heavily injured the other, they would not be safe and uninjured now.

Ding Zhen whose expression was usually warm was now extremely dark. He squeezed out through his teeth, "That is a mist person!"

The three disciples were frightened by the viciousness of Ding Zhen's face. A long while later, someone asked carefully, "Shishu, what is the mist person?"

"The remanent bastards of an ancient line!" Ding Zhen noticed the expressions of the three disciples and relaxed his expression. "Remember for the future. If you encounter members of ancient descent lines, report them to the sect!"

The three were stunned by Ding Zhen's stern tone and nodded in compliance.

Ding Zhen suddenly closed his mouth. He had hit that mist person with his attack but had not found the corpse afterwards. He

definitely had fellows that helped him escape!

Was it a mist person tribe?

Ding Zhen became alert. If that was true, then this trip was really worth it! Even if he did not find that object, just the discovery of the mist people tribe would be enough for the sect to reward him.

He started to cast a spell and his ling power shifted slightly. A circle of golden light flashed at his fingertips. Ding Zhen opened his eyes and sighed inwardly. The ice mist was slightly strange. He was unable to deliver any message to the outside and back to the sect!

Ding Zhen became wary. These descendant of ancients most likely had a few tricks if they had managed to survive until now.

Xuan Kong Temple was full of experts and the division of responsibilities was extremely fine. Specialized matters were taken care of by specialized people. Ding Zhen had never participated in this kind of mission. Truthfully, if they had not been the closest ones to Cloud Sea Jie, they would not have received this mission.

No matter what, it was most important to finish the mission.

“Be careful, let’s go.” Ding Zhen said heavily. “The matter this time is strange. If something goes wrong, turn and run. Do not hesitate, understand?”

Ding Zhen was not a person who held power or status in the sect, otherwise, he would not have been sent out on such a low-level mission, taking disciples out to gain experience. It was not that his power was not enough, but that he was not well-liked by the main decision-makers of the sect. He did not want anything to happen to the disciples on his watch.

The protocols of the sect were strict. If there were not any orders, the punishment for fleeing was very heavy.

“Yes, Shishu!” The three hurriedly replied.

Bie Han carefully browsed the information in the jade scroll. This was the fifteenth time.

The information had been gathered by the sect, and included all kinds of information about Turtle Island. Bie Han could see that the sect had not been paying attention to Turtle Island for too long of a time. It should have just started gathering information a few days ago. Otherwise, the information would not be so sparse.

Bie Han knew the power of the sect in gathering intelligence. Given enough time, they could find almost any information that could be imagined.

There was nothing special in the report on Cloud Sea Jie. This was a remote intermediate jie and did not have a significant faction

in the past.

The main point of the intelligence report was on this faction called “Turtle Island.” This faction was very strong and had defeated a mo army!

Seeing the words “mo army,” Bie Han’s pupils uncontrollably contracted even though this was the fifteenth time.

The scale of the mo army was unknown but none of the local powers were able to stop them which had caused the entire jie to flee. The situation was only improved when Turtle Island stepped up and said they were going to fight the mo army.

Cloud Sea Jie was remote and did not have many products so it had not attracted attention in the past. None of the tendrils of the Four Realms had reached this place. One of the most important reasons for this was that Cloud Sea Jie did not have a jie master. Up until now, the jie key of Cloud Sea Jie was still undiscovered. This attracted Bie Han’s attention.

The jie key was of crucial importance to every jie. For every person, this meant peerless wealth! Possessing the jie key granted the ability to see the ling veins and ores in the jie. Other than that, the jie key could also control the ling energy of the jie.

Usually, the jie key would be found soon after a jie was discovered. The xiuzhe which flooded in would crazily search for the jie key. It was wealth that could drive people insane.

Strangely, the jie key of Cloud Sea Jie had not been found yet, and the history of xiuzhe residence on Cloud Sea Jie was uncertain but definitely over one thousand years. It was impossible that no one had searched for the jie key during such a long period time. Only by possessing the jie key will one become the true master of Cloud Sea Jie.

Bie Han was speculating to the true intentions of the sect.

The sect leader said that it was to help Ding Zhen but Bie Han did not believe him at all. He knew Ding Zhen's status in the sect. It was a joke that the sect leader would send a battalion just to help Ding Zhen.

Also, they had let him venture out.

After he had gotten his gold battle general jade medal, he had been forced into house arrest and to chant sutras everyday. No one appeared to be guarding the door but Bie Han knew that there were countless pairs of eyes staring at his little yard from the shadows.

There were elders in the sect that said he was bloodthirsty. Thinking about this, he couldn't help but smile coldly.

Jiang Zhe appeared handsome and gentle, but he was not soft when he started to kill. He never heard of any elder calling Jiang Zhe bloodthirsty.

All of this was just because

He suddenly turned his head and looked at the Sin Battalion in front of him. The golden restrictive sutra characters were as blinding as sunlight in his eyes.

A beat later, he took his gaze away and thought deeply without any expression on his face.

The sect had even prepared transportation formations for him to be transported directly into Cloud Sea Jie. The expenditure for this mission was astounding, and it was possible to see how much the sect prioritized this.

To transport directly into Cloud Sea Jie... ..

The sect had sent spies into Cloud Sea Jie a long time ago.

What were they planning.

Only when the light of the transportation formation entered his eyes did he break free of his thoughts.

Several dhyana xiu were standing by the transportation. The one that was the leader stepped forward and said respectfully, “Bie Han Daren, the transportation formation has been prepared. You can depart at any time.”

Bie Han did not even look at the other. He walked directly towards the transportation formation expressionlessly.

The Sin Battalion was behind him and silent as though they were dead.

Chapter 534 - Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain

Everyone travelled quickly through the ice mist. The mist people were born living in the ice mist and had methods to freely move within it.

Zuo Mo could see some hints as to what method they used. The mist people beside him formed thin ice mist shield. These rhombus ice mist shields allowed them to skate through the ice mist.

Zuo Mo's mind shifted. He consciously started to mimic the mist people. He was unable to manipulate the ice mist but he had other methods. At the beginning, he failed completely, but as the number of failures increased, Zuo Mo slowly found the method.

At the beginning, he used ling power, but he quickly found that ling power was expended quickly. Then he switched to spiritual consciousness, it was also expended quickly. In the end, he found that shen power was the most effective and its expenditure was almost negligible. However, it was much harder to control shen power than ling power and spiritual consciousness. Zuo Mo could only barely maintain it.

Wei Sheng quickly noticed what Zuo Mo was doing. With a glance, he understood. Wei Sheng was extremely intelligent and his skill in sword essence very high. He was not a jack of all trades like Zuo Mo and quickly grasped the trick. He used the sword essence to form a rhombus shield around him and his speed suddenly increased!

Wei Sheng's display stunned Bing Yao and the others.

Bing Yao suddenly snorted coldly. "In the front, I've found him!"

Ding Zhen suddenly had a feeling of danger. He stopped in his steps, his expression changed abruptly, as he shouted at the trio of disciples, "Quick, run!"

The trio stilled and their faces paled. They were not slow in their reaction, turning and then running in three different directions!

There were sounds of rustling.

Three blue lights flew out of the ice mist and accurately struck the three disciples. Blue ice mist spread at a visible rate. Their terrified expressions froze on their faces as they turned into ice statues.

Pia pia pia!

The three ice statues smashed to the ground and instantly shattered.

Ding Zhen glared angrily, his eyes bloodshot. However, he did not counter-attack and shot towards the ice mist!

His heart was full of shock. He had to pass this news back to the sect! There was a mist people tribe of such scale!

“Want to run?” Bing Yao’s face was full of murderousness. With a cold snort, he pointed at the ice mist.

Hiss hiss!

Two light sounds hissed like poisonous snakes as the the mist shifted.

Two thin strands of ice mist shot towards Ding Zhen. Two burning rays of blue light penetrated Ding Zhen’s body in an instant.

Yet Bing Yao’s expression suddenly changed slightly.

Ding Zhen’s figure slowly faded within the ice mist until it disappeared. What had been penetrated was just his after-image!

“Everyone, step back!” Bing Yao suddenly said.

The mist people retreated like the tide leaving Bing Yao to stand at the front. Zuo Mo and the others also retreated to one side but Zuo Mo was more thoughtful. Zuo Mo and his group retreated to the flanks to prevent the other from running away.

Ding Zhen's figure slowly appeared. He stared tightly at Bing Yao and slowly spoke, "I had not expected to encounter ancient descendants. Ding Zhen is very fortunate!"

Bing Yao was unaffected and said coldly, "Why have you trespassed into our restricted lands?"

"Restricted lands?" Ding Zhen's eyelids jumped, "So that object is on your hands!"

"That object?" Bing Yao's gaze focused.

"Haha," Ding Zhen smiled faintly, "Do not waste words. I see that all the people here only you are close to me in strength. It will depend solely on Sir's strength if you can keep me here."

Bing Yao did not speak. He spread his arms, his fingers spread wide. Ten blue rays of light dangled from his fingertips like ten blue threads of light.

Ding Zhen's talisman was extremely unique. It was the [wooden fish](#) he usually used when chanting. The wooden fish was completely black and covered in miniscule vermilion sutra characters. The wooden mallet was also filled with squiggly sutra characters.

A wooden fish, Muyu or Mokugyo, is a wooden percussion instrument used by monks during rituals involving the recitation of sutras, mantras, or other Buddhist texts.

The moment Ding Zhen took out the wooden fish, Zuo Mo and the others changed expression!

Seventh-grade talisman!

This was definitely a seventh-grade talisman!

It was not surprising that Ding Zhen had a seventh-grade talisman. No one would believe that a yuanying xiuzhe from Xuan Kong Temple would not have a seventh-grade talismans. Zuo Mo and the others knew the power of a seventh grade talisman. Zong Ru's prayer wheel was a seventh-grade talisman.

Both were seventh-grade talismans but the power they had in the hands of jindan and yuanying was drastically different. Seventh-grade talismans were the top talismans jindan could use and due to limitations in cultivation, jindan xiuzhe usually could only express twenty percent of a seventh-grade talisman's potential, the great majority could only use one-tenth. Yuanying xiuzhe could use all the potential of a seventh-grade talisman.

The strength of a xiuzhe depended on many factors. Ling power, the quality of the spell cultivated, the depth of personal understanding, talismans etc, but the chasm in power between yuanying and jindan was one that was uncrossable. No matter in what skill, yuanying xiuzhe had an absolute advantage.

So when he saw the wooden fish that Ding Zhen took out was a seventh-grade talisman, Zuo Mo instantly had a bad feeling.

The destruction that a yuanying xiuzhe pushed to the edge could release

Looking at Ding Zhen that was holding the wooden fish and mallet with a grave expression, Zuo Mo could only hope that Bing Yao would be able to withstand the attack.

Yuanying was still something that made him feel unconfident

Zuo Mo tried to keep his expression calm but Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were full of fighting spirit.

Ding Zhen sat down on the ground as though he was not surrounded. He put the wooden fish next to him, his head bent low and his eyes looked down as he started to drum against the fish and chant.

Bom bom bom!

The sounds from the wooden fish seemed to come from the ancient temples in deep valleys and were just faintly discernable.

The light in the surroundings slowly dimmed. The blueness of the ice mist in their view was consumed by a darkness. Figures seemed to walk out of the darkness and solidify. Those were dhyana xiu half-dressed in monk robes with exposed shoulders. These figures did not seem to see Zuo Mo's group, and bent at their waists. A dot of candle light lit up in empty space.

The dhyana xiu continued to bend down, and ignite candle fires.

The dots of candle fire lit up one after another, swaying like the stars in the sky.

Waves of Buddhist song came from the figures candle lights.

Zuo Mo's face was full of astonishment. Wei Sheng tightly gripped the black sword as excitement pulsed furiously in his eyes. He murmured to himself, "Is this the true [Domain]?"

"Domain?" Zuo Mo recovered from his shock. Hearing this, he was stunned. "He's a sword xiu?"

Zuo Mo only knew that domain was a high level of sword essence. Eldest Shixiong had reached the edge of comprehending it.

"Not a sword xiu," Wei Sheng's burning gaze did not move as he said gravely, "No matter if it is sword xiu, seal xiu, dhyana xiu, when they cultivate to a certain stage, the paths all merge together with the comprehension of [Domain]!"

Zong Ru explained at this time, "The dhyana xiu call this the [Great Freedom]." His tone exposed his longing. His comprehension ability was not as high as Wei Sheng. Even though he possessed the rare wish power, his level was not high and he had not reached the stage of [Domain] yet.

Zuo Mo did not blush at his own ignorance of cultivation. He rubbed his chin and asked, “Is this an illusion? This thieving baldy is skilled in illusory spells, we almost got tricked on the way here!”

“It is not an illusory art.” Wei Sheng shook his head and struggled, “I do not know how to explain but he is very powerful. We need to be careful.”

“A yuanying thieving baldy is still a yuanying!” Zuo Mo agreed.

“No, that is not what I mean.” Wei Sheng shook his head again. “[Domain] is a dividing line. There is a world of a difference between those who have and have not comprehended it. [Domain] is related to comprehension but not cultivation. Not all yuanying can comprehend [Domain]!”

Zuo Mo instantly became nervous. “Eldest Shixiong is saying this thieving baldy is a high level thieving baldy among the yuanying thieving baldies?”

Wei Sheng had a conflicted expression. “No and yes... the implications to our situation are about the same.”

“How many rounds can we survive against him?” Zuo Mo decided to ask a very pragmatic question.

“I don’t know.” Wei Sheng shook his head. “We may not even be able to stand up against one move. Shidi, your” When he said

this, Wei Sheng had a wary expression. He instantly halted and then said indistinctly, “That strange I don’t understand much of it.”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo instantly understood. Even though Wei Sheng did not state it clearly, what he meant was that the possibility they wouldn’t last one move was very high. He instantly said weakly, “Why don’t we hide behind Big Brother Bing Yao? It seems that Big Brother Bing Yao is very powerful.”

Bing Yao was standing in a patch of figures and candlelights without any trace of panic on his face. The ten hair-thin blue rays of light floated in the air. They continuously grew. The other ends of the rays reached deep into the darkness and the end could not be seen.

It was clear this was a battle of a higher level, one that surpassed the abilities of Zuo Mo and the others.

Ding Zhen’s light sigh came from the sea of candlelight, “A branch of the ancients is as wondrous as expected! This one’s Lantern Light Buddhist Domain is not completely successful. Powerful!”

The ground under Bing Yao’s feet was covered with faint blue ice mist in a radius of one zhang. The blue light that it released was abnormally eye-catching against this black sea of candlelight.

Bing Yao’s expression was cold but a hint of admiration flashed through his eyes. “If we were not in the ice mist, I am not a match

for you.”

His expression suddenly turned stern as the blue light flashed through his eyes. “But right now, die!”

His hands spread, the ten blue strands of light suddenly brightened and flying into the air!

Innumerable blue threads of light swept through the candlelight sea and the dhyana xiu that were igniting candles.

Everywhere the lights passed an extremely cold frost spread in all directions.

The candle lights that were swept by the blue light did not extinguish. They seemed to stop as though they were frozen. The white frost that came after the lights spread onto the surfaces of the flames. The frost then thickened and encased and sealed the candle lights.

The glowing ice crystals were regular cubes. At the center of each cube was a frozen candle light. The light it released refracted within the cube, becoming bright and eerie.

The ice crystals that sealed the candle lights floated in the air like stars.

Ding Zhen’s brows moved, his expression becoming even more dignified and authoritative.

The red squiggly sutra characters on the wooden fish and mallet seemed to come alive and slowly move.

Suddenly, a golden sutra character flew out of the mouth of the wooden fish. Then a stream of golden sutra characters flew out of the wooden fish into the air.

In a flash, the sky was filled with gold and glimmering sutra characters!

A sutra character floated past Zong Ru, Eyes closed, Zong Ru's body shuddered violently, and a shocked expression rose on his face!

Chapter 535 - Sneak Attack

The sutra characters were like leaves floating in the wind that scattered into every corner.

These beautiful gold leaves carried the calm presence unique to dhyana xiu and made people unconsciously intoxicated. Zong Ru's expression suddenly changed and he stepped forward. Threads of wish power wrapped onto the Crossed Prayer Wheel and the talisman lit up!

A circle of sutra characters suddenly lit up on the prayer wheel. The faint gold light covered Zuo Mo and Wei Sheng behind him.

Dong!

The sounds of dhyana chanting echoed!

All of the sutra characters suddenly exploded. They turned to slender golden lines that swept through every part of the space!

The ice crystals that had been floating in the air were struck by the gold lights. With crisp sounds, they turned to ice shards! In this time, the space became filled with ice shards. The candle flames that had been sealed in ice suddenly exploded in size. Each of them were the size of a fist and wavered as they floated in the air.

The light shield that Zong Ru had released was unusually fragile in front of these minuscule golden lights!

The two were not on the same level of power. Innate differences were completely revealed now.

The shield of light shattered instantly. Zong Ru gave a muffled grunt and stumbled back multiple steps.

Wei Sheng's expression changed slightly. He held the black sword across his body. A hole suddenly seemed to open in the space in front of him. The golden lights were instantly consumed by this hole!

A imperceptible sound came from Ding Zhen.

He glanced at Wei Sheng with slight surprise. He had a high opinion of Wei Sheng before but he had never thought that this youth that looked outrageously young had already reached the border of [Domain]!

Such a genius!

Which sect did he come from how did they end up together with the mist people?

Did this sect dare to publicly break the rules of the Four Realms?

Ding Zhen's praise and puzzlement swept past. In his eyes, Wei Sheng's [Domain] was crude and weak. Ding Zhen did not hold any

real power in the sect, but due to this, he could focus more on cultivation.

Twenty years ago, he had stepped into the doorway of [Domain] and created his Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain. His exploration and perfecting during these twenty years had caused his Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain to grow significantly.

The sect leader of Xuan Kong Temple was one of the rare few that knew Ding Zhen's true power so even when he knew that Tian Huan's Sheng Wu Hai had been defeated and retreated from Cloud Sea Jie, the sect leader had still believed that Ding Zhen had the power to complete this mission.

The air vibrated as though there was an invisible hand that gathered all the golden hairs of light. It formed an enormous whirlpool that suddenly appeared in front of Wei Sheng.

The hair thin lines entered the hole in front of Wei Sheng.

The hole suddenly shook!

Wei Sheng's expression suddenly changed. Before he could react, the hole exploded with an enormous bang! Wei Sheng's body shook but he did not retreat even one step. A trace of blood dripped out the corner of his mouth. Injured, Wei Sheng did not give up. His burning gaze was locked onto Ding Zhen!

Of determined personality, such a good talent

Ding Zhen couldn't help but praise inside, it was a pity

A thread of sharp light flashed through Ding Zhen's sharp and gentle eyes!

Bing Yao's expression was very ugly. The other's strength clearly surpassed his. The mist people that had lost their totem had struggled to survive for tens of thousands of years in the depths of the cloud sea. Without realizing it, their strength had degraded!

This kind of degradation was made clearer when they faced a top sect like Xuan Kong Temple.

No matter what, they could not let him escape!

Bing Yao knew that if the other escaped, what was waiting for the mist people was gradual extermination. Compared to Xuan Kong Temple, the present mist people tribe was as fragile as a baby.

But we found Lan!

Bing Yao believed the mist people tribe that had found Lan again would become strong just like they were tens of thousands of years ago!

But that required time they definitely could not let this person leave alive!

Bing Yao had never felt such a deep belief before. His pupils became even more transparent and blue as though all impurities had been eliminated. They reflected the burning sea of candlelights.

A faint blue and glacial presence rose from Bing Yao's feet.

Bing Yao closed his eyes, and raised his arms up high. The ten blue threads of light burrowed into the darkness like roots.

Ding Zhen's expression changed slightly. He had not expected the other to go all out so quickly! Bing Yao's resolve caused Ding Zhen's dhyana heart to waver for the first time.

This thread of wavering and hesitation was an extremely fatal weakness!

Bing Yao opened his eyes. A blue light flashed through his pupils. Without any warning the blue threads of light shattered and scattered!

Everywhere the eye looked there were broken fragments of the blue threads of light. They were like rootless willow branches that slowly fell.

Ding Zhen's eyes became extremely wary. His ling power furiously flooded into the wooden hammer in his hand.

Dong dong dong!

With every strike against the wooden fish, the candle lights floating in the air would jump and the flames would grow a fraction bigger.

“Karmic fire!” Zong Ru’s face was ashen. He has already been wounded in the previous attack and his voice was hoarse.

Zuo Mo had originally been thinking of how to dodge but Zong Ru and Wei Sheng’s injuries caused him to throw his thought of dodging away. New and old grievances gathered. He stared hatefully at Ding Zhe and searched for a chance to attack the other!

When he saw the Karmic Fire pulsing, he smiled darkly.

Playing with fire! Who was more skilled than he was?

Even if the other was an old yuanying monster, he wasn’t afraid! His road to prosperity had almost started through playing with fire.

Karmic Fire was an extremely poisonous fire of the dhyana xiu. If one was touched, even their souls would burn to dust. Even yuanying xiuzhe feared it!

But Zuo Mo was not afraid!

The Karmic Fire was powerful but it was a sixth-grade flame, the same level as the Great Day Banded Flame. Even more, he also had the wondrous treasure of the Sun Crystal Seed!

The power difference between himself and the other was great. Even if Zuo Mo was more skilled in controlling fire, he would not have any chance of victory if he directly faced Ding Zhen.

But Zuo Mo was such a dark and cunning person, would he face Ding Zhen openly?

Eldest Shixiong's speculation allowed Zuo Mo to understand the difference in power. Zong Ru and Wei Sheng's wounds after their attacks allowed Zuo Mo to gain a deep understanding of this difference. There was no chance if he charged from the front. He forced down the battle spirit inside and patiently waited for a chance!

He was like a poisonous snake hiding in the dark waiting for the chance to deliver a fatal strike!

When he saw the candle fire that grew explosively reach towards the thread of light, he did not hesitate to act!

His hands spread apart and the Great Day Banded Flame was released without any restraint. The layers of banded flame flowered angrily!

In the darkness, Zuo Mo was instantly swallowed by the Great

Day Banded Flame. He seemed to be made from flame with layers of bright flame around him and was extremely eye-catching!

The karmic fire strangely paused for a brief moment!

The karmic fire was an extremely yin fire but the Great Day Banded Flame was an extremely yang flame. When the Great Day Banded Flame was released, the Karmic Fire in the sky was affected!

This was the most basic conflict of yin and yang in the world!

Ding Zhen's Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain had Karmic Fire incorporated in it but that was not its primary focus. He had not spent much time on processing Karmic Fire. Dhyana xiu usually disliked the maliciousness of Karmic Fire, a preference which gave Zuo Mo this opportunity.

The pause was extremely short. But in this extremely brief moment, those blue strands of light slipped past and landed on the ground!

Ding Zhen's expression suddenly changed!

How was this possible!

That guy ... he hadn't detected any abnormality at all!

Ding Zhen almost didn't believe his eyes. He had met Zuo Mo's group a few times, but every time, his gaze was drawn to Wei Sheng and Zong Ru. He had never spared Zuo Mo a thought. In his eyes, Zuo Mo was so average Ding Zhen wouldn't be able to discover him in the crowd.

But this youth that looked extremely average had suddenly given him a fatal blow!

Such a poisonous personality! He was able to hide for so long. A wave of coldness rose in Ding Zhen's mind but at this time, he did not have the time to look at Zuo Mo. Those fragile-looking blue strands of silk gave him a dangerous feeling!

Such a strong feeling of danger had not appeared for over two decades!

The moment the blue strands landed on the ground, they burrowed underground. Patches of blue sprouts quickly rose out of the ground!

The feeling of danger increased, so strong that Ding Zhen felt as though he was standing at the edge of a cliff. If he wasn't careful, he would fall into an abyss. Ding Zhen started to sweat and his face was pale.

He could clearly feel the blue sprouts breaking through his Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain easily like they were passing through soil!

What what was this?

Innumerable threads entered the ground and grew into blue sprouts! In almost an instant, his Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain was riddled full of holes!

It had been defeated like this

In this moment, Ding Zhen's expression was dazed. Twenty years ago, he comprehended his own [Domain] and named it Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain. Over the next twenty years, he spent almost all of his time perfecting it.

It became stronger and more complete. He believed that xiuzhe in yuanying could not defeat his Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain!

The Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain that was now full of holes continuously trembled, the candle flames wavering. A thought suddenly appeared in Ding Zhen's mind, a candle flame flickering in the wind!

He instantly aged, his smooth skin quickly overtaken by wrinkles!

His heart was dead.

The darkness dissipated, the candle flames extinguished, the changing faded. The wooden hammer in Ding Zhen's hand cracked, the wooden fish shattering into dozens of pieces and

falling to the ground.

Ding Zhen's gaze suddenly locked onto Zuo Mo.

His gaze suddenly became vicious. A black line that squiggled like an earthworm climbed onto his face and was alarming to see!

It was him! It was him that ruined the Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain!

Zong Ru's face suddenly changed. "Not good! He has gone insane!"

As the warning was spoken, Ding Zhen disappeared from his spot!

After Bing Yao's attack, his expression was tired. Seeing this, his expression changed but he wasn't even able to move a finger!

Zuo Mo reacted quickly. Before Zong Ru finished speaking, he detected danger. He instinctively prepared to dodge but he suddenly thought about the two behind him

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru were unable to fight. After A Gui had acted against the mist person, she had sank back into silence, and the Little Ones

Blood flooded Zuo Mo's head. He moved forward rather than

back!

There was no time to turn shen power into the three powers. He could not worry about such things. Channeling his shen power, his body moved towards Ding Zhen in a strange posture!

Chapter 536 - Sudden Change!

All of the shen power in his body pushed into his palm, and a layer of faint golden light appeared on Zuo Mo's hand.

In this instant, Zuo Mo had a feeling that he could destroy anything. However, this feeling came quickly and left even quicker.

The awesome power of Ding Zhen came at him without any finesse. The air solidified, and terror gripped Zuo Mo as he strangled and seemed to be suffocated. Time seemed to freeze at this moment. There were dense black lines etched across Ding Zhen's face like spiderwebs, and a vicious and bloodthirsty smile was extremely clear. Zuo Mo's mind was completely blank as he furiously slapped his hands forward!

Boom!

Zuo Mo felt as though he was hit by an rampaging rhinoceros. His vision darkened and he lost consciousness.

His body was powerfully deflected and instantly disappeared into the thick ice mist.

“Die! You will all die!” Ding Zhen was crazy. A golden palm print was visible on the front of his chest. He did not seem to detect it, the presence he exuded shrouded the entire battlefield. The mad Ding Zhen had let his power run berserk while in his death throes!

Everyone watched as Zuo Mo's figure disappeared into the ice mist but they were unable to move their bodies. Silly bird's claws were tightly pierced into the ground, all the feathers on her body standing up as she trembled to resist the pressure of Ding Zhen. She looked unblinkingly in the direction that Zuo Mo had disappeared with bloodshot eyes!

The most powerful of the Little Ones, Silly Bird, had a hard time resisting this pressure and the rest were worse off.

–Except for A Gui.

The moment Zuo Mo disappeared, a purple energy suddenly flashed through A Gui's eyes as she leapt at Zuo Mo!

“Die!” Ding Zhen shouted viciously as he struck out at A Gui's back.

A Gui did not seem to detect him.

Pia!

Ding Zhen's hand struck A Gui's back. A Gui's figure shook but she used this force to increase her speed!

Like an arrow shooting from a bow, she entered the ice mist.

Ding Zhen did not chase her. He roared with insane laughter! Suddenly, a bolt of bright light was released from inside Ding Zhen's body. It was like a sharp gold sword that cut through his body!

Ding Zhen's body froze!

Countless golden lights shot out of his body like he was a hedgehog.

Boom!

An enormous golden ball of light illuminated the entire cloud sea like the rising sun!

Everyone found their visions turned had white and were unable to see anything. The powerful wave rampaged in all directions. The explosion of a yuanying surpassed the power of any talisman.

Every person present was like a fallen leaf that was swept up in the storm. They were unable to steady their bodies and were scattered around.

When the dust settled and the light dissipated, their visions recovered, what they saw was an enormous and deep hole that was over twenty li in diameter. It showed them just how powerful the explosion had been!

The first thing Wei Sheng and the others did after recovering was

search for Zuo Mo and A Gui.

The other mist people quickly recovered. It was fortunate that Bing Yao had told the other mist people to retreat at the start. The injuries they received was much less compared to those in the fight, and they now flew within the ice mist to search for Zuo Mo and A Gui.

The Buddhist beads on Bie Han's wrist suddenly lit u,. expressionlessly fiddled with the beads as a voice entered his ears.

“In the Dhyana Tower, Ding Zhen's candle flame has extinguished.”

The messenger's voice was extremely aloof and without any emotion. After hearing this, there was only silence. Bie Han seemed to only have heard some news unrelated to him and his expression did not change at all.

At his feet, several Xuan Kong Temple outer sect disciples were lying in puddles of blood.

The light of the transportation formation continuously flashed and was eerily reflected by the blood covering the ground.

A short time later, a brawny figure came out of the transportation formation.

When the incomer saw Bie Han, his expression was excited as he dashed forward. “Your Highness!”

If Zuo Mo saw this scene, he would be shocked and recognize this person—Fu Feng! A mysterious person that suddenly appeared in Sky Moon Jie and of unknown origins.

“This subordinate heard that Stars in Daytime had occurred in Sky Moon Jie and assumed it was Your Highness. This subordinate had not expected Your Highness to be at Xuan Kong Temple!” Fu Feng tried to keep his tone calm but it was possible to hear the excitement within!

“It caused great trouble for you.” The excitement flashed through Bie Han’s eyes and disappeared. He quickly recovered his usual calmness.

“This one cannot accept it ... this one cannot accept it ...” Fu Feng who was such a big person didn’t know where to put his hands and feet.

“Do not come too near to me. There are jinzhi on my body,” Bie Han said indifferently. “We need to return as soon as possible. They will receive notice about my escape soon.”

“Those damned thieving baldies!” Murderousness filled Fu Feng’s eyes. He then said deferentially to Bie Han. “Your Highness, do not worry, everything has been arranged! We will quickly return home. There is nothing big about the jinzhi of Xuan Kong

Temple!”

Fu Feng’s tone was filled with pride.

Bie Han turned his head to look at Sin Battalion behind him.

“Your Highness, this is” Fu Feng was slightly puzzled.

“Sin Battalion,” Bie Han said indifferently.

Fu Feng’s eyes were wide as he looked in disbelief at this silent battalion.

“I’m taking you home,” Bie Han said lightly to this silent battalion.

————

“Bie Han took Sin Battalion and disappeared?” A deep voice came from behind the cloth. Even the stupidest person could hear the thick anger in Sect Leader’s voice.

The disciple that was reporting was nervous but he still faithfully narrated the events.

He spoke of how the outer sect disciples guarding of the transportation formations were killed, how they were unable to

contact Bie Han through any method, and could not find any trace of Bie Han.

The sect leader behind the cloth sank into silence.

This was a deathly silence. The air inside the hall seemed to become solid and suffocating to this disciple.

The sect leader suddenly spoke, “What about the jinzhi? Didn’t he have jinzhi on his body?”

“There was no response from the jinzhi.” The disciple was kowtowing on the ground.

“I understand, you can leave.” The sect leader’s tone became normal again, and the heavy air in the room lightened back to normal.

The disciple released a breath and hurriedly bowed in farewell. When he retreated out of the hall, he found that his back was completely soaked in sweat.

Inside the hall.

“Investigate Bie Han’s identity,” the sect leader suddenly said.

“Yes!” a voice answered.

Wei Sheng and the others had terrible complexions.

They had not found Zuo Mo and A Gui after ten days of searching. All of the mist people tribe had been sent out to search every inch of the ground but there was no discovery. Zuo Mo and A Gui seemed to have disappeared into thin air.

Bing Yao's expression was not good. He had not yet recovered from the fight against Ding Zhen.

Looking at Bing Yao, Wei Sheng asked through his teeth, "Is there any news?" Zong Ru and the Little Ones all raised their heads. They had also not healed from their wounds and additionally they could not move as easily as the mist people through the ice mist.

Bing Yao gave a grimace and shook his head. After a moment of silence, he suddenly said, "My clansmen have searched the area within a thousand li and still haven't found anything. I suspect ..."

"Suspect what?" Wei Sheng's gave focused.

"Suspect they have entered the restricted lands!" Bing Yao gritted out. "They definitely should not have flown out far. There is only one place within a thousand li that has not been searched, the restricted lands!"

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru's heart sank. They recalled how Bing Yao had been willing to sacrifice his life to prevent people from entering the restricted lands.

The two sides became silent at the obvious rise in tensions.

At this time, a disturbance suddenly came from the door.

A mist person lead an unfamiliar man about thirty-years old into the room. "Clan Leader, he says he is Mister Zuo's messenger."

Wei Sheng and Zong Ru suddenly stood up. Wei Sheng's gaze was sharp as he said gravely, "Who are you? Why do I not know you?"

Wei Sheng's presence was as sharp as a sword. Even though his wounds had not healed, the presence clearly was outside the limits of what the other could endure. Seeing the other's ashen face, Wei Sheng realized that he was too impatient and hurriedly dampened his presence.

The expression of the incomer recovered slightly but his voice was still trembling. "This one ... this one is a good friend of Kang De. A few ... few days ago, I received a message from him. He begged me to come here ... to send a message!"

Then he tremblingly took out a jade scroll and respectfully presented it.

Kang De? Hadn't he gone back already?

Wei Sheng took the jade scroll and started to read it. His expression became dazed and then he handed the jade scroll to Zong Ru with a weird expression. When Zong Ru's consciousness entered the jade scroll, his expression also became strange.

"You do this, your illusory spells are better than mine," Wei Sheng said to Zong Ru with a grimace.

Zong Ru's hands flipped and the message appeared in front of everyone.

The one speaking was Lil' Miss. Lil' Miss said they received a message from Zuo Mo saying that he and A Gui were fine but they were unable to come back in the short term etc etc, telling Wei Sheng and Zong Ru to not worry and first go back to Turtle Island to heal.

Everyone exhaled in relief.

Noticing Bing Yao's expression of release, Wei Sheng bowed towards him and said apologetically, "I was very offensive towards Clan Leader just now, Clan Leader, please have tolerance!"

They had seen all the people from the mist people tribe going out and search these past days, and were grateful yet just now, they had almost started a conflict with Bing Yao over the restricted lands.

Bing Yao said guiltily, “The one who should say sorry is me. I’m am ashamed not have to have taken better care of Brother Zuo!”

Receiving a message from Turtle Island, Wei Sheng and Zong Ru’s hearts were at rest. The information was definitely true. Kang De had never seen the mist people. If Zuo Mo didn’t give him any directions, how could the messenger find this place?

Even though the words inside the jade scroll were general and vague, Wei Sheng and Zong Ru did not think deeply about it. They were very used to anything related to Zuo Mo to be out of the norm.

Since Zuo Mo could pass on this news, it was enough to show that he was in no mortal danger at this time.

This was the news that made them the happiest.

————

If Wei Sheng and Zong Ru knew Zuo Mo’s present situation, they definitely would be worried.

Zuo Mo’s skeleton had almost came apart. Every time A Gui took a step, he felt a wave of enormous pain but he did not make a sound. He had spent ten whole days on A Gui’s back.

A Gui's situation was very terrible. The vitality in her eyes had disappeared. No matter what Zuo Mo said to her, she did not react at all.

Only when they encountered danger would the purple light in her eyes flare up again.

A Gui stopped walking, put Zuo Mo down and then silently sat down.

"A Gui, do you know what place this is?" Zuo Mo said to himself. He knew that A Gui would not respond but he still asked her.

He wasn't the only one ignorant. Pu Yao didn't know, Wei also did not know. He only knew A Gui had saved him. According to Pu Yao, A Gui had been hit by Ding Zhen in order to save him.

Strangely, Ding Zhen's strike had worsened A Gui's health but had also stimulated the purple energy in her body. It seemed to become even more powerful but Zuo Mo didn't want it to be so powerful. Thinking about the feelings of coldness and death from the purple energy, Zuo Mo did not feel good.

Compared to A Gui, Zuo Mo's state was much worse.

His shen power had dissipated, his ling power, spiritual consciousness, and mo skill tangled together. He was unable to use any power, and even worse, he wasn't even able to move a finger. The only thing he could do was talk. Any time the streams of

power inside his body collided against itself, it would cause enormous pain.

Pu Yao and Wei did not have a solution. It was the first time they saw such a strange state.

“Ah, I wonder if Eldest Shixiong and Zong Ru received my message,” Zuo Mo said to himself. Then he asked, “Hey Pu Yao, did you really send the message?”

“Stop being bothersome, you asked twenty times already!” Pu Yao’s impatient voice echoed in his sea of consciousness.

Done with his harassment, Zuo Mo threw Pu Yao to the side and said to A Gui. “A Gui, your power seems to have recovered. It is so strange, getting injured causes a recovery in your power. A Gui, if we find a water cloud embryo, would you remember the past?”

A Gui was like a wooden puppet and did not react at all.

Zuo Mo continued to chitchat to himself. “What relationship do you think we had? You have helped me so much, your relationship definitely is not a shallow one!”

Zuo Mo spoke to himself as A Gui remained motionless like a statue.

Four hours later, A Gui put Zuo Mo back on her back and continued to walk forward.

“A Gui, why don’t you fly? Did you forget how?” On her back, Zuo Mo started to speak again. “That stupid purple energy. When I cultivate my Sun Shen power to a high level, I will eliminate it!”

A Gui did not respond as she walked forward.

This was a land of death with only rocks and crags spreading out without end. There was no trace of life. They would frequently encounter sand storms. When the sand and stones in the wind hit their bodies, it was enormously painful.

But no matter how strong the wind storm, A Gui would not change her direction or stop walking.

Her small body carried Zuo Mo who was a size larger than her as she walked against the sand storm. She did not seem to know exhaustion and did not speak. Only when she had walked for a day and night would she stop and rest for four hours.

Zuo Mo was pressed against A Gui’s neck as he was carried on her back. The enormous pain in his body did not seem to be so painful. No matter how excruciating the pain was, Zuo Mo did not speak. For some reason, he did not want A Gui to hear it, even if he knew that A Gui could not hear it.

Even the stupidest person would know that he and A Gui had more than a passing acquaintance. She was probably someone really close to him.

When she did not use the purple energy, A Gui's strength was the same as the average person.

Her steps were very heavy. For her, it was slightly difficult to move Zuo Mo's weight.

“A Gui, I'm going to tell you a joke, a very funny joke”

Zuo Mo patiently talked to A Gui. She could not hear but for some reason, but still Zuo Mo wanted to talk.

Chapter 537 - Shattered Stone

Bing Yao's brow had not relaxed in the past few days. It was hard for him to accept Zuo Mo's disappearance.

He bowed respectfully towards Lan. After the constant worship from the mist people in the last two weeks, Lan's power was gradually recovering. Lan passed on the long-lost Ice Mist Shen power cultivation method to the mist people, the power of the tribe increased daily. The shadow that had hung over the tribe for tens of thousands of years was swept away. Lan received the sincere reverence of all the mist people.

“What question do you have?” Lan's faint yet authoritative voice sounded in Bing Yao's mind.

“Lan, what are the restricted lands?” Bing Yao raised his head and asked.

Lan hadn't thought that Bing Yao would ask this. He remained silent.

“Ever since we moved here, we have guarded the restricted lands for more than ten thousand years. No one ever knew what the restricted lands are or why we guard it.” Bing Yao's speaking speed was neither slow nor excited. It was filled with bewilderment.

A moment later, Lan slowly said, “The time has not come.”

“Xuan Kong Temple has already discovered this place. They definitely have a goal or they know something,” Bing Yao said straightforwardly.

“Become strong as fast as possible.” Lan’s sigh echoed in the air.

The surroundings sank into silence. No matter how Bing Yao called out, Lan no longer replied.

Disappointment flashed through Bing Yao’s eyes but he did not probe more. For him, or rather, for the great majority of the mist people, protecting and disallowing entry to the restricted lands was a tradition they had adhered to for tens of thousands of years. If it wasn’t that Zuo Mo might be stranded in the restricted lands, Bing Yao would not think to question this. Even if Ding Zhen had really entered the restricted lands, they would not have followed.

All the signs pointed to the fact that the restricted lands held an unknown secret.

Even something as powerful as Xuan Kong Temple desired this secret. What was inside the restricted lands? In order to become the sect leader Bing Yao had some skill and intelligence. Lan’s words had been sparse but he still managed to deduce a lot of information.

To enter the restricted lands, they were not strong enough

Bing Yao’s gaze became determined as he left the altar in silence.

They advanced day and night.

Zuo Mo dared to swear that he probably would never have another chance in this life where he would walk so far—that wasn't right-carried so far. A Gui's body was on the verge of falling apart, but seemed to contain astounding power. One day, one night, four hours rest, she did not know exhaustion.

Zuo Mo was like a chatterbox and continued to talk. In the past, he definitely never would have imagined there would be a day when he spoke so much.

Lying on A Gui's back, the bare feet that he had sighed countless times over were trembling and straining with each step. He could clearly feel it. With every step, Zuo Mo's heart shook. An indescribable feeling spread in his heart to the point he felt he wanted to be silent but he knew that he could not be silent. He kept on telling himself he had to do something.

Other than these meaningless words, he could not do anything.

There had never been a time, Zuo Mo had never hoped and wished like this, wished that he could use the shen power that dominated his body to exchange for one thread of ling power. Just one thread of ling power—and he could create a paper crane.

But there wasn't one iota.

“Ah, A Gui, I've found that you are undefeatable, the more you fight, the stronger you get, the more you are wounded, the stronger you get.” Zuo Mo talked in a heartless tone, “Have you been hiding your power in the past? I've always found it strange about why you are so good to me. Did you owe me jingshi in the past? Hey, do you really owe me jingshi”

“This ghastly place doesn't even have any birds pooping here. Did we come to another ancient battlefield? No no no, that was careless of me, I didn't mean to say that! A Gui, you didn't hear a thing”

“We've walked for twenty days and didn't even see a stalk of grass, this is so depressing”

With only Zuo Mo's nattering as company, they walked for another ten days.

When Zuo Mo saw the streak of green on the horizon, Zuo Mo was euphoric.

“A Gui A Gui! Look! Look! There, there! Oh, Heavens, hahahaha, we're saved! We're saved! A Gui! Can you see? Can you see?”

Zuo Mo was extremely excited and his exhales blew up A Gui's hair.

A Gui did not respond and walked forward.

“A Gui, you are a genius! Oh oh oh ! A great genius! Such a great distance and you could find the direction, you are really a genius! Hahahaha, we need to find someone and then heal. Once I recover, I will take you to find a water cloud embryo again, I will”

“You are too excited.”

A rough voice came from behind him.

Zuo Mo's voice abruptly halted and his heart shook. The inside of his body was a mess to the point that he didn't even detect someone was so close to him! He was unable to turn his neck and could not see the person behind him.

“I'm very sorry, my body is unwell and I cannot turn my head.” Zuo Mo tried to keep his tone normal.

“En?” The other was slightly surprised. A figure flashed in front of Zuo Mo that said with astonishment, “So sickly! I pity you, little girl, you don't have it easy!”

Zuo Mo finally saw the other's appearance.

The other was of large stature and about twice Zuo Mo's height. His skin was a sandy yellow, and a pair of faintly red eyes were sharp. Zuo Mo's gaze landed on the other's arm. From his wrist to the elbow, it was wrapped in a layer of brown scales.

Mo!

Zuo Mo was so shocked he almost shouted. Had he come to a mo territory?

“He is a lizard mo.” In the sea of consciousness, Wei destroyed Zuo Mo’s last hopes. However, Wei’s tone held a thread of excitement. “Oh, faintly red eyes, he probably has the blood of flame lizards.”

“Lizard mo Big Brother, good day!” Zuo Mo wanted to put a smile on his face but his face was paralyzed.

“Hmph, silvery tongued boy, you don’t look like a good person.” The wariness in the eyes of the lizard mo dissipated. The two in front of him didn’t look like a threat at all. His brow suddenly creased. “Where did you come from?”

“The direction we came from.” Zuo Mo’s tone was joyful. “We walked more than thirty days, I almost went crazy!”

“Thirty days?” A hint of suspicion flashed across the eyes of Uncle Lizard Mo. “You mean you two passed through the Shattered Stone Desert?”

“Shattered Stone Desert?” I don’t know. We were exploring some ruins and might have accidentally activated something. As a result, we were transported to this damned place.” Zuo Mo found an

explanation that seemed extremely reasonable. His paralyzed face was the best disguise.

The last hint of suspicion in the eyes of Uncle Lizard Mo left and he said with a snort, “You look half-dead, and you explore ruins. You are very lucky to not have died in the Gobi Desert.”

Zuo Mo’s heart eased slightly. This Uncle Lizard Mo’s tone was bold but he could hear the friendliness.

“Let’s go, I’ll count this as doing an act of kindness.” Uncle Lizard Mo glanced at A Gui and complimented, “You, Boy, are really fortunate!”

Finishing, he walked at the front.

A Gui seemed to understand and walked behind Uncle Lizard Mo.

“Uncle, what is this place?” Zuo Mo asked familiarly. Anyone that had talked to themselves for thirty days couldn’t help but be enthusiastic.

“Shattered Stone Town,” Uncle Lizard Mo replied without turning his head.

“Shattered Stone Town ... uh, what jie does this belong to?” Zuo Mo asked in puzzlement.

“Shattered Stone Jie.” Uncle Lizard Mo did not turn his head.

In the sea of consciousness.

“Wei, you were among the mo before. Do you know where Shattered Stone Jie is?” Zuo Mo asked Wei, full of anticipation.

Wei coughed and said, “You know, my masters are usually mo of high status and were nobility, this kind of small place”

“Hahahaha!” Pu Yao’s laugh echoed in the sea of consciousness.

We’s skin was clearly thicker than the average as he looked at Zuo Mo with composure.

Zuo Mo had lost control of his body but this did not affect his ability to make expressions in the sea of consciousness.

–Disdain!

Yes, it was disdain, disdain as he looked down, deep disdain!

Pu Yao laughed even more freely as the red-black yao fire danced.

“You two, one of you boasts every day you are a sky yao, arrogant and domineering, one of you acts like a seer, ask me! Ask me! Ask me! You don’t even know where Shattered Stone Jie is, how can

you not know the answer to such a simple question?” Old and new grievances combining, Zuo Mo pointed at the pair and swore, “I should have seen the truth about you both a long time ago! One used a stupid bead in the past and preyed on my youth and inexperience, telling me how much jingshi I can make with it, but I didn’t get any jingshi at all! Now the other comes in. Not even speaking of the rent, you always talk about that oath and that noble status. Ha, a person that doesn’t even know Shattered Stone Jie has the qualifications to talk about status?”

Pu Yao’s laugh stopped. Wei’s smile froze on his face. Even the yao fire stopped pulsing.

After he finished scolding, Zuo Mo instantly felt much better. With a snort, he left the sea of consciousness.

Uncle Lizard Mo was not very powerful and did not cultivate a mo physique. However, his body was strong and he strode forward. He noticed that it took A Gui great effort to walk and stopped. “Hey, Little Girl, let me carry him!”

A Gui did not seem to hear him and continued to walk forward.

Zuo Mo hurriedly apologized to Uncle Lizard Mo, “Uncle, sorry, she cannot hear.”

Uncle Lizard Mo’s gaze instantly gentled greatly. He seemed to think of something and was slightly inattentive but he quickly raised his head. He walked together with A Gui and snorted, “You two, one sick and the other crippled. You don’t stay at home but

come out to run around, you don't want to live, right?"

Zuo Mo could only smile weakly. He didn't know how to respond.

"You guys, fine, you won't listen even if I talk." Uncle Lizard Mo shook his head and then said, "You can first stay at my place. Since I live alone, the space isn't used."

Finishing, he didn't listen to Zuo Mo's words of gratefulness and walked forward.

When they reached Shattered Stone Town, Zuo Mo saw some other mo. It could be seen that these mo were respectful towards Uncle Lizard Mo, and their gazes were full of curiosity as they looked at A Gui and Zuo Mo. However, several female mo looked at Zuo Mo with disdain and unfriendliness.

Contrary to what Zuo Mo had imagined, not all of these mo were lizard mo or one type of mo. This seemed to be a place where all kinds of mo lived together.

Shattered Stone Jie, Shattered Stone Town where was this ge was going to shatter soon

Chapter 538 - Arrangements

Shattered Stone Town was not large and did not have a large population. The climate was extremely dry, because it was at the border of the Gobi Desert. It was also extremely poor and did not produce any specialty products. The survival here was extremely primitive and rural, the only thing in this place that held any value were the Iron Digging Ants. This was a very practical kind of ant that was well-liked by mo that liked playing with insects.

Every year, there would be some mo that would come to search for Iron Digging Ants. Only during these times would Shattered Stone Town seem lively.

However, for the residents of the little town, they did not feel this place was desolate.

Uncle Lizard Mo looked very brawny but he had a very delicate name, An Ya, In reality, Zuo Mo did not feel this elegant name had any connection with the Uncle Lizard Mo.

Uncle An Ya was very friendly. Even though his tone was slightly fierce, he took great care of Zuo Mo and A Gui, especially A Gui. The hints of sorrow that occasionally flashed through Uncle An Ya's eyes as he looked at A Gui caused Zuo Mo to speculate that Uncle An Ya had once had a daughter that was like A Gui.

It could be seen that Uncle An Ya held great authority in Shattered Stone Town. He was responsible for teaching mo skills to the young mo and the idol for many of the youths.

“Notice your footwork. Before you learn to fly, footwork is the only thing you can use!”

“Power! What did I teach you? Gather your power together, it will only be strong then. So soft, do you want A Gui to laugh at you?”

The young mo that heard this blushed.

“Work hard!” Zuo Mo who was lying on A Gui’s back shouted. These young mo blushed even more.

A Gui was just the same as before and unreactive.

The youth of the town quickly accepted Zuo Mo and A Gui. Before they were ground down by the world, youths were always friendly and full of sympathy. In their eyes, Zuo Mo and A Gui were sick and crippled. But their worldly experiences had caused the youth to be filled with yearning and curiosity.

A Gui did not react but Zuo Mo who had become a chatterbox was the example of a friendly person. They were quickly accepted into the group.

In the Gobi Desert, A Gui would put Zuo Mo down to rest after walking for one day and night but strangely, after they came to Shattered Stone Town, she never put Zuo Mo down once. Uncle An Ya had tried a few times to get Zuo Mo down but when he saw A

Gui's instinctive wariness, he did not try any longer.

Zuo Mo could only sleep on A Gui's back. However, what made him happy was that, other than being unwilling to put him down, A Gui seemed to be able to hear some of his words.

Like right now, come out to sunbathe, watch the youth cultivate.

The lessons Uncle An Ya was teaching was extremely basic content. Zuo Mo's entire body was paralyzed but his eyes were still working. Uncle An Ya's battle experience should be very high and all of the things he taught were practical. Even Zuo Mo felt he learned a lot just watching.

He had cultivated no skills before and had even managed to get a no physique but these fundamental concepts were the part that he lacked. Especially now when he was paralyzed, Zuo Mo would frequently learn many things from listening to Uncle An Ya talk. What was even better was that one day, he found he could move a finger again.

After that, if Uncle An Ya was teaching, he would definitely go to listen. Uncle An Ya did not have any objections as what he taught was not profound content and naturally did not need to keep it a secret.

"Pretty good, Little Dong!" Uncle An Ya complemented, "After a while, you can awaken your no matrix."

A boy showed excitement. Dong Zi was the most talented out of this group of youths. He had solid fundamentals and his skill was a notch above the other youths.

However, awaken the mo matrix? Zuo Mo was slightly puzzled.

Fortunately, there was Wei “who had noble status” and knew a bit about this. “Low level mo usually only have low level mo matrixes on their body, and they are not completely developed. They need to awaken the mo matrix through other methods before it can be used.”

Zuo Mo was slightly shocked, “There’s things like this?”

Pu Yao smirked coldly and said, “The mo care the most about bloodlines because of this. The more noble the bloodline of the mo, the more powerful the mo matrix they would have and naturally the stronger they would be. Hmph, this is a succession method that degrades the most easily.”

Zuo Mo suddenly thought of a question, “Then can’t they just get mo matrixes engraved?”

Wei and Pu Yao stilled.

“Didn’t Vermillion Bird Camp have formations engraved before? Since formations are possible, why not mo matrixes? Those formations even originated from the mo matrixes!” Zuo Mo said excitedly.

“You can try,” Pu Yao said casually. He was not interested in this question. In the past, he had felt great anticipation about this problem because of his hopes that one day, he could possess his own body. But that was meaningless to him now. He and Wei could not be separated.

Since this was the case, why would he still want to work on the mo matrixes? Was there a place better than this sea of consciousness?

Wei sank into deep thought. Zuo Mo’s words were a blow for him. The mo were born with their matrixes and in their view, this was the power that the heavens gave them. No one had ever tried to engrave mo matrixes before, at least, no one had done it in the eras he had experienced.

Zuo Mo did not pay attention to these two unreliable people. He had many mo matrixes including the Golden Winged Roc which Pu Yao had given him in the past.

He decided to first go see how they activated the mo matrix. He had never seen it before and was very curious.

Also, he had a daring idea.

“Daren, tell us, when is Boss coming back?” Lei Peng smacked his

lips and seemed to be thinking of something.

“I don’t know,” Lil’ Miss said without raising his head.

“I wonder what Daren is doing, is there danger?” Lei Peng murmured to himself with a creased brow.

“You are very idle!” Lil’ Miss raised his head.

“No, no!” When Lei Peng met Lil’ Miss’ gaze, his head shook like a rattledrum. “Daren, you don’t know, Black Turtle Camp has just started and those greenhorns are so terrible”

“I think you are too idle!” Lil’ Miss interrupted Lei Peng. With just a glance, Lei Peng wilted. Lil’ Miss said lightly, “Return and tell Ma Fan that I will be inspecting your cultivation progress tomorrow.”

“Boss, no way” Lei Peng was on the verge of tears. If he returned and Ma Fan and Nian Lu learned he had caused Lil’ Miss to come visit... .. he shook just thinking about it.

Lil’ Miss smiled bashfully.

“An’s leaving, an’s leaving!” Lei Peng stumbled and crawled as he fled.

After Lei Peng left, Lil’ Miss moved his gaze and a shadow flashed

across. Wei Sheng had passed information back. The one they had fought had been a yuanying xiuzhe from Xuan Kong Temple and the other had died.

Lil' Miss knew that Xuan Kong Temple would not relent after one yuanying and three disciples had died. If they were willing to accept this loss, they would not be Xuan Kong Temple. Dhyana sects were more united than other sects and even more resistant to outsiders. When they encountered foreign enemies, the power they could gather was astounding.

When Lil' Miss received Zuo Mo's message, he prepared to do battle. According to what he knew, there had been a battalion that had already appeared in Cloud Sea Jie but for some reason, the battalion had suddenly disappeared.

The other had arrived through transportation formations and the cost to do that was already astounding. The expenditure for a inter-jie transport was amazing, and the other clearly wasn't crossing just one jie.

Even though they had not found out what power that battalion belonged to, Lil' Miss was sure that it was a battalion from Xuan Kong Temple!

But the other suddenly disappeared and Xuan Kong Temple had not made any more moves against them. Lil' Miss guessed that something important had happened so that Xuan Kong Temple did not have the attention to spare for them right now.

But they would eventually come in the end. Xuan Kong Temple would definitely send a battalion to attack Cloud Sea Jie when they had the resources.

To stop the other from suddenly appearing in Cloud Sea Jie again, Cloud Sea Jie was forbidden from creating private transportation formations. The present transportation formations were under guard but Lil' miss knew that this method was not flawless. If the other did not care about cost, it was not hard to sneak into Cloud Sea Jie and set up a transportation formation.

Did Xuan Kong Temple seem like an entity that cared about cost?

There would definitely be a fight. Lil 'Miss was not worried. He had started as an outsider and fought his way up to his position. He did not fear battle at all. However, no matter how confident he was, when he faced a titan like Xuan Kong Temple, he could not be at ease.

Fortunately, they would be fighting on home territory.

This was something that Lil' Miss rejoiced about. In this period of time, he had already started to set up. The present Turtle Island wasn't a small faction that just anyone could knead. They had the resources of one jie and Turtle Island, who wasn't weak to start with, quickly transformed. All of Turtle Island was preparing for battle, frantically training and preparing.

So what if it was Xuan Kong Temple?

If they came, he wouldn't let them go without shedding a layer of skin!

A cold light flashed through Lil' Miss' eyes.

However, there were other problems to be solved right now. Even though Shixiong had not said anything specific in the message he sent, the careful Lil' Miss detected the unusualness—Shixiong most likely was in trouble!

There was nothing in the message that said what he was doing now or when he was going to return. The message only said that they were fine now. Shixiong definitely was someone who would realize that Xuan Kong Temple would retaliate. If he was not returning at this time, then something definitely happened. It was either a matter held him up or that he could not return!

Shixiong had transportation seals and he could also set up transportation formations. He had taken all the materials required so even if he was in a mo jie, he should rationally have returned long ago.

This had only been Lil' Miss' guess, but the message Shixiong sent today completely proved Lil' Miss' speculation.

Shixiong wanted him to research where Shattered Stone Jie was.

As he had expected

“Daren, Ye Ling and Shi Dong Daren have come,” The shield platoon guard outside the door reported.

Lil’ Miss focused. “Invite them in.”

Lil’ Miss was the most protected person on Turtle Island, and even Zuo Mo’s protective detail could not compare. Zuo Mo’s personal strength was strong and usually did not need protection, unless he was fighting.

“Daren!”

Ye Ling and Shi Dong bowed.

They were puzzled at suddenly being called over.

Chapter 539 - Support

“Do either of you know Shattered Stone Jie?” Lil’ Miss asked directly.

“Shattered Stone Jie?” Ye Ling and Shi Dong exchanged a look and shook their heads.

“Haven’t heard of it.” “Never heard of it.”

Lil’ Miss couldn’t help but show disappointment.

“Daren, is Shattered Stone Jie part of the mo territories?” Ye Ling who was attentive asked. Shi Dong also looked at Lil’ Miss.

Speaking of this, Ye Ling and Shi Dong’s attitudes towards Zuo Mo and Lil’ Miss were completely different from each other. Ye Ling was completely loyal and followed Zuo Mo faithfully as he felt that Zuo Mo could possibly become the true king. His respect towards Lil’ Miss was more the kind of respect towards a commanding officer. On the other hand, Shi Dong felt doubt about Ye Ling’s idea that Zuo Mo could become king but he was truly respectful towards Lil’ Miss who had defeated him.

“En, go ask around, who knows where Shattered Stone Jie is?” Lil’ Miss said after thinking.

The two accepted the order and left.

They quickly came back to report.

“Daren, this subordinate has found it. There is a small jie called Shattered Stone Jie but it is very remote, it does not produce any special products. It is supposedly the territory of someone called Ceng Yi,” Ye Ling carefully reported. He was curious. Why was Lil’ Miss Daren interested in Shattered Stone Jie?

Did that poor and remote little jie have something of value?

When Ye Ling and Shi Dong privately talked, they both thought that their king’s great work should first start from Little Savage Jie.

Little Savage Jie was the jie they had lived in before. With the chaos rift, they could quickly enter Little Savage Jie. More importantly, Little Savage Jie was completely unprepared at this time. It would not be hard to take down the local powers with Turtle Island’s strength.

They had seen Vermillion Bird Camp’s terrifying combat capabilities, and according to their observations, the power of Vermillion Bird Camp members was still improving at a terrifying rate. This was something that amazed the two of them. High rates of growth were extremely scary for battalions that had reached that certain level of strength, like Vermillion Bird Camp.

Grey Camp was also progressing at the same rapid rate.

Being able to practice mo skills that they dreamed about made them feel like they were in a fantasy when they held it. Every mo in Grey Camp cultivated as though they were dying of thirst. They did not need to be pressured to train. Every mo was clear about the value of this mo skill.

Shi Dong's brow also furrowed. When he found out where Shattered Stone Jie was, he thought that attacking Shattered Stone Jie was not a good choice.

“Daren, Shattered Stone Jie is of no value to us.” Shi Dong was extremely proud and a pure battle general. He stated his thoughts bluntly and directly. This was also one of the important reasons that he had never been promoted.

Ye Ling knew that Shi Dong's action was not good. Just as he was going to speak to help Shi Dong out, he heard Lil' Miss speak.

“Value? Oh, I do not want Shattered Stone Jie.” Lil Miss shook his head, “But I need to you go get someone.”

Get a person?

Shi Dong had a confused expression but Ye Ling's heart jumped.

Ye Ling thought of King who had not shown himself recently!

Was it

Noticing the shock in Ye Ling's eyes, Lil' Miss smiled slightly. "Your king is in Shattered Stone Jie right now. Out of safety, I feel that we need to send some people over."

"King is in Shattered Stone Jie!" Shi Dong's eyes were wide in shock. He could not imagine how King had suddenly ran over to Shattered Stone Jie.

"Does King not have any guards?" Ye Ling was frightened.

"Only Miss A Gui." Lil' Miss spread his hands.

Ye Ling jumped like a cat whose tail was stepped on. "No guards! Heavens! How can there not be any guards! No guards, he's the king! How can we let the King enter such a dangerous place alone"

Looking at Ye Ling that was shouting as he waved his hands about, Lil' Miss was astounded.

Up until now, they had never had similar thoughts unless it was to fight on the battlefield. In the eyes of Lil' Miss and the others, Zuo Mo was like a cockroach and possessed great and strong vitality. With his cunning and slippery personality and endless bag of tricks, even if he could not win, escaping wasn't a problem.

Unless it was a special circumstance, people would rarely worry about Zuo Mo's safety.

“Not alone,” Lil’ Miss added weakly, “there is also A Gui.”

“Miss A Gui?” Ye Ling was so furious his eyes were popping out. “Miss A Gui is so gentle and fragile”

A Gui was gentle and fragile Lil’ Miss sweated slightly. Looking at Ye Ling that appeared to almost go into a rage, he interrupted, “So, so, I have decided to sent you. I believe you can fulfill this mission perfectly!”

“I, Ye Ling, will use my life to guard my King’s glory!”

Ye Ling shouted his oath!

Lil’ Miss weakly swallowed. Fanatics were really scary!

Shi Dong suddenly inserted, “Lil’ Miss Daren!”

Lil’ Miss Daren

The corner of Lil’ Miss’ eyes twitched and he narrowed his eyes. He smiled bashfully and appeared harmless.

No one had ever dared to call this “nickname” in front of him never! This damned guy

The pitiful Shi Dong who thought that Lil' Miss' actual name was Lil' Miss because Ma Fan and the others always used that name, had unwittingly stepped on a mine in a very natural fashion.

Even someone as clever as Ye Ling did not detect anything in front of Lil' Miss' gentle smile. How could Shi Dong who had a one-track mind react in time?

He said directly, "If this is the case, this subordinate suggests to first take Little Savage Jie!"

"Little Savage Jie?" Lil' Miss stilled.

"This is the jie we originally lived in, it is a little jie and does not have any strong powers." Shi Dong's words flowed. "Only by taking over Little Savage Jie can we guarantee that our avenue of retreat is not blocked off."

"Shixiong knows transportation formations," Lil' Miss said.

"Daren may not know." This time, it was Ye Ling that spoke. He had been the quartermaster and knew more about this area. "The requirements for these kind of extreme long-distance transportation formations are very stringent and the risk during use is very high. Its greatest weakness is that it will produce extremely strong power vibrations and attract the attention of the jie's strong people."

Lil' Miss' brow furrowed. "Nan Yue and Cang Ze came through

the transportation formation.”

“That only means that their jie does not have anyone strong to interfere.” Calmed down, Ye Ling was a completely different person. “Daren, the mo have a strong sense of territory. Any action that can intrude onto their territory is the same as a provocation to war. These strong people will only need to create a small amount of interference when the transportation formation is at work and the target of the transportation would shift. With a transportation of such an extreme distance, the slightest change would be the difference between life and death. Xiuzhe and yaomo have fought for so many years and never dared to used such a move before.”

“So that is why.” Lil’ Miss finally understood.

He had an unorthodox education and did not know many things that were common knowledge. Before the Sky-Splitting Calamity, everyone had been fighting at Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie. This must have been the reason.

Lil’ Miss became silent. If this was the case, taking over Little Savage Jie became extremely important. The chaos rift was the passage into the mo territories and he would only feel assured if it was in their hands.

“We only need Grey Camp and we can sweep Little Savage Jie!” Shi Dong said proudly. He raised his head and looked at Lil’ Miss’s gaze directly, full of fighting spirit!

The present Grey Camp was multiple times as strong as it was in

the past! Shi Dong had been the top battle general in Little Savage Jie before but his battalion had not been one of the top. He had always had to take the most difficult and dangerous missions. All of his subordinates were old soldiers that were experienced but were limited by their talent and their skill, they had reached a peak and could not improve.

The appearance of [Great Day Hardship Guard] was like a key to these people with great experience and took them into a completely new world.

All of them had breakthroughs!

It was due to this that Shi Dong dared to promise such a thing.

Lil' Miss made a decision after a moment of silence. "Good! Shi Dong will go to fight Little Savage Jie and Black Turtle Camp will take over guarding the chaos rift. Ye Ling and Shu Long will pick a small group from Guard Camp and go to Shattered Stone Jie. En, Nan Yue and the others will also go."

The Grey Camp were all mo and there would not be considered outsiders if they suddenly counter-attacked. If it was Vermillion Bird Camp, all of Little Savage Jie would unite together and the matter would become much more troublesome.

Ye Ling and Shi Dong took their orders.

Lil' Miss' orders were passed down at the fastest possible speed.

All of Turtle Island started to move like enormous cogs in a machine.

Shi Dong was proud but he was not stupid. He knew since he spoke in front of Lil Miss, he had to complete the mission and do well.

What could be called well?

Fast!

The faster the better!

The major powers of Little Savage Jie did not know someone was targeting them.

In secret, the guard on the chaos rift changed. Ma Fan wanted to go to the front lines but they didn't dare to disobey Lil' Miss' orders.

The first to leave was not Shi Dong, but Ye Ling and Shu Long's group. They would first enter Little Savage Jie before it became chaotic and depart for Shattered Stone Jie.

There were not many people in Shu Long's group, only about one hundred people. Under Ye Ling's suggestion, they disguised themselves as a merchant convoy.

Even though they were only one hundred people, but they were the elite. Nan Yue, Cang Ze, Ming Jue Zi were among them, and all the experts of Guard Camp were included. A Wen was present and also five flower yao.

Ye Ling was mo, Nan Yue and the others were yao, Shu Long and A Wen cultivated mo skills, the flower yao also cultivated yao arts.

This group was extremely plausible. The relationship between yao and mo was good and they were in a kind of alliance. The interactions among the common people were even more frequent and it was possible to frequently see yao in the territories of mo.

Guard Camp's mo skill, and the flower slave's yao arts were extremely profound. There wasn't any hint of a xiuzhe presence on them, and they seemed to be true-blooded yaomo.

Ye Ling had relationships and connections with all levels of society and they passed smoothly into Little Savage Jie

Even now, Little Savage Jie did not know that Shi Dong and Ye Ling had betrayed them. At the beginning, they sent the two in order to test the waters and did not pay much attention. After they defected, Grey Camp had continued to guard the chaos rift so, naturally, no one suspected them.

Looking at the scenery that was completely different than the xiuzhe world, Shu Long and the others were astounded.

Out of worry for Zuo Mo's safety, all of them were burning with impatience and headed towards Shattered Stone Jie at top speed.

But Shattered Stone Jie was too far away, they needed time.

Chapter 540 - Change Position!

Hearing the news that Shu Long and Ye Ling were coming to help him came to Zuo Mo through Pu Yao via the Ten Finger Prison, so Zuo Mo was in even less of a hurry to leave. He decided to stay in Shattered Stone Town to wait for Shu Long and Ye Ling. With his and A Gui's present states, running around was the same as seeking death. It was safer to stay in Shattered Stone Town.

"A Gui, Shu Long and the others will soon come. By that time, we will be safe," Zuo Mo said excitedly to A Gui. He hadn't wanted to tell Lil' Miss and the others because he didn't want them to worry and also because he felt there wasn't any way that they could help him solve this problem even if he told them. He hadn't expected Lil' Miss to actually send people to get them in a long-distance journey.

This was a true long distance journey. He didn't know how many jie they would have to pass through from Cloud Sea Jie to Shattered Stone Jie!

Truthfully, he still didn't know why he and A Gui had suddenly appeared here. Even Pu Yao and Wei didn't know what happened after he lost consciousness, much less A Gui.

Cloud Sea Jie Shattered Stone Jie

Was there a connection between these two? Zuo Mo definitely did not believe this was a coincidence. A transportation formation that could travel such a long distance certainly was not an average

transportation formation.

At the beginning, he had thought it was a chaos rift but Pu Yao and Wei rejected this speculation with confidence.

Pu Yao and Wei were not reliable but when the two of them had the same opinion, then it was a reliable conclusion.

Then what was it? Zuo Mo sank into deep thought.

Suddenly, a light flashed through Zuo Mo's mind. All the clues were strung together like pearls in his mind.

He remembered the words on the golden leaf had said that the Sun Tribe had set up a shen temple in Cloud Sea Jie to look for a certain object. Zuo Mo at the beginning had thought that Lan had been imprisoned in the Burning Shen Realm because of the Sun Tribe's war-like nature but looking at it now, this definitely was not a coincidence.

The thieving baldy from Xuan Kong Temple had talked about "that object". It seemed that that guy knew something. Was the "object" that the thieving baldy spoke of and the "object" that the golden leaf mentioned the same one?

The restricted lands of the mist people!

That object was most likely in the restricted grounds of the mist people!

This was why Lan was in the Burning Shen Realm and why the thieving baldies had appeared was explainable.

But why did he and A Gui appear in Shattered Stone Jie? What was the connection between Shattered Stone Jie and the restricted grounds of the mist people? Was “that object” in Shattered Stone Jie?

Zuo Mo shook his head and threw this absurd thought to the back of his mind. In the period of time he had stayed in Uncle An Ya’s home, he generally understood the situation of Shattered Stone Jie. Shattered Stone Jie was an average little jie among the many in the mo realm. There was nothing worthy of attention here. What was most plentiful were the sand and rocks of the Gobi Desert.

According to Uncle An Ya, the Gobi Desert was so large it spanned over three quarters of Shattered Stone Jie and was at its most central part. The other mo settlements were mostly like Shattered Stone Town and scattered around the borders of the Gobi Desert.

From every perspective, Shattered Stone Jie was a desolate place, even more lifeless than Cloud Sea Jie. The number of xiuzhe in Cloud Sea Jie was far more than the number of mo living in Shattered Stone Jie.

Then why had he and A Gui been transported here? Was this a coincidence?

Zuo Mo did not understand.

He quickly threw these speculations to the back of his mind. Even if there was treasure, it had nothing to do with him. He was worried about Lil' Miss and the others. Since Shu Long and A Wen were coming, Guard Camp now lacked a leader, and Turtle Island had one less troop that could fight.

Xuan Kong Temple would not remain passive.

He didn't know if Gongsun Shidi would be able to withstand their advances. Fortunately, Xuan Kong Temple was very far from Cloud Sea Jie and they could not send many battalions over. They were also unable to maintain a long campaign because their primary enemy was yaomo, not him.

If they could stop the first wave, then it would be easy!

He did not speak of his worries. He believed that Gongsun Shidi would think of his.

Alright, he should first take care of himself. This weak and inhuman state was hurtful to look at.

A Gui was probably tired as well

Zuo Mo was lying on A Gui's back and her loose hair covered his

face. After so many days of wind and sand, A Gui's hair was so clean there wasn't any dust and carried a heart-shaking black sheen. It felt slightly eerie.

It was a pity he could not see A Gui's face

“Hey, A Gui, can we change the carrying position?” Zuo Mo muttered.

He clearly felt that A Gui stilled. Hm, did A Gui understand?

Zuo Mo was overjoyed and hurriedly said, “A Gui, A Gui, change position, come come come, let's change position”

Before he finished speaking, he felt a great force and he spun.

He finally changed position it had been a few weeks since he was placed on A Gui's back A Gui, you were great!

Zuo Mo almost cried.

————

“A Gui, can we change a position again?” Zuo Mo said weakly.

A Gui was motionless and didn't react at all.

Zuo Mo was slightly nervous. His arm, which was in contact with a certain full and soft part of A Gui, tingled. Zuo Mo suddenly thought of the very powerful illusory art that despicable paper crane girl had used on him at Wu Kong Mountain

Was this also an illusory spell?

Such a powerful illusory spell!

Zuo Mo swallowed in difficulty and stammered, “Cough, A Gui, actually, we can change positions you, holding me horizontally like this, I don’t have any presence!”

A Gui was motionless.

“Hey, A Zuo A Zuo!” Shouts from Dong Zi and the others came from outside the door. Zuo Mo had been accepted into their group, especially since Zuo Mo would accidentally “teach” them. They became even warmer after that.

Not good, someone was coming!

Zuo Mo panicked.

Oh! The heavens as witness! Ge has never panicked like this! Facing yaomo, yuanying, jindan, worldly treasures, ge has never felt such panic!

Why, why so panicked

Zuo Mo wanted to find a crack in the ground and hide himself.

Pia, the door was pushed open.

“A Zuo A Zuo!” Dong Zi and the others rushed in excitedly but when they saw Zuo Mo, they were stunned where they stood.

Deathly silence.

“Hey hey, what’s with your expression?” Zuo Mo’s tone was extremely unnatural.

“Whoa, Sister A Gui is so strong! Bridal carry!” A little girl’s eyes were bright and admiring as she looked at A Gui.

Bridal carry

Everyone’s expressions became strange.

“Cough cough cough, speak, A Gui is very tired today!” Zuo Mo said with forced calm.

“Oh, we wanted to tell you the matrix awakening master has come. Didn’t you want to watch?” Dong Zi’s expression was very strange. Even such a honest youth as Dong Zi felt that he was

embarrassed when he saw a woman holding a man in a bridal carry.

Matrix awakening master!

In the eyes of the mo, activating the mo matrix was done to awaken the sleeping mo matrix so those in this profession were called matrix awakening masters. However, being a matrix awakening master was not a very prestigious profession because only low-level mo needed help to awaken their mo matrixes. They were still deeply respected because they were extremely knowledgeable.

Zuo Mo's mind became alert and he lost all embarrassment. He asked in a hurry, "Where, where?"

There were not many mo in the town. Zuo Mo guessed roughly that there were about fifty thousand people. If this was Xu Ling City, then they wouldn't even fill a corner of the city. Because the location was remote and the land was not bountiful, the mo here were mostly poor. As a result, no mo would target this place and there was no fighting.

When Zuo Mo came onto the street in A Gui's bridal carry, it instantly caused a burst of friendly laughter. The people here liked this strange pair. Zuo Mo who had become a chatterbox was warm and open in their eyes while A Gui who was silent and determined was greatly liked by those aunties full of maternal love. Everyday, someone would bring some food and attire to Uncle An Ya's home for A Gui and Zuo Mo.

“Little Zuo Zuo, your A Gui is very domineering!

“Bridal carry! Tsk tsk such strong arm power, Little Zuo Zuo, does it feel good to lean there, ha ha!”

“Ohohoh, Elder Sister A Gui is very strong. In the future, I want to carry my man like this, so strong! So moving!”

“I like A Gui, she’s so brave, Why hadn’t I thought of this move in the past? Time is a butcher’s knife! Oh, Little Zuo Zuo must be enjoying this

Zuo Mo was very embarrassed. If it wasn’t that his expression was paralyzed, his face would be completely flushed at now. His finger which was the only part of his body that could move was trembling and shaking like a spring.

Ge ge’s image was completely ruined! This was all his own fault! Why did ge want to change positions?

Zuo Mo cried on the inside.

A Gui was silent and her expression unchanged. Her steps were not wide. As she carried Zuo Mo, her center of balance was leaning towards the front. She was not strong to begin with and it was hard for her to carry him in this position.

Dong Zi and the others were chattering at the side.

Fortunately, no one came to help A Gui. All those of Shattered Stone Town knew that A Gui definitely would not let go of Zuo Mo.

The matrix awakening master was at the center of the town. He was helping a youth awaken his mo matrix. The surroundings were silent and everyone had nervous expressions.

This matrix awakening master was not very old, about thirty or forty. His body was very thin and seemed wispy. He held a long needle about the length of his forearm and had an expression of concentration as he carefully drew with the needlepoint that was dipped in an unknown black liquid.

It was the first time Zuo Mo was seeing the process of mo matrix awakening. He was filled with curiosity.

The movements of the matrix awakening master was very light and elegant. It had a certain rhythm that caused Zuo Mo to think of dancing. The expression of the matrix awakening master was very focused. Every time he lowered the needle, the black medicine liquid on the tip would drip a black dot on the black of the youth. This extremely minuscule black dot would quickly permeate the skin and disappear.

Zuo Mo's eyes were skilled. After a few seconds, he more-or-less understood the method.

En?

The next movements of the matrix awakening master shocked Zuo Mo!

Chapter 541 - Matrix Awakening Master

An imperceptible light suddenly lit up at the tip of this matrix awakening master's hand. His wrist trembled slightly and the long needle was like a streak of silver light that suddenly entered the skin of the youth!

The youth's body shook slightly as he gave a muffled grunt.

At the same time, the faint mo matrix suddenly appeared. It was not very distinct but the structure of the mo matrix was clear.

The matrix awakening master released a breath and lightly patted the mo matrix. The long needle seemed to be jerked out of the youth's body by an invisible thread. Putting away the long needle, the matrix awakening master stood up and said with a smile, "Pretty good luck, it is a success."

The youth was instantly excited and his parents all released a long breath and gave happy expressions. With the mo matrix awakened, as long as he did not stop cultivating, he would welcome a new rapid period of improvement after a while.

No matter where, strength was the most important assurance, especially in the mo territories.

Dong Zi looked with admiration at that youth. The other's talent was not as high as his, but how high he would go depended on whether the awakening was a success.

Zuo Mo stared thoughtfully at the matrix awakening master's long needle.

When he had seen the long needle enter the body of the youth, he had jumped in fight. But when the mo matrix appeared, he instantly identified the reason.

Zuo Mo had once thoroughly studied mo matrices and had his own understanding about the mo matrices. In his view, the mo matrix was a natural formation formed from the blood, flesh, and body's energies. The complexity of this was much higher than the seal formations of the xiuzhe. Other than the complexity of its structure, there was also an important cause, the blood, flesh, energy, they were not dead.

The mo had a saying, 'there were no mo matrices that were exactly the same'.

Because the energies and flesh of every mo were not completely the same, the mo matrices were not the same.

After seeing the entire process, he had a directly experience of how to awaken the mo matrix. The matrix awakening masters made a certain repairs to the incomplete mo matrices, no, more accurately, it was an adjustment. They made minor adjustments to the flesh and energies. Even though they could not repair the mo matrix, they could get the mo matrix to be effective to a certain degree.

Therefore 'awakening the mo matrix', this saying was extremely accurate.

As Zuo Mo pondered this, he stared at the long needle in the hand of the matrix awakening master. He was very interested in that needle.

The spectating mo gradually left. There were not unfamiliar with this matter. A group of young mo remained behind and asked the matrix awakening master all kinds of questions. This middle-aged matrix awakening master was very harmonious in personality and patiently answered the questions of the youth.

Zuo Mo listened for a while and instantly had a new opinion of the matrix awakening master. The other was knowledgeable.

“Mister Matrix Awakening Master, may I see your needle?”

Zuo Mo suddenly said. His tone did not seem any different than the other innocent youths that were full of curiosity.

“En?” The matrix awakening master turned his face. When he saw Zuo Mo and A Gui, a teasing expression came onto his face, “Haha, little boy, starting to eat soft rice at such a young age. This is not a good habit!”

Eating soft rice?

Zuo Mo stilled. For some unknown reason, the feeling of fullness

and softness that came from his arm instantly became crystal clear and the tingly feeling

The illusory spell had come again!

So soft was this was this what eating soft rice meant?

Zuo Mo instantly understood.

The taste was actually pretty good

Zuo Mo was dazed but he quickly focused. “Mister, I’m very sorry. I cannot move.”

At this time, he was like a harmless youth, and there was not one hint of the presence of the person who had taken over a jie.

“Mister Matrix Awakening Master, A Zuo’s body is not well and he cannot move. A Gui cannot hear nor speak,” the kind Dong Zi explained to the matrix awakening master.

“Oh!” The middle-aged matrix awakening master showed slight shock. He examined the two of them and said to himself, “Is there a strange ailment, let me see.”

He didn’t wait for Zuo Mo to respond, walked forward, and grabbed one of Zuo Mo’s hands.

Zuo Mo was shocked and instantly regretted his choice to interact. He shouldn't have called attention to himself so early. If the other detected something when inspecting his body, it would be dangerous!

But before he could refuse, the middle-aged matrix awakening master started his inspection with one hand on Zuo Mo's arm.

A warm wave of power followed his finger into Zuo Mo's arm.

This wave of power was instantly dismembered by the rampaging powers that were fighting in Zuo Mo's body!

The middle-aged matrix awakening master's face turned white!

Zuo Mo sighed sorrowfully inside. It was over!

The middle-aged matrix awakening master took back his arm. His face was ashen. Even though he tried to maintain calmness on his face, Zuo Mo still noticed the barely discernable shock in his eyes.

"What is the result of Sire's inspection?" Zuo Mo's voice was smiling and it sounded like an innocent youth waiting for an answer. Since he had been found out, if he came on strongly, the other would have a harder time determining his true origins.

But in the ears of the middle-aged matrix awakening master, this was like a clap of thunder. This youth that seemed harmless and

was held to the chest of this little girl instantly transformed to a dangerous youth hiding in the darkness.

A Gui who was expressionlessly holding Zuo Mo seemed like a personal guard of those high-level mo. The middle-aged matrix awakening master had once seen some high-level mo. They would frequently have one or two of those special existences by their side. Even that cold presence was the same.

These kinds of personal guards usually had great power, they killed people like they were ants, cold and emotionless

Was this youth actually a high-level mo?

Cold sweat instantly floated down his back.

In his eyes, the youth was staring at him sardonically. Even that tone seemed to be teasing.

“Ah ha ha, so sorry, my skill is not very good, and I really haven’t seen this ailment before.” The middle-aged matrix awakening master laughed. No matter what the other’s identity was, and why he had disguised himself like this or if A Zuo was really sick, he decided to not get involved.

After speaking, he turned and prepared to leave.

“Honorable Mister Matrix Awakening Master, you have not let me see your needle,” a seemingly innocent voice came from behind

him.

The middle-aged matrix awakening master's steps stilled and his expression froze.

The other was not afraid ... it seemed that his speculation was close ... he could not afford to offend someone this dangerous!

Turning around, his face was filled with a harmonious smile, "Aiya, I forgot this, so sorry." Finishing, he took out the long needle.

"Mister Matrix Awakening Master, may I trouble you to put this in my hand? I'm very sorry, I cannot move," Zuo Mo said politely.

The matrix awakening master carefully put the long needle onto Zuo Mo's palm.

Dong Zi and the others had wide eyes. They had seen a mischievous person try to touch the long needle of the matrix awakening master and had been lectured severely by the master. The matrix awakening master was really a kind mo. He probably felt that A Zuo was pitiful so he was treating A Zuo so well!

That was what they thought.

When the long needle entered his hand, Zuo Mo instantly detected the mysteries of this long needle.

“Horizontal silver, Zero Light Black Sand, Iron Horned Rhinoceros Wood, Sunset Water” Zuo Mo murmured as he quickly deciphered the composition of this silver needle.

The matrix awakening master was stunned!

Immersed in his exploration, Zuo Mo did not notice that the long needle in his hand gently lit up.

The middle-aged matrix awakening master's eyes were wide as he stared in disbelief at the silver needle in Zuo Mo's hands that was giving off light. His expression was shocked as though he was seeing a ghost.

This this wasn't possible!

Only he could use that silver needle, and only he could activate the power inside!

This youth

Zuo Mo did not detect anything at all. The enormous pain inside his body constantly attacked his mind. He needed to be more focused!

“Oh this formation, no, mo matrix. I remember now, it is a part of the Blackwater Leech mo matrix, so it can be used like this,

interesting” Zuo Mo murmured to himself and did not detect the reactions of the people around him.

The middle-aged matrix awakening master felt his mind was blank. He felt as though he was instantaneously stripped completely naked, with everything on display! He had used secret methods to make his silver needle and the mo matrix inside the silver needle was the core secret of his teacher and the masters before him. It had had been so casually revealed and stated by this youth!

Zuo Mo’s mo physique was to cultivate the power of his blood and flesh. At this time, his physical power had been scattered and was mixed together with his ling power and spiritual consciousness as it rampaged through his body. The mo matrix on the silver needle instantly attracted the power of blood and flesh inside Zuo Mo’s body which was why he could explore the silver needle.

However, his body was in chaos and one thing would pull along something else. This stream of physical power was like a spark that was thrown into a pot of oil and instantly created an inferno.

The chaotic clash of the three powers furiously flowed into the silver needle!

Pia!

The silver needle in Zuo Mo’s hand wasn’t able to support such a strong power and exploded into a ball of silver smoke.

This explosion frightened everyone, including Zuo Mo.

The middle-aged matrix awakening master stood like a pillar of wood with an ashen face as he looked at Zuo Mo's empty palm. Dong Zi and the others were dumbstruck. They had not understood Zuo Mo's mumble but they had still felt respect—A Zuo's words sounded as though they were very powerful!

But when the needle exploded in Zuo Mo's hand, the first reaction of Dong Zi and the other's was, uh-oh! A Zuo had ruined the matrix awakening master's silver needle!

"I'm sorry, sorry, to have ruined your silver needle!" Looking at the bloodless face of the middle-aged matrix awakening master, Zuo Mo really felt guilt. It had probably taken the other great effort to get this silver needle and he had ruined it!

He could understand this feeling. If someone had ruined his paper crane, Lil' Yellow, in the past, he would put his life on the line to kill the other!

But right now, he was unable to use his ling power. Otherwise, he could just pay the other. He naturally did not lack this amount of wealth.

At present

The middle-aged matrix awakening master that was stunned,

Dong Zi and the others with their nervous expressions and Zuo Mo that did not know what to do stared at each other.

At this time, A Gui did not look so eye-catching.

Chapter 542 - The Declining Situation

“After you go back, work hard!” the corps commander gave Mu Xi her transfer order. She admired Mu Xi greatly.

“Yes! Daren!” Mu Xi bowed back in seriousness.

“Go, don’t waste time.” The corps commander’s expression was calm. “We will be leaving this place soon as well.”

“Ah!” Mu Xi was greatly shocked. “Leave here? Are we going to abandon Blood Sky Metropolis Jie?”

“What is the meaning in standing guard here?” the corps commander said calmly.

Mu Xi was silent.

After the Sky-Splitting Calamity began, chaos rifts had appeared everywhere. It created countless passageways to appear between the yao territories and the xiuzhe territories. There was truly no meaning in standing guard at Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie.

A few days ago, Mu Xi received a message from the clan leader hoping that she could return to the clan and protect them.

Immediately after, the transfer order had come and the location of the transfer was her home territory. This surprised her. The

clan leader must have done something, but he was not powerful enough to affect this kind of transfer.

Mu Xi was extremely smart and upon some thought, her thoughts cleared up.

The the war had changed at a fundamental level. The yao jies that had chaos rifts were the front lines of battle. The zig-zagging chaos rifts bypassed the buffer zone between yaomo and xiuzhe territories and allowed them to come into direct contact. This also heralded the start of chaotic fighting. The chaos rifts were passageways, the places that had to be fought over. No matter if it was xiuzhe or yaomo, no one would give up the fight over them.

Especially the chaos rifts that appeared in the important locations. If those were taken over, the consequences didn't need thinking about.

Mu Xi could imagine just how fierce and harsh the battle over the chaos rifts would be.

The situation had changed so quickly even the wise elders could not predict the outcome. All the military corps on the front lines were drawn back and transferred to protect the strategic locations. Mu Xi received the news on her way that all the yao art houses had stopped their classes. All the teachers and students were sent to conduct complete searches to make sure that every chaos rift would be found.

The safe rear guard entered an unprecedented chaos. The scent

of war spread through the air, the prices shot through the roof, and there were even battalions patrolling the streets in some places.

There was no rear anymore!

On the road back home, Mu Xi was deep in thought.

The elders must have also thought of this so they had agreed to allow a portion of the battle generals to return to their homes. There were too many chaos rifts and the power of the regular corps was not enough to manage them all. Rather than stretching their resources, it was better to unite the local powers of each jie to resist the advances of the xiuzhe.

They, the battle generals who had been allowed to return home, would mount a furious resistance without any urging because it was their home. The Council of Elders could shift more power to the strategic locations that they felt were most important.

Even if the xiuzhe wanted to break through by attacking these less important places, the local resistance would pose a hindrance to them and slow the enemy. This would create a buffer for the regular corps. The Council of Elders used this method to achieve strategic aims.

Mu Xi understood but she wasn't happy at all.

At such a dangerous time, the Council of Elders had abandoned

them. This was done out of helplessness. She did not hate the elders because if she was in their shoes she would also do the same.

But

Determination flashed through her eyes.

No matter what, she had to protect her home!

Lil' Miss carefully browsed the intelligence he received.

After his reading, he sank into deep thought. Moments later, his gaze became clear and a slight smile floated at the corner of his mouth.

It seemed that Xuan Kong Temple would not be coming and making trouble for them any time soon. Large numbers of chaos rifts had appeared in Xuan Kong Realm. Supposedly, many of them were in core regions. The fighting over these chaos rifts was extremely fierce. At this crucial time, Xuan Kong Temple would not send a strong battalion to a place like Cloud Sea Jie.

Xuan Kong Temple was not the only one in a rush, the other three major powers of the Four Realms were not much better off. The chaos rifts that had suddenly appeared caused everyone to sink into chaos.

In comparison, Cloud Sea Jie was calm.

The only worry Lil' Miss had was that there were too many places in Cloud Sea Jie that were unexplored. No one knew how many undiscovered chaos rifts there were here. Originally, Lil' Miss had wanted to copy the other sects and conduct a systematic search but he quickly threw away this unrealistic idea. The Cloud Sea was deep and filled with unknown dangers. If they threw all of themselves in, they wouldn't even make a splash.

Upon further thought, Lil' Miss felt that the interlocking island formations that he was building right now were a more secure plan.

This plan had been suggested by the two masters of Golden Crow Camp. With Lil' Miss' preference to use offense in place of defense, he hadn't been interested in this plan in the beginning. But after further consideration, he felt it was a very good plan, other than the fact that it was expensive.

He hadn't thought that this plan called "Great Thousand Islands Formation" received strong support from all the factions. They were even willing to pay for the costs themselves. Everyone had been frightened by the mo army that suddenly arrived.

Therefore, the Great Thousand Islands Formation became the Great Ten Thousand Islands Formation. This enormous plan that included almost all the cloud islands in Cloud Sea Jie started like this!

Each cloud island became a node and all of the cloud islands formed an enormous and complex formation that were locked in layers. It was like an enormous spider web. Any enemy that entered this web would be attacked.

Once the great formation was complete, not just one battalion, but if multiple battalions came to their door, Lil' Miss was confident he could force them to retreat.

And the news that Zuo Mo passed on suggested an even more daring idea, asking the mist people to help and search for the ling veins hidden in the Cloud Sea. These ling veins would be used to support the large formation's energy expenditures.

Such a crazy idea!

Or did Shixiong just want to save jingshi?

Lil' Miss couldn't help but shake his head and laugh.

“Pay me one back?” the middle-aged matrix awakening master asked with a depressed face. At the side, Dong Zi had a nervous expression. Whether or not his matrix would be awakened would depend directly on this. He didn't notice that the middle-aged matrix awakening master was using respectful terms of speech.

“Yes! I’m very sorry! However, it will have to be in a few days. You should be able to see that my current state is not well.” Zuo Mo’s tone was full of apology. In these past days, Zuo Mo had tried to organize his blood and flesh. The techniques he had stole from Uncle An Ya were extremely practical. After a few days of unrelenting effort, his right hand had gradually recovered feeling.

After a few more days, he should be able to turn his wrist.

The middle-aged matrix awakening master didn’t seem to believe him, but at this time, there was no other solution.

“I might need your help,” Zuo Mo said after thinking.

“No problem.” Since it was relating to his silver needle, the middle-aged matrix awakening master managed to agree.

“Mister Matrix Awakening Master, I have not inquired to how to call you.”

“Ka Zhuo.”

The news that Zuo Mo had cased Ka Zhuo’s silver needle to explode quickly spread through the entire town.

In Uncle An Ya’s home.

Uncle An Ya looked sternly at Zuo Mo. “A Zuo, what really

happened?”

“Ah, I accidentally damaged Mister Ka Zhuo’s silver needle,” Zuo Mo said innocently.

“Aren’t you unable to move?” Uncle An Ya’s brow creased.

“Yes, I had Mister Ka Zhuo put the silver needle into my hand.” Zuo Mo felt this explanation could not satisfy Uncle An Ya and he said, “Actually, I’m also a matrix awakening master even though I’m not very skilled.”

“You are also a matrix awakening master?” This question moved Uncle An Ya’s attention. His face was shocked.

“How else could I damaged Mister Ka Zhuo’s silver needle?” Zuo Mo lied his pants off.

“That’s true.” The pitiful Uncle An Ya was not a match for the cunning Zuo Mo who deflected him somewhere else.

Uncle An Ya was relieved. He turned around and said to Ka Zhuo, “So sorry, the two children are young. Where is Mister Ka Zhuo’s silver needle sold at?”

When Zuo Mo heard that Uncle An Ya was going to repay it on his behalf, his heart warmed and he was moved. He hurriedly opened, “Uncle, don’t go to the trouble. I’ve already negotiated with Mister Ka Zhuo to be his assistant for a few days to repay the

silver needle.

Uncle An Ya was not persuaded.

Zuo Mo knew this wasn't good. He was clear that while the silver needle was nothing in his eyes, but for Uncle An Ya, it was an impossible sum. He hurriedly said, "Mister Ka Zhuo said he felt that the needle was not fitting to his hand and had wanted to make a new one for some time. It is also very cheap, otherwise, why would it have broken so easily? It is not made for multiple uses. Mister Ka Zhuo has the materials on him to make a new one at any time. Uncle, you don't understand, don't add to the mess. Mister Ka Zhuo, isn't that right?"

Very cheap? Easy to damage? Could make one at any time?

Ka Zhuo felt pain and fury. He had spent many years to make that silver needle and the materials used up all of his saving!

But ... he glanced at A Gui's cold face out of the corner of his eye. His heart shook. The silver needle was expensive but his little life was more important!

He pushed a smile onto his face. "Yes, yes, it is nothing major. I had been planning on making a new one. Some of A Zuo's ideas are an inspiration to me, I'm the one benefiting!"

Ka Zhuo was crying on the inside.

Uncle An Ya really believed it and an open smile appeared on his face. “That’s good, that’s good.”

He turned around and stared at Zuo Mo for a long moment.

Zuo Mo felt unconfident under the stare and stammered out, “Uncle, what’s with your look?”

Uncle An Ya smiled and said with a snicker, “This position isn’t bad, enjoy it! Haha!”

Zuo Mo was very embarrassed.

With loud laughter, Uncle An Ya walked out of the room. He needed to supervise the youth in their daily cultivation.

Ka Zhuo released a breath. Good, he hadn’t offended this dangerous person just now

Zuo Mo did not go to watch Uncle An Ya’s class like usual and continuously asked some questions about mo matrixes.

As a matrix awakening master, Ka Zhuo was widely read. At the beginning, he was not concerned and only explained due to Zuo Mo’s identity but as the questions deepened, his expression was taken over by shock and sternness. His responses became slower and he sank into thought.

Was this youth really a matrix awakening master?

Chapter 543 - Ka Zhuo

Zuo Mo gritted his teeth, and bore the pain caused by the powers bouncing around his body as he tried to recover and reorganize his flesh. His wrist slowly turned, so slow as though it was unmoving. Fortunately, Zuo Mo had enough patience. As he bantered with A Gui, he tried to exercise his pitifully small amount of muscle.

The powers that were rampaging through his body were increasing at an astounding rate. Zuo Mo suspected that if he could not find a solution soon, what waited for his body was an explosion of just like Ka Zhuo's silver needle. Even the strongest mo physique had an upper limit of power that it could withstand.

All the strange signs were ones that Pu Yao and Wei had never seen and did not have a solution for.

Yet the techniques that Zuo Mo secretly learned from Uncle An Ya were very effective. Even though he only move one wrist minutely at this time, but gave him hope.

Ka Zhuo was sitting in a daze to his side in deep thought. He had maintained this posture for a whole night. After Zuo Mo had asked his a pile of questions last night, there were many problems that he had never considered before and he sank into contemplation.

Zuo Mo didn't care about what he had caused. He was more willing to talk to A Gui.

"A Gui, when I completely recover, I will definitely be very

powerful, uh-huh, at that time, I'll carry you!"

"Gongsun Shidi has sent a message. He said that Big Brother Bing Yao and the others have found the water cloud embryos. When we return, we can use it directly. Right now, Turtle Island and the mist people are building transportation formations so it won't be long."

"Shi Dong is very strong, and has taken over half of Little Savage Jie. Haha, he stood up and the aura of dominance rose, woosh, and it attracted such a powerful battle general. Even Gongsun Shidi said he is not bad. Not bad!"

"I just don't know if Little Savage Jie has jingshi mines, it would be great if they did"

Crack!

The bones in Zuo Mo's wrist suddenly made a sound.

A feeling of smoothness that had been lost for a long time had returned. Zuo Mo stilled and then he was overjoyed. He tried to move his wrist. Nimbleness and smoothness that he had not experienced since so long ago made Zuo Mo want to howl to the sky!

Zuo Mo greedily rotated his wrist. Only after loss would he know the value.

It seemed he hadn't endured his pains for nothing. Even though only one of his hands had recovered, he could now do many things.

This didn't mean that the terrible situation inside his body was changing, but that he could once again control a portion of the power.

"A Gui, look, my hand can move!" Zuo Mo rotated his wrist like he was showing off a treasure.

A Gui didn't react at all.

Zuo Mo was not demotivated. In a good mood, he instantly started to plan. He had never thought of this trip he and A Gui had come on was a vacation. This was the mo realm, an extremely unfamiliar and dangerous place. Even though Shattered Stone Town seemed so calm and peaceful to him, he still did not lose his wariness. He and A Gui currently lacked the power to protect themselves. If they encountered a situation, that would be terrible. Shu Long and the others were still very far from Shattered Stone Jie and could not be depended on in the short term.

What was most important now was recovering some ability to protect himself and then thinking of ways to resolve the problem of the powers running amok through his body.

The recovery of his hand meant that his method was, at least in part, correct. As long as he persisted, the problem of movement would be solved. However, the amount of power in the muscles he could control was limited. This was just the power that he had not

detected and did not use. Even if Zuo Mo used all of that power, he would not be a match for Uncle An Ya.

He had to think of another method.

Zuo Mo's eyes gradually became clear. He turned around and looked at Ka Zhuo who was deep in thought. He called, "Mister Ka Zhuo, Mister Ka Zhuo!"

"Aah!" Ka Zhuo blankly turned his head. Moments later, his dazed expression became normal again.

"Mister Ka Zhuo, let's discuss the silver needle," Zuo Mo's words were full of temptation.

"Silver needle? Ah, silver needle!" Ka Zhuo first paused and then he had a nervous expression. "Speak, speak!"

The silver needle was of the utmost importance to Ka Zhuo but Zuo Mo had ruined it. Even though Zuo Mo had kept on saying he would repay with another one, Ka Zhuo didn't really believe him. However, he didn't dare to offend Zuo Mo. Now that Zuo Mo was raising the topic again, Ka Zhuo's heart was up in the air.

"There are two methods." Zuo Mo's tone was smiling.

"The first, I will repay you with one that is exactly the same."

Ka Zhuo instantly had a joyous expression.

“However, you need to wait. You can see that I’m in a bit of trouble right now. I need to first resolve this so you need to have patience.”

The joy on Ka Zhuo’s face retreated. He recovered his calm and asked, “Then the second choice?”

“The second choice is more complex.” A hint of admiration flashed across Zuo Mo’s eyes as his tone turned. “I believe that you have replacement materials, may you take them out and let me see. Maybe we can make a completely new silver needle.”

Ka Zhuo shook his head. “Making a matrix awakening needle is not so easy.”

“Oh, so they are called matrix awakening needles.” Zuo Mo’s tone was as usual. “Maybe it is possible but maybe not. I’m only providing a plan, and Mister Ka Zhuo will have to make it himself. I believe that Mister Ka Zhuo will be able to judge if the plan is plausible or not.”

Ka Zhuo had a doubtful expression. Could this youth in front of him really design a matrix awakening needle? He suddenly recalled Zuo Mo’s series of profound and difficult questions. In his eyes, Zuo Mo instantly became much more mysterious.

“Alright,” Ka Zhuo managed. He then took out the materials he

had collected.

Chicken-blood stone, Forest Rotten Wood, insect droppings

Zuo Mo recognized the majority of the items but there were some that Zuo Mo did not recognize. After his gaze swept across all of the materials, he already had formed a plan.

He asked Ka Zhuo for pen and paper. Using his right hand that had recovered, he started to draw.

As the lines lengthened under Zuo Mo's pen, shock and joy grew on Ka Zhuo's face. He started tightly at the tip of Zuo Mo's pen and stopped breathing as though he was afraid his breathing would disturb Zuo Mo.

The room instantly became quiet and there was only the sound of the pen brushing against the paper.

Moments later, Zuo Mo stopped. He made a close examination to make sure there were no mistakes before he threw down the pen.

“Alright, it is yours now. This mo matrix is the mo matrix for the Nether Jellyfish. It belongs to the same type as the matrix awakening needle you had before. I think that this should not be a hard task for you. The primary materials to make this are the Forest Rotten Wood, and then to be soaked in the chicken-blood stone and the insect droppings.”

Zuo Mo's voice was slightly tired. The mo matrix for the Nether Jellyfish was not complex but compared to Zuo Mo's pitiful endurance at present, it was not easy.

Ka Zhuo's hand trembled as he held the paper. An abnormal red flush appeared on his face. His gaze was excited and heated as though he was holding a peerless treasure in his hands!

To Ka Zhou, this was truly a treasure!

The content on this paper alone was worth ten matrix awakening needles.

The mo matrix for the Nether Jellyfish was a true colonel level mo matrix! The Blackwater Leech mo matrix in his past needle had just been a captain level mo matrix. The two appeared to only be separated by one level, but the difference was drastic.

Also, his eyes were skilled and he could see that the Nether Jellyfish mo matrix was complete.

If he had doubts about Zuo Mo's identity before this, then he was certain now that this youth, who was unable to move, definitely came from a high birth. Such a complete colonel level mo matrix was something only those high level mo families with noble blood could possess.

If Ka Zhuo went and sold this mo matrix, he could fetch a great price.

Also, the other was able to choose a mo matrix and even the method to making it based on the materials he had on hand, the other's skill in mo matrices

“Ka Zhou was blind and has offended Sire. Sire, please forgive!” Ka Zhuo suddenly made a big bow and said with a sincere expression.

Zuo Mo stilled and then said, “I was wrong first, Mister Ka Zhuo does not have to be like this.”

Ka Zhou was unaffected and continued, “Sire's knowledge far surpasses Ka Zhou! Ka Zhuo laughably thought lowly of you, Ka Zhou should die!”

Zuo Mo didn't know if he wanted to laugh or cry. “What do you want to say?”

“Sire, please take Ka Zhuo as an apprentice!” Ka Zhou said loudly.

“Take you as an apprentice?” Zuo Mo looked at Ka Zhuo that was much older than him and felt strange. He hurriedly said, “No way, no way!”

Nan Yue, Cang Ze and the others were about the same age as Zuo Mo and he had no problems fooling them. But if Ka Zhuo, who was much older than himself, became his student then it would be

really strange.

“Please, Daren, accept Ka Zhuo as an apprentice!” Ka Zhuo was not verbally skilled and he only repeated this sentence again.

Zuo Mo had felt that Ka Zhuo was weak and easy to bully before but when an obedient person became stubborn, they were even scarier.

After facing off for a while, Zuo Mo almost went crazy.

“Alright, first make this matrix awakening needle,” Zuo Mo said weakly. His endurance was almost at the end, and Ka Zhuo had gone crazy so he was not able to sustain himself.

Ka Zhuo excitedly stood. “Yes, Teacher!”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo grimaced inside. He had accepted someone who could be the age of his uncle to be a student.

The mo were crazy, as expected!

However, when Zuo Mo calmed down and pondered it, he felt that accepting such a student was not a bad thing.

Ka Zhou was a true mo and had gone to many places. He was experienced and the identity of a matrix awakening master could be protection and disguise for him. According to Zuo Mo’s

knowledge, the status of a matrix awakening master was high among low level mo. Almost no one would oppose a matrix awakening mo. Even mo with power wouldn't offend a matrix awakening master because they were extremely knowledgeable and often skilled in things like healing and poisons.

This way, his and A Gui's safety would increase.

From this perspective, Zuo Mo felt this wasn't bad.

It seemed that he needed to study the mo matrices. It would not be good if he slipped up and lost this protection.

Since he couldn't take anything else out of his ring, studying mo matrices was a good choice.

Also, he had plenty of mo matrices. They were all ones that Pu Yao had collected over the past few millennia and they now benefited him.

Chapter 544 - Dong Zi's Choice

Jiang Zhe sighed lightly and an expression of conflict appeared on his face.

On the battlefield below him, the mo were fighting a losing battle. There were mo who continuously fearlessly charged in suicide attacks but in facing a completed battle formation, they were like moths charging into a fire.

Jiang Zhe hadn't expected the fighting to be so violent. Even if he was used to great spectacles, he was still shocked at this sight. He couldn't help but feel a thread of respect towards those crazed mo. Without any doubt, this was an outstanding battalion!

The respect did not cause Jiang Zhe to be soft-hearted. He spoke softly as he commanded, "Central formation, feign a withdraw. Flanks, charge forward in a cross."

The mo discovered that the enemy in front of them had suddenly retreated. They were instantly overjoyed. Was the other unable to withstand their charge any longer? At this time, a battalion suddenly charged in front of the right flank with lightning speed!

The mo who had just relaxed mentally were stunned by the fierce charge. Like a knife through butter, this battalion charged through their ranks.

The formation of the mo was cleaved apart!

The morale that had just rose up instantly sank. What no one noticed was that another battalion had snuck behind their rear.

The panicked mo were almost pierced through in an instant by the second charge.

From the sky, the two battalions cut a perfect cross through the mo.

“They are finished.” The woman next to Jiang Zhe stretched lazily as her voluptuous and mature body drew out an attractive curve with this motion. Several of the personal guards around them swallowed. Facing such a person, even dhyana xiu would not be unaffected.

Jiang Zhe was silent, his long and snowy-white hair blown into the air by the wind. His brow was slender and warm, his body tall, and upright like jade, standing in the air above the fighting. He would always unconsciously attract everyone’s gaze, especially his calm and deep eyes, clear without any impurity. Any person that met his stare would be unconsciously attracted.

As one of the most accomplished representatives of Xuan Kong Temple’s present generation , no matter where he went, he would attract stares. In Xuan Kong Realm, his reputation and fame surpassed even those great dhyana xiu that had been famed for many years. In the minds of young dhyana xiu, the name Jiang Zhe seemed to hold a magical power.

In Xuan Kong Realm, there was only one person that could rival him, his Shixiong, Nangong Qing Lian.

Unlike Jiang Zhe who was a battle general, Nangong Qin Lian was a pure dhyana xiu. One literary and one martial, but both were outstanding.

“Is there any news of Bie Han?” Jiang Zhe stared off into the distance, his thoughts unknown.

“Not yet. What is it? You miss him?” The female raised an eyebrow with a teasing expression on her face. This beautiful and moving woman was Jiang Zhe’s Shijie, Feng Yue, and also his second-in-command.

There was a mole at the corner of Feng Yue’s mouth. It did not detract from her beauty and against the contrast of her bright red lips, it was extremely seductive.

“I’m thinking if it is Bie Han leading the other side” Jiang Zhe was not affected by Feng Yue at all and said lightly.

“You can’t do it? Or you are worried you would lose?” Feng Yue said heartlessly, “Did you guys in the past, en-hm, have some special feelings?”

Feng Yue specially emphasized “special.”

Jiang Zhe was used to Feng Yue Shixiong’s teasing style since a

long time ago. He wasn't angry and then he smiled slightly. "Now that you say this, I'm feeling anticipation about fighting against him."

"I just don't know why the sect leader had taken him in. I didn't like him, since the first time I met him. His eyes are too vicious, like a wild beast."

"What about Cloud Sea Jie?" Jiang Zhe deflected the topic.

"Ha, Ding Zhen Shishu's status in the temple isn't high enough, he died for nothing. Hmph, if those other shishu died, would the temple be as indifferent to the situation as they are now?" Feng Yue's brow scrunched as an angry expression rose on her face and her tone became less courteous.

Jiang Zhe coughed lightly. "Originally, Bie Han had been sent to deal with it, but now that Bie Han has betrayed us, and the situation is so chaotic, the temple"

"You don't have to defend those old people. Let's put the ugly stuff first. If you are going to become like them in the future, this sis will go play by herself then." Feng Yue raised an eyebrow, her tone filled with nonchalance.

Jiang Zhe gave a grimace. He didn't know what to do with Feng Yue Shijie.

"After your defensive line stabilizes, I will go take revenge for

Ding Zheng Shishu! If you won't go, I will!" Feng Yue suddenly said.

Jiang Zhe who had appeared calm until now suddenly had a dark expression. "Nonsense!"

"Ding Zhen Shishu had mentored me in the past. I have to repay him," Feng Yue said serenely.

Jiang Zhe sighed as well and became silent.

Ka Zhuo looked with intoxication at the matrix awakening needle in his hand. He continuously caressed it and couldn't stop touching it.

The new matrix awakening needle was completely black and the blood red mo matrix spread over its surface like a spider-web and glimmered eerily.

"Alright, alright, stop looking." Zuo Mo understood Ka Zhuo's feelings but after Ka Zhuo had laughed dumbly like this for a whole morning, he finally could not bear it any longer.

"Yes yes yes, Teacher." Ka Zhuo seemed to wake up and carefully put away the matrix awakening needle.

Uncle An Ya was unable to believe that Zuo Mo had suddenly become Ka Zhuo's teacher but after listening to Zuo Mo's speech about geniuses Uncle An Ya had been mentally spun round and round, he managed to believe it.

However, the side effect of this was that Dong Zi and the others did not dare to treat Zuo Mo like they used to. In front of Zuo Mo, they became constrained and careful. They had to maintain their respect towards the matrix awakening masters. Every youth had been told this repeatedly.

And no one else laughed at A Gui carrying Zuo Mo in a princess carry. People suddenly realized, no wonder A Zuo was so strong, he wasn't a normal mo.

In order to make his matrix awakening master identity more plausible, Zuo Mo started to study the topic of matrix awakening masters seriously. Zuo Mo was skilled in mo matrixes, forging, and seal formations. He managed to understand the craft without expending great effort.

Awakening matrixes was not content of a profound level, and for Zuo Mo, a freak who had seen many high level mo matrixes, if he understood, his understanding of matrix awakening far surpassed the great majority of matrix awakening masters.

Ka Zhuo was filled with respect. The more he was in contact with Teacher, the more he discovered just how vast his Teacher's knowledge was.

This caused Ka Zhuo to faithfully do whatever Zuo Mo instructed.

Having a matrix awakening needle again, Ka Zhuo could awaken Dong Zi's matrix.

Dong Zi who had waited for a long time was very excited and ran over instantly. The matrix awakening had attracted large numbers of Shattered Stone Town residents. Dong Zi was the most talented youth in this group and most people hoped that Shattered Stone Town could produce a true expert.

Ka Zhuo made a detailed examination of Dong Zi. Everyone stopped breathing in fear of disturbing Ka Zhuo.

Zuo Mo was lying in A Gui's arms and saw the entire process. He understood.

Ka Zhuo was going to start awakening the matrix when Zuo Mo suddenly spoke, "Wait."

Ka Zhuo instantly stopped moving and respectfully came next to Zuo Mo to ask, "Teacher, what orders do you have?"

The mo that were watching in the surroundings shifted slightly.

Even though they had accepted the reality that Zuo Mo had become Ka Zhuo's teacher, when Ka Zhuo called him this in public, it was still caused a strong reaction. Zuo Mo's age was about the

same as Dong Zi and the other's, yet this youth had become Ka Zhuo's teacher. Ka Zhou did not reside in Shattered Stone Town but he was famed in Shattered Stone Town.

Dong Zi's talent was really pretty good. According to Wei's observations, Dong Zi should have Alpine Gorilla Blood. Pure Alpine Gorillas were natural warriors with great strength, speed, and bravery.

Zuo Mo had watched Ka Zhou's inspection. He had confirmed that there were remnants of Alpine Gorilla matrix on Dong Zi's body and Wei's guess was proven.

When Zuo Mo had been studying the profession of a matrix awakening master, he found in the last few days that matrix awakening was similar to the matrixes that he had engraved on Lei Peng and the others. However, the mo were skilled in physical power so they used mo matrixes while xiuzhe used ling power so they used seal formations.

After confirming that Dong Zi had remnants of an Alpine Gorilla matrix on his body, Zuo Mo had a daring idea—could he complete Dong Zi's Alpine Gorilla matrix?

Matrix awakening masters could awaken the mo matrix but that was only bringing out the hidden mo matrix. It was only a minor adjustment and did not repair the mo matrix.

However, to Zuo Mo who had engraved formations before, this idea was daring but was rational.

Zuo Mo was not completely confident and he decided to let Dong Zi make the final decision.

Calling Dong Zi, his parents, Uncle An Ya into the room, Zuo Mo told them his thoughts.

Everyone was stunned. When they heard that Dong Zi had the bloodline of the Alpine Gorilla mo, their faces became disbelieving. Zuo Mo noticed that Dong Zi's gaze showed yearning and excitement.

Ka Zhuo felt that his mind could not fully grasp the concept. Repair the mo matrix? Ka Zhuo gaped. A long time later, he recovered and his expression suddenly became excited. Having been a matrix awakening master for a long time, Ka Zhuo knew what it mean if this daring idea could be realized.

“A Zuo, you cannot joke about this,” Uncle An Ya's tone was grave, “how confident are you?”

“Three tenths,” Zuo Mo replied with a conservative guess. After having told them this, he realized the risk and felt regret. He hoped that no harm would befall Dong Zi. In this period of time, Dong Zi had been very good to him.

Dong Zi and his parents started discussing in low voices. They quickly made the decision.

Dong Zi inhaled deeply. “A Zuo, I am willing to try this!”

“It is very dangerous, your chance of death is very high,” Zuo Mo who now deeply regretted bring this up had started to urge him to reconsider.

“I’m not afraid!” Dong Zi said boldly, “I want to become more powerful, this way, we won’t be bullied.”

At this time, Dong Zi’s father also spoke. He said respectfully, “Mister Zuo, please give Dong Zi this chance! Our family, our Shattered Stone Town needs this chance.”

Uncle An Ya sighed deeply and then suddenly looked much older.

Zuo Mo knew that there probably was something going on. He saw that they were extremely resolute and even Uncle An Ya didn’t object so after some thought, he agreed, “Alright! But I need several days to prepare.”

Including Zuo Mo, no one had considered what kind of legend their decision would create!

Chapter 545 - Shattered Stone Chop

Xuan Kong Temple had conquered the mo controlled territory, Cold Mountain Jie!

This news was quickly spread throughout the Four Realms with the sound tablets. The Four Realms that had been in a state of chaos was lifted by the news. This was the first mo jie that Four Realm Heaven had taken and the news was unexpected. Originally, people had thought the first one would be conquered by Kun Lun or Tian Huan. No one had expected that it would be Xuan Kong Temple.

Xuan Kong Temple was unexpectedly attention-catching in contrast to its usual low-key conduct.

Jiang Zhe who had obtained this victory became one of the most popular battle generals in the Four Realms with this victory!

Dong Zi's entire body was immersed in the black liquid of the medicinal pool. The medicinal fluid gave off a strange fragrance. Ka Zhuo was putting the materials that had been prepared into the medicinal pool one by one.

Shattered Stone Town was remote and poor so there weren't a lot of good materials on hand. Many materials were not available in Shattered Stone Jie, Zuo Mo carefully picked carefully and found some common materials to substitute for the rarer ingredients. Ka Zhuo had then made a trip in order to go purchase these items.

It had to be said that the medicinal fluid that Zuo Mo created was very effective. The medicinal power boiled and dark green mo matrixes appeared on Dong Zi's body, especially his arms that were almost entirely covered by the mo matrix. The mo matrix on his arms was the most detailed and clear, large amounts of hair-thin mo matrixes formed an eerie and complex diagram. Looking from a distance, it looked like tattoos.

"Alpine Gorilla matrix, this is the Alpine Gorilla matrix?" Ka Zhuo looked with intoxication at the tattoos on Dong Zi's body. As a matrix awakening master, his obsession with mo matrixes was almost an instinct. Even though Zuo Mo had passed the Alpine Gorilla matrix to him, and he was completely familiar with it, but when he saw the real thing, he couldn't help but be enchanted.

Zuo Mo did not speak, as it would disturb Ka Zhuo. He actually admired Ka Zhuo's ability. In the past, Ka Zhuo's education did not include any profound content. The reason that he had the skills he did now was, in part, because of his enthusiasm for mo matrixes.

Turning his gaze to Dong Zi in the medicinal pool, Zuo Mo's expression was relaxed.

"The situation looks pretty good," Zuo Mo said in a small voice in his sea of consciousness.

"It is a pity that the materials are lacking," Wei said faintly. Pu Yao snorted coldly from the side.

Zuo Mo knew that Wei was being extremely conservative in his judgement. The materials were not just a bit lacking. These materials were basically the lowest level of materials, and even so, it had taken all the mo bei that Ka Zhuo had.

“There is no solution for this,” Zuo Mo spread his hand and said helplessly.

Zuo Mo’s daring idea had received Wei’s support. Wei had also guided him in making this medicinal pool. Supposedly, it was a kind of ancient sacrificial ceremony.

Pu Yao gave a cold snort from the side.

“Boy, you better spend some more effort on your body. Otherwise, even we will be affected,” Pu Yao said coldly.

Wei was silent. On this, he was on the same side as Pu Yao.

“The situation is much better than before. I can even move my arm now,” Zuo Mo purposefully showed off smugly.

“Ha, dying from exploding is a very tragic death.” Pu Yao’s face was disdainful. “It is useless even if you can move your entire body. Your body right now is like a volcano, the inside which is becoming more and more restless. Either you cool it down, or vent it.”

Zuo Mo raised an eyebrow. “What idea do you have?”

Pu Yao was silent for a moment before he said, “If you can vent all of the power outside your body, your life will not be in danger. I know a yao art that can do this.”

“And then? Ge will become completely weak?” Zuo Mo twisted his mouth. “Ge won’t do that. Ge still has to heal A Gui, has to find ge’s history, ge still has many things to do.”

“You do not have much time,” Pu Yao’s tone was emotionless. “Based on the present state inside your body, you cannot support it for a long time.”

Zuo Mo’s brow furrowed. “How much longer?”

“One month.”

The sea of consciousness became deathly silent. None of the three were interested in chatting further.

Zuo Mo sat dazed in A Gui’s embrace. He hadn’t thought that the situation was this dire, it was worse than he had imagined.

“Teacher, can we begin?” Ka Zhuo’s voice interrupted Zuo Mo’s thinking.

Zuo Mo refocused and glanced at the medicinal pool. Seeing the water in the medicinal pool was now clear and he could see the

bottom, he became alert. “Start.”

Ka Zhuo took out the matrix awakening needle that he had made recently. His expression became serious and focused.

Zuo Mo’s understanding of mo matrixes far surpassed Ka Zhuo, but in terms of actual practical skill, he could not compare to Ka Zhuo. It was the first time that Ka Zhuo was engraving the Alpine Gorilla matrix but his movements were not raw, flowing with an unique rhythm and extremely elegant.

The process continued for a whole day.

Dong Zi was covered in fine and complex mo matrixes that looked like eerie tattoos.

Ka Zhuo disregarded his tiredness and a thread of nervousness appeared in his eyes. He closed his eyes and twenty breaths later, he opened them, his faint brown eyes were completely still.

The matrix awakening needle on his hand suddenly gave off a serene black energy. The black energy shrouded the matrix awakening needle and made it appear as though Ka Zhuo was holding a black bolt of energy.

The black energy suddenly entered between Dong Zi’s brows.

Pain came onto Dong Zi’s face and his entire body convulsed violently.

A deep wild roar came from Dong Zi's throat that was filled with pain.

Zuo Mo's heartbeat was raised as he watched Dong Zi roll on the ground. The mo matrix had been engraved and was activated, but the success would determine on whether or not Dong Zi's body could tolerate the complete Alpine Gorilla matrix.

He had to make it

Zuo Mo was cheering for Dong Zi on the inside and extremely nervous.

Threads of black energy seemed to appear out of thin air and enter Dong Zi's mo matrix. Dong Zi rolled even more violently and gave heart-wrenching howls.

But no matter how he rolled, the mo matrix on his body was not affected as all. As it absorbed more and more black energy, the mo matrix gradually became bright.

Dong Zi's breathing was weakening as his body convulsed.

Zuo Mo was staring unblinkingly at the mo matrix, extremely nervous and held his breath.

The mo matrix that lit up gradually dimmed. After a while, it

gradually lit up again and then dimmed pulsing as though it was breathing.

After seven to eight rounds of pulsing, the mo matrix no longer become bright again and Dong Zi was motionless on the ground.

The mo matrix dimmed and then gradually became faint, so faint that the naked eye was unable to see it. Dong Zi did not look any different than usual.

Dong Zi's breathing sounded, long and serene as though he was sleeping.

Zuo Mo's heart came back to ground and hurriedly stopped Ka Zhuo that was going forward. "Let him rest, do not disturb him."

Ka Zhuo stilled and then he stammered out a question, "Suc... success?"

"Yes! Success!" Zuo Mo's tone was filled with joy.

After four hours, Dong Zi woke up. He looked around dazedly and then looked at his hands. He asked Zuo Mo in puzzlement, "A Zuo, when are you going to work on me?"

Seeing Dong Zi acting like this, Zuo Mo couldn't help but roar

with laughter. “Haha, it’s already done!”

“Done?” Dong Zi stilled. He then raised his hands and looked for a while before shaking his head and said, “A Zuo, don’t try to fool me, it is the exact same as before!”

Zuo Mo did not explain and said with a smile, “Come, let’s go out. Uncle An Ya and the others are definitely waiting impatiently.”

It wasn’t just Uncle An Ya and Dong Zi’s parents that were waiting impatiently. All the residents of the town were filled with curiosity. There hadn’t ever been a matrix awakening that had taken such a long time. Dong Zi was the most talented youth in the town, kind and honest, and everyone liked him. They were also full of anticipation about his future.

Seeing Dong Zi walk out, Shattered Stone Town shook.

Everyone came out and surrounded him.

“Dong Zi, show us!”

“Dong Zi, show Auntie how powerful you are now!”

“Big Brother Dong Zi”

Dong Zi had never seen anyone shout and talk to him together like this. He instantly didn’t know what to do. Thankfully, the

ones that came were people he were familiar with so he was not afraid. Dong Zi was quickly pushed by the flow of people to the training grounds. Uncle An Ya was teaching the other youths in cultivation at this time.

When Uncle Anya saw Dong Zi, he was first overjoyed, but after examining Dong Zi, he couldn't help but have a puzzled expression. Dong Zi looked the same as before. Dong Zi's parents were very excited.

“Dong Zi, it's done?” Uncle An Ya's question was very general. The matter about the repaired mo matrix was shocking, and so it was kept a secret with only Uncle An Ya and Dong Zi's parents knowing the truth of the matter.

Uncle An Ya was highly respected in Shattered Stone Town. When he spoke, the noisy crowd instantly quieted.

Dong Zi scratched his head blankly. “A Zuo said it is done.”

Uncle An Ya's expression did not change as he moved to make space. “En, come, try, do you remember the [Shattered Stone Strike] that I taught you?”

[Shattered Stone Strike] was Uncle An Ya's ultimate move and this set of strikes was famous in the area. Uncle An Ya had created it based on the striking method he learned in the military and it was very strong.

“Oh,” Dong Zi responded dazedly. In reality, he still didn’t understand what was going on.

However, Uncle An Ya had taught him everything he knew. He would obey what Uncle An Ya said without any hesitation.

Zuo Mo was in A Gui’s arms and filled with anticipation while Ka Zhuo’s face was red from excitement.

Dong Zi’s legs were set apart, his arms slightly lowered with his right hand held straight like a blade.

At this time, the blankness on Dong ZI’s face had disappeared. His expression was stern, his eyes sharp, his entire person like an unsheathed blade!

Zuo Mo thought, Dong Zi was innocent in personality, and did not have stray thoughts. Just a position and it could be seen he had truly learned from Uncle An Ya.

“Strike!”

A shout, and then his slightly lowered arm moved, his hand like a blade as he chopped forward!

Zuo Mo’s eyes were sharp and saw it clearly.

Dong Zi’s palm was shaking at a very high frequency! With every

shake, there would be a thread of red energy produced from Dong Zi's palm and the red energies would layer together.

When the vibrations reached hundreds of times, the red energy was almost tangible and covered the line of his palm!

Hiss!

The red blade energy left his hand!

Boom!

A ruler-straight gulley stretched forward from Dong Zi's feet, almost twenty zhang before it ended!

The surroundings were completely silent.

Chapter 546 - A Daring Idea

Uncle An Ya stared at the twenty zhang long cut in front of Dong Zi. His expression changed rapidly and he was astounded.

Captain level!

Dong Zi's Shattered Stone Strike had reached the skill level of captain level!

Uncle An Ya was captain level himself and was very familiar with this move's power. If he used all his power, he could produce the same effect.

Uncle An Ya knew Dong Zi's strength very well. He was the most talented among the youths of Shattered Stone Town, but he was far from reaching the captain level.

But now captain level!

Uncle An Ya couldn't help but turn to look at Zuo Mo in A Gui's arms. There wasn't any expression on Zuo Mo's face. His gaze was also normal and there didn't seem to be any change.

Wasn't he shocked?

Uncle An Ya almost didn't believe his eyes. However, he had gone into the world and seen more, and he knew more than the people

here.

A Zuo's origins were not simple!

Thinking back to it, A Zuo and A Gui had walked out of the Gobi Desert. In the past, he had felt that these two had great luck but thinking carefully now, how could they not have any strength and still managed to survive weeks in the Gobi Desert? How could they be simple people?

Uncle An Ya grimaced inside. It seemed that he was getting old, and actually had misjudged these two young people.

His gaze landed back on Dong Zi. Dong Zi clearly was frightened by his own move. His face was panicked and he didn't know what to do. Uncle An Ya laughed.

Captain level, Dong Zi was in captain level now, his future would be even brighter. If Shattered Stone Town could produce an expert, then everyone's lives would be much better. Uncle An Ya suddenly felt the heavy burden on his shoulders instantly became lighter.

Uncle An Ya walked next to A Gui and said emotionally, "A Zuo, thank you."

Zuo Mo said with a smile, "Ah, ah, Uncle, don't be courteous, this is something I should do!"

“I hadn’t thought that Dong Zi would level up to captain level directly, it really is” Uncle An Ya couldn’t keep the wonder out of his tone.

“Captain level?” Hearing this, Zuo Mo paused and then said to himself, “No wonder I felt it was slightly weak, so it is only captain level!”

Finishing, he ran into his sea of consciousness and started to discuss with Wei.

“Alpine Gorilla matrix is a colonel level mo matrix, why is Dong Zi only at the captain level?” Zuo Mo asked Wei.

“The change is a process. The mo matrix will continuously refine his flesh and blood until his body and the matrix truly become one and then his strength can break into colonel level,” Wei explained.

Zuo Mo finally understood.

Talking to Wei, Zuo Mo did not notice that Uncle An Ya’s expression had froze.

Slightly weak captain level

A beat later, Uncle An Ya refocused. He increasingly felt that Zuo Mo was even more mysterious. Where did A Zuo come from?

Those with captain level strength were unable to enter those elite battalions but definitely had no problem being admitted to those normal battalions. In little places like Shattered Stone Town, people at the captain level were the strongest.

As expected, they came from big places!

Uncle An Ya reflected inside.

“Uncle, Uncle, I’m very strong now, very strong!” Dong Zi charged over excitedly.

“Very powerful?” Zuo Mo heard this and spoke, “Just captain level.”

Just captain level

Uncle An Ya perceptively closed his mouth.

“Your body has not been completely tempered, the mo matrix has not merged into your flesh, you do not have a mo physique and the mo skills you practice oh” Zuo Mo finally remembered that the one teaching Dong Zi was Uncle An Ya. Uncle An Ya was right beside him.

Uncle An Ya laughed freely. “A Zuo, don’t be polite, Uncle knows his skill, and it really isn’t anything.” Immediately after, An Ya turned and said sternly to Dong Zi, “Listen carefully to A Zuo, remember everything that A Zuo tells you!”

Uncle An Ya was clear that this was a one-in-a-thousand chance for Dong Zi!

Dong Zi clearly did not understand. He said blankly, “I will listen to A Zuo, he’s so strong!”

This boy... but even a stupid mo has stupid good fortune! Uncle An Ya did not state it explicitly. He felt very happy inside and then said, “En, listen carefully to A Zuo. I will first take care of them.” Finishing, he pulled Dong Zi’s parents away.

“A Zuo, tell me, I’ll listen to you!” Dong Zi patted his chest and said in a loud voice.

Zuo Mo looked at Dong Zi’s face filled with sincerity and felt a thread of guilt.

Ge is really too evil! Seducing such an innocent youth to nurture him into a strong sidekick

He felt guilt but when the words reached his mouth, it became, “Hm hm, I have a very high-intensity cultivation plan here. If you can finish it, you might rise to colonel level!”

“Really?” Dong Zi’s eyes were bright and filled with desire.

“If you can complete it.”

“I will definitely complete it!” Dong Zi said in a loud voice as though he was swearing an oath. His face was filled with determination.

“Such a brave youth!” Wei praised. “You are becoming more and more devious.”

Zuo Mo ignored Wei and said, “However, Dong Zi, you have to promise me something.”

“Something? A Zuo, speak.” Dong Zi asked curiously.

“You can see that my present state is not good and A Gui is very soft and weak. My family has already sent people to get us but they are too far away. They will probably arrive after a long time. During this time, you have to protect A Gui and I.” Zuo Mo’s tone was serious.

“Of course, you and A Gui are so weak. A Zuo, you might understand a lot but your body is too weak.” Dong Zi’s face was matter-of-fact. Suddenly, his expression became nervous. “A Zuo, is someone targeting you?”

“Uh, no, this is just in case.”

“That’s good, that’s good!”

Dong Zi becoming captain level caused a ruckus in Shattered Stone Town and Ka Zhuo's reputation had become unrivalled. Countless parents came with their children to find Ka Zhuo and Ka Zhuo was in a sorry state dealing with them.

No one came to bother Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo's sickly looking appearance caused people to not bear to disturb him.

In the sea of consciousness.

"I have an idea," Zuo Mo said seriously, "what if I also engrave a mo matrix into myself?"

Pu Yao and Wei were shocked by Zuo Mo's idea.

"You are not a mo," Pu Yao was the first to object.

"But I have achieved the Great Day mo physique," Zuo Mo said unhesitatingly.

Pu Yao was silent. He finally remembered that this freak had made it to the Great Da mo physique even though he was not a mo.

"What kind of mo matrix do you want to engrave?" Wei asked gravely.

“My body right now is like a volcano that is about to erupt. The power inside is increasing, and the collisions are becoming more violent. The end result is exploding.” Zuo Mo was calm as though he was describing something unrelated to him. His tone was calm and composed. “The best method is to reorganize the powers in my body back to their state from before, but it is too difficult and I do not know where to start. The other way is to strengthen the volcano by making the mountain stronger and harder to break through.”

“Interesting! Even though it cannot solve the root problem, we can try,” Wei said. “But the effect of low level mo matrixes will not be strong with your present state. Your physical powers are also in chaos so you probably cannot activate high level mo matrixes.”

Zuo Mo nodded and said, “Yes, I want to engrave a portion of a mo matrix on my arm. When the mo matrix is engraved, the blood and flesh there would recover. It would be like a strong barrel. I will then try to direct the powers into the barrel. This way, the other parts of my body would not contain these chaotic powers, and can recover more quickly.”

He turned around and said to Pu Yao, “You said last time you had a yao art that could guide the powers in the body out? Since it can guided out, then it definitely can be used to guide the powers to my arm.”

Pu Yao and Wei sank into deep thought.

But quickly, the two raised their head simultaneously and their eyes flashed with an excited light.

“The yao art needs to be changed slightly, en, but not by very much.”

“The mo matrix has to be strong, but only has to be strong. With this kind of requirement, a mo matrix is easy to find!”

Once the direction was confirmed, the rest of the matter was not very hard for experts like Pu Yao and wei.

Zuo Mo was slightly excited. He finally had hope of bidding farewell to this paralyzed state.

————

“This is the mo matrix for the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie, colonel level mo matrix, very suited to you. The mo matrix is not complex. This is a mollusc that lives deep in the sea, each is the size of a fist. Its outer shell is one of the hardest materials in the world and can tolerate shocking amounts of power.”

Wei quickly found a suitable mo matrix. The mo matrixes that Pu Yao collected were mostly powerful and great mo matrixes, but in terms of how much he knew, he could not compare to Wei, especially in obscure areas.

“It really isn’t complex.” Zuo Mo examined it for a long time.

Pu Yao also produced the recipe needed. He had studied mo matrixes for a long time, even longer than Zuo Mo. This was not hard for him.

But when Zuo Mo gave the recipe to Ka Zhuo, Ka Zhuo's expression became strange.

"Is there a problem?" Zuo Mo saw something was not right.

"Teacher, the materials on here" Ka Zhuo said slowly, "are very expensive"

"Very expensive?" Zuo Mo blanked.

"Yes, Teacher, very expensive! Like this, Date Fish Bone Powder, this student has only heard of this, and has never seen it before. This Blood Gelatin, this student has never seen it before, and it is definitely not sold in most shops" Ka Zhuo stammered out.

Zuo Mo became depressed.

He finally got a plan with some hope but found that his jingshi, oh, mo bei, wasn't enough!

Even more depressing was that it wasn't that Zuo Mo didn't have the wealth, but that he couldn't take the jingshi out!

Was there anything more tragic than this?

Zuo Mo cried inside.

An unfamiliar voice suddenly interrupted Zuo Mo's grieving.

"Hello, Mister Zuo."

The one who spoke had a very deep voice with a unique resonance.

Zuo Mo looked up and examined the person. A tall and proportional figure wrapped in dark green armor. Dark red eyes looked at Zuo Mo without any hint of warmth.

Colonel level!

Zuo Mo instantly discovered the other's strength from the presence the other exuded.

Zuo Mo's heart shook and felt a thread of danger.

Chapter 547 - Jie Master Ceng Yi

Colonel level.

If this was in the past, Zuo Mo had complete confidence he could destroy the man standing in front of him. At normal strength, he was also colonel level but his Great Day mo physique was ranked second among colonel level physiques and would allow him to dominate mo of the same level. Average mo that were in brigadier level wouldn't be a match for him.

But now, Zuo Mo grimaced. A single colonel was enough to defeat everyone in Shattered Stone Town.

“I hadn't expected to meet a colonel expert in a little place as Shattered Stone Town, it really is my honor.” Zuo Mo's tone was light as he said, “Apologies, this one's body has some problems and is unable to move. If there is any offense, Sir, please have tolerance.”

The other smiled slightly and said, “No matter, this one has heard long ago about Mister Zuo and knows Mister Zuo is not a normal person. Seeing you today, you are as extraordinary as expected. This one is Chao Yu, and is under the command of Ceng Yi Daren.”

His voice was deep and carried an unique resonance.

Heard long ago? Zuo Mo's heart shook. Had the matter with Dong Zi attracted the other's attention?

Seeing Zuo Mo remain silent, Chao Yu was not angry. His dark red eyes stared at Zuo Mo as he said directly, “Which teacher did Mister Zuo have? Matrix awakening masters that can cause their targets to level up through matrix awakenings are very rare.”

Zuo Mo did not answer and asked in response, “Does Sir have a matter to ask of me?”

Chao Yu did not pursue the topic and looked meaningfully at Zuo Mo. He said, “It seems that Mister Zuo doesn’t have simple origins.”

For some reason, Zuo Mo felt this person’s words were dark like a cold wind blowing at his back.

Chao Yu smiled and drawled, “This one wants to invite Mister Zuo to be a guest for a few days at Stone City.”

Be a guest? Stone City?

Zuo Mo was a clever person and naturally was able to hear the implied threat in the words.

Suddenly, a mo walked over holding an unconscious Ka Zhuo in his hand.

“What are you dragging on for?” the income said discontentedly.

He was clearly unsatisfied with Chao Yu's efficiency.

Zuo Mo knew that he was unable to avoid it and said in a deep voice, "I'll go with you!"

Chao Yu laughed unconcernedly and said, "Maybe Mister Zuo will thank us in the future."

Zuo Mo remained silent and only stared coldly at the other.

"What to do? Do you have a solution?" Zuo Mo impatiently asked Pu Yao and Wei in the sea of consciousness. A Gui was lost to the world, her shen power only working occasionally. If the other were provoked it could be disastrous. But he had no ability to fight. Zuo Mo was extremely panicked.

"With your present state, even the best solution is useless," Pu Yao said coldly.

"Wait for a chance!" Wei said calmly, "Since they came to find you, they definitely have something to ask. Before you learn the details of the situation, do not do anything."

Zuo Mo thought and quickly calmed down.

Wei was right, the other clearly had intentions.

"They might have come for the mo matrix." Pu Yao's eye

narrowed and murderousness flashed through his bloody pupil. He was clearly discontent. “They are brave to act against me!”

If something happened to Zuo Mo, none of them would end up well. Acting against Zuo Mo was acting against them.

Zuo Mo felt slightly ashamed. Compared to the two old veterans, his mentality was still slightly tender. However, he was a leader, and after calming down from the initial panic, his mind started to quickly turn.

Those two people were both colonel level. After interacting with Uncle An Ya in these days, Zuo Mo knew the general situation. In Shattered Stone Jie, colonels were in the ranks of experts. It was not a small matter for two colonels to appear together. Chao Yu and the other came in the open and had no intentions of disguising themselves.

Zuo Mo was curled up in A Gui’s embrace as he continued to organize his body. Even though the effects could not be immediately seen, it was the only thing he could do now.

Chao Yu and the other had two enormous black bats as steeds. The wingspan was six zhang, and the back was broad enough to hold seven to eight people.

The black bats looked intimidating but they did not fly quickly. When they flew, a ball of black wind enveloped them which blocked the harsh winds.

After flying for two days, a black mountain appeared in Zuo Mo's view.

The entire mountain was as black as ink, the dropoffs steep as it floated in the sky. Zuo Mo noticed that there were layers of wind around the mountain. The wind carried countless shards of rock that formed a belt of shattered rock.

When they flew near the shattered rock belt, sharp howls almost pierced people's eardrums, the wailing causing the hearer's scalp to prickle.

Chao Yu had been paying attention to Zuo Mo the entire journey. He couldn't help but marvel as he saw that Zuo Mo's gaze was still calm right now. In this shattered stone belt, the hard wind cut like blades. As the wind carried shattered rock fragments, if one was pulled in, even the strongest body would be ground into powder.

"Has Mister Zuo seen such a thing at other places?" Chao Yu couldn't help ask.

"No," Zuo Mo replied indifferently.

It was the first time that Zuo Mo had no agency, he was unable to take the initiative. He was like a fish on the chopping block and could only await for others to act on him. His fighting abilities were zero, his most trusted powers had disappeared. Forced to such a hopeless situation, all of the carelessness, nonchalance, and laziness had disappeared without a trace.

Because there was still A Gui.

Other than his little life, there was still A Gui.

Chatterbox Zuo Mo became silent once again. He wrung out his mind to try to think of anything he could do. He used every second to organize his body even though the actions did not have much meaning.

All of his stray thoughts disappeared. Zuo Mo was focused.

Chao Yu saw that Zuo Mo didn't have the interest in talking so he smiled and closed his mouth.

The two black bats charged into the shattered stone wind belt without any hesitation. A light shield lit up around the bodies of the black bats. The piercing howls instantly disappeared. Zuo Mo felt his vision blur and the scenery change.

The floating black pieces of stone formed a path that appeared in front of them and stretched into the distance.

The black bats flew above the stone path. Soon after, they flew in front of a black palace.

There were two mo guarding the palace gates. One of them saw Chao Yu and his fellow, smiled and said, "You have just returned? Jie Master has almost run out of patience."

Chao Yu grimaced. “We didn’t dare to rest for a moment on the road, we didn’t even take break to drink water until now.”

Zuo Mo’s gaze focused slightly. Jie master! Shattered Stone Jie only had one jie master. Zuo Mo remembered Uncle An Ya had said the jie master of Shattered Stone Jie was called Ceng Yi.

“Don’t complain to me,” the mo guarding the door laughed and said. He then examined Zuo Mo and tsked, “This little boy is the matrix awakening master you found? Are you sure! He’s so sick! This girl is also so ugly!”

Hearing this, murderousness rose inside Zuo Mo.

He looked deeply at the other and memorized the other’s appearance.

————

In the sea of consciousness.

“Zuo Mo’s killing energies are much heavier than before,” Wei said lightly.

Pu Yao said unconcernedly, “This is good, the boy lacked motivation, and was too content with what he had.”

“He treats A Gui very differently,” Wei said meaningfully.

“Women are the most effective!” Pu Yao felt slight regret. “If I’d known sooner, I would have shoved a few women towards him before!”

“A Gui isn’t bad.” Wei seemed to think of something, his tone reminiscing.

“How about shoving a few more women at the boy” Pu Yao spoke to himself.

————

“This is the matrix awakening master you found?” a man slowly asked.

Zuo Mo examined the jie master of Shattered Stone Jie.

Ceng Yi’s figure was not tall nor brawny. His body was actually very thin, a thinness that felt abnormal to Zuo Mo. He was wearing pure white robes. What surprised Zuo Mo the most was that he couldn’t feel any killing energy from the other.

Ceng Yi’s chin was pointy, his face exquisite. What was most eye-catching was his almond-yellow eyes that were extremely similar to snake pupils.

But if one underestimated him because of this, they would die a tragic death!

General!

This jie master that looked as though he could be blown away by the wind was the first general mo that Zuo Mo had ever encountered!~

As expected from the master of a jie!

The general rank of mo was equivalent to the yuanying of xiuzhe. Even if Zuo Mo was fully recovered, he would not be a match for Ceng Yi.

“Is he a snake mo?” Zuo Mo asked Wei.

‘En, a rare white fanged snake mo!’ Wei’s tone carried a rare thread of seriousness.

“White fanged snake mo?”

“En, this branch of snake mo is an ancient snake mo. Their succession is a very unique kind of mo physique, the white fang mo physique.” Wei talked rapidly, “If they break into general rank, they can cultivate the white fang mo physique. The White Fang mo physique is a general rank mo physique.”

Zuo Mo's heart dropped. His Great Day mo physique was a colonel level mo physique which was two ranks lower than the other's White Fang mo physique. Even if Wei didn't say it, Zuo Mo knew that the difference between the two of them was insurmountable.

Now even Pu Yao did not talk. The Great Day mo physique was ranked second in colonel rank. If he encountered normal brigadier level mo physiques, he might have a chance, but facing a general, there was no chance.

"En, we'll think of something else." Zuo Mo recovered his calm.

Pu Yao and Wei exchanged a look and saw the shock in each other's eyes. They hadn't expected that Zuo Mo would still have such motivation and spirit under such a disadvantageous and unbalanced situation.

Chao Yu's voice interrupted the communication between Zuo Mo, Pu Yao and Wei.

"Jie Master! This subordinate encountered Mister Zuo coincidentally in Shattered Stone Town. This subordinate personally saw him awaken the matrix for a youth, and the youth directly level up to captain level."

A burst of conversation instantly rose in the large hall. All the mo had disbelieving expressions. Matrix awakening was common among low level mo but directly leveling up was extremely rare.

Ceng Yi had some surprise on his face. “Oh, you are saying he caused a youth to directly level up to captain level?”

“Hes, this subordinate saw it personally,” Chao Yu said respectfully. He then pointed at the unconscious Ka Zhuo and said, “He is called Ka Zhuo, and he is Mister Zuo’s student.”

“Jie Master, this is Ka Zhuo, this subordinate has seen him before, he is not bad, but this subordinate has never heard of him having a teacher.” Among the crowd, a tall mo stood up, “Hmph! I think Chao Yu is just making things up!”

Chao Yu didn’t even look at the mo and said, “Jie Master, you can wake Ka Zhuo up and question him personally.”

Ceng Yi smiled and lightly waved his hand. “A Yu is a careful person and wouldn’t make a mistake.”

Finishing, he suddenly stood up and slowly walked in front of Zuo Mo.

Chapter 548 - Incurable

The almond-yellow pupils were clearly harmless but Zuo Mo felt as though their stare was gripping him by the throat and he was unable to breathe.

Was this the difference in their strength? Zuo Mo was shocked.

Just as Zuo Mo was going to suffocate, the restless power inside his body suddenly exploded!

Countless streams rampaged and charged in Zuo Mo's body like a flood.

The invisible pressure pushing down on him disappeared with a pop.

Zuo Mo felt his body lighten. His breathing started again. The powers inside of his body lost their target and gradually calmed.

From beginning to end, Zuo Mo did not move. No one knew of such a violent change inside of his body.

Ceng Yi's eyes were thoughtful and then he smiled slightly. "This one has a favour to ask of Mister Zuo."

Ka Zhuo carefully inspected the unconscious young female on the bed. The features of the young female were similar to Ceng Yi and should be Ceng Yi's daughter or someone close. The young female's features were exquisite, the warm and soft red lips slightly open, the delicate brow slightly creased as though she was enduring pain.

A short time later, Ka Zhuo started to sweat. It had taken him a long time to understand what had happened after he was woke up. After the initial panic, he quickly calmed down. If he encountered something as dangerous as this by himself, he would have started trembling long ago, but since his teacher was behind him, he didn't worry so much.

Zuo Mo's endless bag of tricks had completely persuaded Ka Zhuo. Ka Zhuo even felt that if it was about mo matrixes, there was nothing that would be a problem for Teacher.

As Ka Zhuo continued his inspection, the mo matrix on the young females body gradually floated to the surface.

The ivory white mo matrix was hard to detect on the pale skin if one did not look closely. Zuo Mo was slightly surprised. This was the first time he saw ivory-colored mo matrixes.

"This isn't simple." Wei's expression was grave. "The white fang snake mo's greatest barrier in life is breaking through to general level. If they can, they will form the white fang mo physique, if they fail, they will end up like this. Ivory white mo matrixes is an immature mo matrix."

“An immature mo matrix?” It was the first time Zuo Mo heard this term.

Wei flicked a look at Pu Yao. Pu Yao snorted and then spoke, “The mo matrix on the body is not unchanging. When you reach a new level, the mo matrix on your body will change as well, and becomes more mature, more perfect, this is what maturation is. However, if something happens during the process and the mo matrix’s maturation is interrupted, it will become like this.”

“So that is how it is!” Zuo Mo’s understanding of mo matrixes increased by the day. He instantly understood when Pu Yao pointed it out.

He quickly found this was a troublesome problem.

This kind of problem was not easy to solve.

As expected, Wei said helplessly, “This kind of state, in the mo world, is incurable!”

Pu Yao was also silent. He might study mo matrixes but this kind of state wasn’t in the scope of his study.

Zuo Mo felt his head swell.

Ka Zhuo finished his last test and retreated with his forehead full

of sweat. He looked hopefully at Zuo Mo. He felt there wasn't anything that could stop Teacher.

“Mister Zuo, how is it?” Ceng Yi asked. His almond-yellow snake pupils looked coldly at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo felt his scalp prickle. He knew if he didn't have anything, he would not be able to walk alive out of here today.

“Jie Master is a White Fang Snake mo!” Zuo Mo suddenly said.

“Mister Zuo is knowledgeable.” A hint of surprise flashed across Ceng Yi's eyes. White Fang Snake mo was a rare kind of mo and not many people knew of them. Ceng Yi felt some hope that the other was able to recognize it at a glance and the implied skill and knowledge behind it.

“White Fang Snake mo will reach the White Fang mo physique when they enter general level. I had thought it was a rumor and not that it is actually so.” As Zuo Mo talked, his mind whirled furiously.

Ka Zhuo's mouth was gaping widely. For him, this was extremely new.

Ceng Yi's eyes narrowed slightly and then he laughed lightly. “Mister Zuo is very knowledgeable, this one feels respect. Then Mister Zuo should have some explanation about Daughter's situation. Mister Zuo, please explain.”

Zuo Mo said indifferently, “Honored Miss has failed in the breakthrough, the maturation of her mo physique has been interrupted. Right now, her body is probably in chaos, and her life in danger.”

A light flashed across Ceng Yi’s eyes. Zuo Mo felt as though Ceng Yi suddenly turn into a giant, the great pressure almost making him unable to breathe.

This time, the chaotic turbulence inside his body did not move.

Ceng Yi instantly realized that this reaction was not beneficial and restrained his presence. Zuo Mo felt his body relax and he could breathe again.

General level and having a mo physique, the power was terrifying!

Zuo Mo was shocked inside. He heard Ceng Yi say in a low voice, “This one has found more than one hundred matrix awakening masters and only Mister Zuo could identify the ailment. This one feels admiration. Since Mister Zuo can correctly diagnose it, then Mister Zuo must have a solution.”

Zuo Mo said through his teeth, “Truthfully, it is the first time this one has seen such a situation. Even though the cause is known, this one doesn’t have a good grasp on the solution.”

Ceng Yi gave a smile, “Mister Zuo is too modest.”

Even though Ceng Yi had a smile on his face, Zuo Mo felt that smile was glacial.

Zuo Mo knew that he could not refuse. His mind whirled furiously and he continued, “This one is not being modest. Even though it is the first time this one has seen such an ailment, but this one has heard that it is incurable from many sources.”

“Incurable!” Ceng Yi stilled. A hint of grief shone in his eyes but he quickly recovered.

Zuo Mo’s heart shook. This mo’s ability to control his emotions was astounding!

“This one believes Mister Zuo would have a way,” Ceng Yi said slowly.

Zuo Mo knew the crucial time has come. He said calmly, “This one has some ideas but will only know if they are plausible after trying. However, this one will first say if Jie Master wants this one to do this, you need to have enough patience. Life is important. This one’s ideas needs to carry out a lot of experimentation.”

Hearing this, Ceng Yi smiled and said, “That is to be expected. I will give the order to fully cooperate with Mister Zuo. However, in order for Mister Zuo to have better results, Mister Zuo will have to temporarily reside in Stone City.”

Zuo Mo had expected this. He nodded and said, "Alright."

Ceng Yi was very satisfied with Zuo Mo's perceptiveness. He believed that if Zuo Mo was restricted to this place, Zuo Mo wouldn't dare to play any tricks.

Then Zuo Mo was taken to a nearby compound. There were two brigadier mo guarding at the door.

Only now did Zuo Mo release a breath.

He had never experienced the power suppression of higher levels on lower levels. If his mind was not this strong, he would have lost his mind facing Ceng Yi.

However, when he thought of the two brigadier mo outside the door, Zuo Mo grimaced. This time, they wouldn't be able to escape.

Even if his power recovered, there wouldn't be any hope.

Ceng Yi had general level strength and the White Fang mo physique, that was enough to suppress Zuo Mo.

His gaze landed on A Gui's expressionless face. For some unknown reason, Zuo Mo suddenly thought of A Gui's beautiful and stunning bare feet that he saw through the strands of hair blown up by the wind.

On the rough rock, the beautiful and exquisite bare feet were flawless and tempting. But this pair of feet trembled from the burden with every step in the wind and sand.

There was no stopping as she carried him step by step.

His line of sight was mostly occluded but these short glimpses made the situation clear.

Zuo Mo's eyes flashed. The low mood flew away. He felt full of energy. He was not demotivated by the situation in front of him. He believed he could overcome this obstacle.

A Gui I'll definitely take you and leave here!

Zuo Mo said to himself.

He started to ponder his present situation. Even though he was in a cage, he had a chance to breathe. In the short term, he didn't need to worry about his safety.

This amount of time was enough for him to do something.

Ba La looked at the inventory list and felt great pain. Ever since that strange matrix awakening master came, countless materials had been taken from his place. Ba La was the housekeeper of the

Jie Master. Every time, he had to give his permission for these lists. Even though the Jie Master had already ordered him to do his best to satisfy what the other needed, he still felt pain.

However, he didn't dare to do anything about the requests. Everyone knew the love Jie Master had towards Miss. If he provoked the Jie Master because of this, it was a road leading to death.

He gritted his teeth and agreed to hand over the materials.

Ba La understood his master very well. The Jie Master wasn't one that was easily fooled. If that damned matrix awakening master could not save Miss when the time came, he would die terribly!

In the hands of the Jie Master, dying was not an easy matter!

None of the matrix awakening masters that had come before had left alive.

Zuo Mo's little yard was still guarded by two mo. They were only responsible for standing guard and were not concerned with what was happening inside.

"Are you familiar with the mo matrixes I taught you?" Zuo Mo asked Ka Zhuo.

"Familiar." Ka Zhuo nodded.

“Then let’s start.” Zuo Mo did not chat. Time was extremely important for him.

Ka Zhuo carefully started to engrave the Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie mo matrix on Zuo Mo’s right palm. The mo matrix was not complex and Ka Zhuo finished in four hours.

Then Ka Zhuo picked up one of the medicinal fluids that had been prepared. These fluids were made using materials they’d gotten from Ba La with the excuse they were for experiments. Ka Zhuo dipped into the fluid and started to brush it onto the mo matrix.

A burning feeling came from his palm. Zuo Mo was joyed.

Ka Zhuo used the next medicinal fluid and brushed again and again.

The feeling of burning increased. Zuo Mo felt as though his palm was going to burn to ash, his entire palm was red like liquid metal.

Ka Zhuo took out a vial that glowed with a serene blue light, the last medicinal fluid.

The moment the medicinal fluid touched the mo matrix, a feeling of cool comfort formed. Zuo Mo almost groaned in pleasure.

When the serene blue medicinal fluid touched the mo matrix, it quickly permeated into the mo matrix.

The entire mo matrix quickly became serene blue and covered Zuo Mo's entire palm.

When the medicinal fluid entered the last stroke of the mo matrix, something changed!

Chapter 549 - The Mountain Dragon Corps

Shu Long's group encountered trouble.

A group of mo was staring at them with malicious intent. The mo that was leading the group arrogantly shouted, "Listen well to ye, hand over half of your things and mo bei, and ye will allow you to live. If any of you don't give ye face, ye won't be polite."

Shu Long looked towards his more experienced companion, Ye Ling. Before this journey, he had never been to the mo world.

Ye Ling's expression was not good. He pressed his voice low and said, "They are bandits. There probably isn't a ruling faction in this area and making it easy for bandits to control the area."

"Bandits?" Shu Long stilled. "There are bandits in the mo world as well?"

Ye Ling's old face flushed. "A lot." His mood then lifted as he said heatedly, "So we need our king. Only our king can once again establish order!"

Shu Long patted Ye Ling heavily on the shoulder. "You are right!"

Immediately after, Shu Long slowly took out his mo weapon and said sternly, "Daren's light has not reached this place, then we will first proceed for Daren!"

On this trip, the majority of his group were the elite of the elite from Guard Camp. In the past while they had been completely loyal to Zuo Mo, they did not have any goals or dreams. But after Ye Ling appeared, this battle maniac had caused Guard Camp to reassess themselves.

A dreams, a drive, for Guard Camp; people who were once xiu slaves and encountered great hardship, this was akin to the light in a dark world.

They naturally thought of other xiu slaves that were still in terrible situations, that Guard Camp was once enslaved like them.

Every hardship guard believed that only Daren could help more xiu slaves escape their tragic fates. Since they joined Daren, no matter where they had gone, as long as it was Zuo Mo's territory, there were no xiu slaves.

Silently, Guard Camp started to form their simple dream.

The only one that detected this transformation was Lil' Miss, but Lil' Miss felt that this kind of change was not bad. It was actually good. A battalion with a dream usually possessed astounding combat abilities because they would focus themselves and motivate themselves.

The mo were shocked that Shu Long and the others were planning on fighting back.

“You really have guts! Know who ye is? Ye is from the famous Mountain Dragon Corps! Hmph hmph, dare to resist? Ye will let you know what a massacre is” The leading mo smirked coldly.

Shu Long didn't even blink as his heavy armor formed on his body.

Behind him, the hardship guards manifested their heavy armor. Shu Long held his large halberd in his hand, the beak-like point was red as though it had been soaked in blood.

Shu Long was clear that his talent as a general was average and far from being comparable to Lil' Miss' talent. So no matter what tactic or battle formation that Pu Yao or Wei had trained them in, he would always methodically complete them.

To the strictest and most stringent degree!

Even while travelling normally they maintained a battle formation. Even if they were walking from their camp to the training field, they would maintain their battle formation.

On this long journey, they still maintained their battle formation.

What Pu Yao and Wei demanded of Guard Camp was that they had to be able to activate the battle formation in the span of two breaths. Shu Long felt that he lacked talent and wanted to have

even more time to respond to the enemy trained until this was down to half of a breath.

This was a standard that was so high that even Pu Yao and Wei were shocked.

At this time, this high standard was displayed.

Before the other finished speaking, the Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation had started to move. The Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation variant that required less than one hundred hardship guards was what they trained the most in.

Threads of black mist left each hardship guard like an arrow and gathered around Shu Long at an astounding rate.

Half a breath!

Shu Long who was shrouded in the black smoke did not hesitate at all. His left foot suddenly stepped forward, as he lunged forward, and the black halberd in his hand suddenly swiped forward!

“Kill!”

The black mist covering his body flooded towards the black halberd. A black energy howled as it flew towards the enemy!

“You dare!” The mo leader was both shocked and furious. He hadn’t expected the other to really fight back and Shu Long’s move had been so fast that they responded only after the black energy formed.

The black energy was lightning fast!

When it flew in front of this group of mo, the black energy that had been a few chi on the halberd had expanded to twenty zhang in length!

The enormous energy was like a sickle!

It cut down the chaff!

Pew pew pew!

Anyone touched by the black energy was sent flying. Blood and flesh sprayed through the air. They didn’t even have the time to shout before they disappeared into the furious howl.

The howls dissipated and the black energy disappeared.

The ground was filled with bloodied bodies and broken limbs. The ground that had encountered the black energy was scorched black and was left completely lifeless.

Everyone was shocked by the scene in front of them.

There was an enormous section of the mo troop that had disappeared. The mo that had been standing in that space before had all disappeared. The remaining mo all had expressions of hopelessness. When the black energy had come at them, the sky in their eyes had become night!

The rising scent of blood was like terror that could not be restrained and completely filled the air. In the history of Mountain Dragon Corps, they had never faced such a fearsome opponent before.

Was this the elite of some battalion?

Even the most stupid person understood they had hit a hard nut this time. The terrible conditions of their fellows made them realize just how vicious this troop of a hundred people was!

Boom!

All the bandits reacted the same. They turned and scattered!

Shu Long who had been preparing to send a second attack stopped. The enemy's weak resolve received their disdain.

"Mountain Dragon Corps no wonder we never heard of them" someone muttered.

Guard Camp's display didn't just shock the enemy but also people on their own side. The flower yao were alright as they had seen Vermillion Bird Camp before and that was a place that was just as freakish as Guard Camp.

But Nan Yue, Cang Ze, and the other yao, as well as Ye Ling were stunned!

No inquiries, no announcements, they didn't even wait for the other to finish speaking, without any warning, as fast as lightning, and so aggressive

This was a vicious battle machine!

Ye Ling was a mo with knowledge and he had seen the Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation before. However, it was the first time he had seen such a oppressive and suffocating Crow Fiend Mo Kill Formation.

As expected of his king's core troops!

He was filled with admiration, and when he thought of his own battalion, he was filled with shame. He resolved that he would definitely learn from Shu Long Daren when he returned. Such a vicious and domineering way of fighting was a great weapon! Only by becoming stronger could his minuscule strength contribute to his king's dominion!

Nan Yue, Cang Ze and the others were even more shocked, their

bodies numb.

Pu Yao who still held a grudge over how Guard Camp had been stolen from him kept on instilling in Nan Yue and the other's the belief that Guard Camp were their competitors.

So on the way here, Nan Yue and the others had secretly observed Shu Long's group.

Before this incident, they hadn't found anything special about Shu Long and the other's but the moment Shu Long and the other troop acted, they felt as though a harmless-looking wild beast had suddenly revealed its sharp and vicious fangs, shook off all disguise and revealed its true bloodthirsty nature!

The shock produced by this entire process caused their limbs to become cold and their faces bloodless.

No matter if it was Nan Yue, Cang Ze or Ming Jue Zi, their experiences had been very peaceful. Compared to the hardship guards that had fought and killed their way out, they were like infants.

“So strong” Cang Ze swallowed, his face ashen.

Ming Jue Zi had a grimace, “Daren really found a good competitor for us!”

Nan Yue had remnants of terror on her face but she bit down on

her lips and said stubbornly, “We need to work harder!”

They finally understood why Pu Yao was demanded so much of them. All their objections and opinions dissipated in front of the domineering and powerful strength of Shu Long and the others!

They didn’t speak, but they each resolved inside to work harder!

Shu Long himself was not that kind of smart person. His response naturally was not so sensitive. Seeing the other choosing to flee, he deactivated the battle formation.

“Let’s go, we need to move faster,” Shu Long said in a deep voice.

Ye Ling also refocused and nodded. “Yes, it is most important to find our king!”

The troop once again started to travel. They did not think more about this interaction that couldn’t even be called a fight. They only hoped that they could reach Shattered Stone Jie as fast as possible.

However, what they hadn’t thought about was that this place they were travelling through was truly the land of bandits.

The news that they had defeated the Mountain Dragon Corps was like a pebble that was thrown into the water and caused a whole series of ripples.

The serene blue light on his right palm was blinding and illuminated the entire room.

The blue light was produced by the collisions of the turbulent flows inside his body. This kind of collision was just an instinctive response by the powers in his body and was not a regular and organized collision.

This type of collision was unexpected to Zuo Mo but he was overjoyed about it.

There had to be a process similar to awakening for the engraved mo matrix to start working. Only after awakening will the connection between the mo matrix and the flesh truly become close.

The irregular flows of power continuously charged at the mo matrix of the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie and so the mo matrix was quickly merging with his body.

The entire process continued for four whole hours before the blue light gradually dimmed and then disappeared.

Zuo Mo felt that his right palm had become hardened to a degree that would have been unimaginable in the past. He felt that if he now used his palm to hit a flying sword, he wouldn't be hurt at all.

This filled Zuo Mo with confidence.

What was left now was to guide the chaotic flows inside his body into this rock-hard palm.

This was the most important step!

Even as strong and resolved as Zuo Mo was mentally, he felt a rare thread of nervousness.

His gaze unconsciously landed on A Gui's face. From his angle, he coincidentally saw A Gui's chin. Zuo Mo suddenly found that the skin at A Gui's chin was smooth and completely different than her face.

This sudden discovery took away Zuo Mo's nervousness.

He laughed.

After laughing, Zuo Mo was in a good mood. He threw away all his stray thoughts and emotions, he looked outside and entered a state of concentration

– come.

Chapter 550 - Success!

There were still flows of power colliding and charging inside his body. Three completely different types of power continuously crashed together and what shocked him was that under such collisions, the three powers had continuously grown stronger.

The rate of increase far surpassed Zuo Mo's knowledge.

They seemed to become stronger by the hour. Any kind of cultivation speed compared to this was as slow as a turtle.

If he could have this kind of growth rate when cultivating, how fortunate would it be!

This thought flashed through Zuo Mo's mind before he threw it away. The danger associated with this abnormal growth was enough for any xiuzhe to die multiple times.

If Zuo Mo wasn't cultivating shen power and the three powers were connected, if it wasn't that he had the Soul Setting Divine Light inside his body as the counterbalance, if he didn't have the Greenvine Mystical Water healing his body inside, he would have died a few hundred times already.

Zuo Mo gradually grasped some patterns to the movements of the power. This kind of crazy growth was because the powers were mutually stimulating each other. Right now, the three powers inside his body were like three factions of equal power. Any expansion of one faction would cause the expansion of the other

two.

And this kind of growth was at a tricky equilibrium.

It was this tricky equilibrium that was why Zuo Mo's body had not been destroyed. But these rampaging flows of power continuously attacked Zuo Mo's body. This was also the reason that Zuo Mo was unable to move.

Zuo Mo's way of thinking was not complex. He was to guide the chaotic flows into his right hand to lessen the burden on his body and allow his body to recover the ability to move.

But it was not easy to do all this.

Pu Yao had taught the yao art to Zuo Mo but Zuo Mo's consciousness was also scattered and not in his control. Without his consciousness, he was unable to cast the yao art.

What Zuo Mo needed to do now was to control a small part of his consciousness.

This was the most difficult and most important step.

Zuo Mo's only chance would occur during the short period of time the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie formation and his hand's flesh was merging together. The equilibrium in his hand would be broken! The flesh would merge with the mo matrix, and leave behind the ling power and consciousness. What Zuo Mo

needed to do was to split the two remaining powers, taking out the ling power that was tangled with the consciousness!

The consciousness that remained would be enough to cast the yao art.

Zuo Mo was like a hunter waiting for an opportunity, patiently waiting for the best time.

Suddenly, the mo matrix gave off a serene blue light. The connection between his hand and the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie had increased, and the physical power among the three powers in his hand was decreasing dramatically.

The balance was broken!

Highly focused, Zuo Mo acted in this instant!

His nimble five fingers on his right hand bloomed, flickering and pointing at a rapid rate!

Finger movements!

The finger movements that he had practiced so much on back at Wu Kong Mountain once again appeared!

“Finger movements?” Pu Yao was slightly surprised. Wei who was nearby was also left surprised. None of them had thought that

Zuo Mo would use finger movements.

But these two were extremely smart and quickly understood. They said at the same time, “This is a good solution!”

Any beginner xiuzhe had a common knowledge that the finger movements were the surface guides and ling power was the core for control. In other words, the finger movements were just an assistive method and ling power control was actually what was effective. But this also meant that there was a special connection between finger movements and ling power.

Since his ling power had gone out of his control, he would use finger movements to guide the ling power.

This was something easy to say, but the number of people who could think of this was pitifully little. Everyone would think that the core controlled the surface, but in the eyes of many people, using the surface to control the core was mostly ineffectual. Even Pu Yao and Wei hadn’t thought of this, so when the two of them saw Zuo Mo using this method, they instantly complimented him.

Ka Zhuo gaped with wide eyes. He had never seen such nimble fingers before, and never such fantastical finger movements!

The dancing five fingers smoothly went through the finger movements.

Zuo Mo quickly felt the change in his palm. The ling power that

was tangled with his consciousness was affected by the finger movements and gradually broke free as though it was attracted to something else. It flowed out through Zuo Mo's five fingers.

Zuo Mo's fingers gradually lit up. At the beginning, it was a light indiscernible from the light of his palm but as his five fingers moved, it became brighter!

His five fingers were like five bright dots of light that drew out streams of bright light as he moved.

[Little Art of Cloud and Rain]!

The spell that Zuo Mo was most familiar with!

A faint ball of mist slowly spread through the intersection of the bright lights. The mist gradually spread and the flickering fingers danced in and out of view with its streaks of light beautifully through the mist.

Zuo Mo did not have the attention to spare and admire this beautiful scene. His attention was focused because he had to perfectly finish the guiding yao art!

He had to split his mind on two tasks!

The benefits of shen power appeared now. If this was in the past, he definitely did not have the ability to cast a yao art when he was also maintaining a spell.

This yao art that was called “Other Life Art” not difficult but was very obscure. Pu Yao had said proudly that even in his era, there were pitifully few that knew of this yao art.

Zuo Mo found it hard to understand Pu Yao’s smugness. He really could not think of anyone who would use this yao art in a situation unlike this one. But in order to protect the stability of his sea of consciousness, he did not voice his thoughts.

At this time, Zuo Mo had thrown these random thoughts to the back of his mind. His consciousness which was disentangled from the ling power had begun merging together again.

Zuo Mo effortlessly cast [Other Life Art]!

The moment the yao art was completed, Zuo Mo’s body suddenly shook. The rampaging chaotic flows inside his body completely stopped.

What was going on?

Zuo Mo had a bad feeling. Why did it stop, this was completely different than what they had expected!

Before he could think more, the flows that had stopped then exploded without warning!

Boom!

The chaotic flows present in every part of his body were like sharks that smelt blood and flooded towards Zuo Mo's right hand.

Zuo Mo's body violently shook and he grunted.

The usual collisions of the chaotic flows were extremely painful. But these new crazy collisions were like countless blades sawing back and forth on Zuo Mo's body.

The Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie mo matrix on his right hand was affected and suddenly released a blinding blue light.

The blue light given off this time was brighter than any other time. The entire room became dyed in blue light and Zuo Mo's right hand was like a blinding ball of light.

The blue light was increasing in strength!

It was so bright that Ka Zhuo had to close his eyes. He was shocked inside. As expected of Teacher, this was wondrous! Even though he didn't really understand what Zuo Mo was doing, it did not stop him from marveling at it.

His right hand was like a bottomless hole. As the power flooded in, other than the mo matrix brightening, there wasn't any other response.

As the chaotic flows entered his right hand, the feeling of pain decreased drastically and his paralyzed body quickly recovered its mobility.

Zuo Mo was overjoyed!

Success!

He truly succeeded!

When the last chaotic flow burrowed into Zuo Mo's right hand, Zuo Mo's battered body quickly recovered under the nurturing of the Greenvine Mystical Water.

Such a marvelous Greenvine Mystical Water!

Zuo Mo suppressed his joy and tried to move. His left arm was able to move!

But due to his position, his left hand was placed on A Gui's chest. With this movement, it caused a serious consequence

—So soft!

Zuo Mo's face was red. That ... he couldn't always eat soft rice!

After warning himself, Zuo Mo carefully got off A Gui. It had been too long since he moved and his movements were clumsy and stiff. Fortunately, A Gui seemed to understand that he had recovered and did not try to stop him.

The moment his feet landed on the ground, Zuo Mo almost cried!

Success!

His body was completely empty of power, and even his mo physique was unable to be used. But just having recovered his ability to move was enough for him to be ecstatic!

Zuo Mo quickly found an unpredicted situation—the blue light on his hand did not show any signs of dimming.

He quickly understood after thinking. After taking in so much power, these powers would continuously charge at the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie mo matrix. The mo matrix that was being stimulated would naturally light up.

While he understood, Zuo Mo was troubled. Was he going to have to go outside with this ball of light?

After more thought, Zuo Mo found a length of cloth and carefully wrapped up his right hand. After wrapping more than ten layers, the blue light was finally covered.

Without the blinding blue light, Ka Zhuo's vision cleared up.

When he saw Zuo Mo standing, he was shocked and stammered, “Teacher, you you have recovered completely?”

Zuo Mo smiled slightly. “Recovered in part.”

Then his gaze landed on A Gui and instantly became much gentler. “A Gui, sorry for burdening you!”

A Gui did not react as though she did not hear the words.

Zuo Mo did not care. He said lightly, “I will definitely take you and leave! I will heal you, recover your memories, I want to know your name.”

A Gui stood woodenly.

“I can definitely do it!” Lowering his head, Zuo Mo looked at his palm, so resolved as though he was announcing his oath to himself.

He started to exercise his body. A short while later, he found his coordination again.

After achieving this step, he sat down again and started to study his right hand that he had wrapped in many layers.

All of the chaotic power flows had been sucked into his right hand. These chaotic flows had formed a whirlpool.

No matter what kind of power it was, it would always search for balance!

Zuo Mo seemed to understand something.

All of the chaotic flows were compressed in his little hand. The entanglement between the three powers had increased. Having lost the comparatively vast space to rampage, they were more tightly packed and the collisions between them were even more violent. Zuo Mo could feel the powerful strength contained in the collision!

However, he had expected this.

But his next discovery caused his expression to change drastically!

Chapter 551 - Good That Came With The Bad

The power inside his hand was furiously growing at a rate multiple times compared to before!

The power whirlpool seemed to be expanding at a visible rate. The increasing power caused the presence of the whirlpool to become even more terrifying, the ferocity of the power collisions was rapidly increasing. The waves of power pushed outward and caused this compressed whirlpool of power to become even more chaotic.

No wonder Zuo Mo's expression changed. If the rate continued to increase like this, even the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie would not be able to tolerate the power whirlpool inside his hand for very long!

Zuo Mo had never expected that guiding the power flows into his hand would cause their rate of growth to increase so greatly!

This also meant that the time Zuo Mo had left had shrunk dramatically.

Zuo Mo's expression became stern. He reflexively moved his body. He was slightly unaccustomed to this empty body.

Suddenly, he had an idea. If he could pull out and process power from his hand and move it into his body

He did it as he thought about it. He tried to pull out a small amount of power from the power whirlpool in his palm. However, what depressed him was that no matter if he used spells, yao arts, or mo skills, he was unable to obtain one thread of power from the power whirlpool.

The power whirlpool spun at a high speed and all the chaotic power flows were tightly sucked into the power whirlpool.

Zuo Mo was not demotivated. He patiently pondered it.

As he thought, he suddenly found that each of the chaotic flows in the power whirlpool were usually three powers tangled together, and it was very difficult to extract just one power.

Three powers ... three powers tangled together, wasn't that just shen power?

Zuo Mo's eyes suddenly lit up.

The power whirlpool seemed to suddenly slow down. Those chaotic power flows magnified in front of his eyes and gradually became clear.

When the three powers merged, it was shen power!

Zuo Mo murmured to himself as he stared unblinkingly.

Suddenly, he moved into a strange posture, the beginning position for shen power cultivation that was recorded on the golden leaf. Almost the instant he got into position, a thread of gold light floated out of the power whirlpool.

Zuo Mo's mind was completely clear. Without any pause, he moved through the following positions. Gold threads continued to flow out of the power whirlpool. These threads did not seem to be affected by the suction of the whirlpool at all.

These golden threads were as thin as hair as they slowly floated in the air above the whirlpool. This was shen power.

At this time, the ray of Soul Setting Divine Light inside Zuo Mo's body suddenly lit up.

The shen power threads that were flowing suddenly stopped. With a flash of the divine light, the shen power seemed to be pulled by an unseen force, suddenly breaking out of the attraction to the whirlpool and flowing from the middle of his palm into his arm!

These hair-thin shen power strands quickly merged into Zuo Mo's body when they left his palm.

A feeling of swelling power rose!

It was as though his parched body had suddenly become replenished by the rain. Every bit of his blood and flesh was

greedily absorbing these strands of shen power.

The moves that had been raw before seemed to have merged into Zuo Mo's bones. His movements flowed and felt simple yet enlightened.

Threads of shen power continuously flew out of Zuo Mo's palm into every part of Zuo Mo's body.

The Soul Setting Divine Light dimmed and brightened as though it was the lighthouse guiding the ships in the dark. If Zuo Mo looked carefully at the Soul Setting Divine Light at this time, he would find to his shock that the Soul Setting Divine Light was much brighter than in the past.

"Is he actually a genius?" Wei suddenly said.

His expression was extremely complex. There was shock, disbelief, dazedness, suspicious, but when he said this, his tone was certain.

"Otherwise, why would I take him as a student?" Pu Yao could not disguise the smugness in his expression, but his bloody pupil still exposed his own shock.

"I'm very curious about his origins now," Wei said lightly, "He is able to cultivate the mo physique, able to cultivate yao arts, able to

cultivate spells, able to cultivate shen power, able to comprehend the Soul Setting Divine Light, it really is”

Wei almost didn't know how to describe it.

The smugness on Pu Yao's' face retreated and his usual indifference came back. “No matter what his birth is, my student is my student.”

“Do not be so nervous.” Wei smiled slightly. “I will not have malicious aims on him. This kind of genius will never lack for enemies. I don't need to increase their numbers, I just anticipate it!”

A light flashed through Pu Yao's bloody pupil. “What do you want to do?”

“Do you remember why we were defeated in the past?”

Wei smiled slightly but that smile was without any warmth.

“What? Mountain Dragon Corps is this embarrassing?” an one-eyed mo wolf shouted. His gaze was vicious, his face set in a snarl, scars crisscrossed his face and caused him to appear intimidating.

In this Eminent Mountain Jie, this one-eyed mo wolf's

reputation was feared. He wasn't just the leader of the biggest group of bandits, he was also the boss that was most famous in Eminent Mountain Jie.

Eminent Mountain Jie was ruled by bandits. This was a famed home of bandits and the number of bandit groups were in the thousands.

The merchants that passed by didn't dare to travel through this region, and due to the fact there were no large factions in the surroundings, no one came to rid the area of bandits. Over time, Eminent Mountain Jie became a true den of bandits. They raided in all areas and all of the business routes in the surroundings were within their raiding area.

The more daring bandit groups would even travel to raid places further away.

In Eminent Mountain Jie, there was only one kind of mo that could survive, bandits.

Hearing that someone had come to Eminent Mountain Jie to show off, the one-eyed mo wolf couldn't accept it.

“Boss, that group is really strong! They probably aren't from an average battalion. There aren't many of them, about one hundred and so,” the subordinate said cautiously. He had not seen the battle personally and all the intelligence he had had been learned from the lucky survivors of Mountain Dragon Corps.

“Mountain Dragon Corps? Those trash!” the one-eyed mo wolf said disdainfully. “They are all cowardly! This kind of trash is an embarrassment to our Eminent Mountain Jie.”

The one-eyed mo clearly was talking as though he was the master of the jie.

Viciousness flashed through his eyes as he snarled, “Even those proper battalions do not dare to come to our territory to make trouble! Just a hundred people, such daring! They really think they are something!”

The subordinate perceptively did not try to urge otherwise. He was clear about his boss’ fiery temper. The boss hated matters that lost his face the most. If he was not perceptive, he wouldn’t be able to keep his head.

“Go! Tell the other corps, I’ll give a space to whoever exterminates this group on the next trip out!” The one-eyed mo wolf narrowed his one eye and said in a deep voice.

The subordinate was filled with sympathy towards this group of people that had charged into Eminent Mountain Jie. They were finished! With Boss throwing this prize out, there wouldn’t be a speck of these one hundred people left.

The one-eyed mo wolf was the strongest in Eminent Mountain Jie. Only he dared to attack the highly defended cities. Every time he went out on a city raid, he would come back with great prizes that the other factions were deeply envious of. The rule of the one-

eyed mo wolf was that whichever bandit group performed a great service would be allowed to participate in the raids. This was a great business!

These people were really pitiful.

————

Zuo Mo woke up from his tranquil state. When he opened his eyes, a light flashed across them.

The feeling of being filled with explosive power was so familiar that he almost assumed he had recovered to his peak! He lightly shook his head, pia pia pia, a string of pops occurred from his neck down to his tailbone.

An unprecedented feeling of comfort filled his body.

Zuo Mo's eyes brightened and his joy was hard to disguise. The shen power inside his body had not reached his peak but his present shen power was more pure and condensed than it was in the past!

He tried to turn shen power into the three powers, and there were no hindrances. What made him happier was that at almost the same moment he thought about it, the shen power had turned into the three powers. The entire process almost didn't have any pause, and was much greater than the process in the past.

The good that came with the bad!

He really got something good this time with the bad!

The three powers that came from the purer shen power was much purer than before. Zuo Mo had a feeling that he was just a thread away from a breakthrough.

This breakthrough wasn't a breakthrough in a single field, but in all areas! Ling power, mo physique, spiritual consciousness, they had all reached the border of a breakthrough.

What made him even happier was that he had a strong confidence he would have a successful breakthrough.

He raised his right hand. The whirlpool of power had shrunk by only a third, and the rate of spinning was slower than before. But it was still growing and not long in the future, it would recover to its previous form.

Zuo Mo suddenly became excited. The whirlpool in his right hand was like a shen power spring that could continuously provide shen power for him. If he persisted in taking shen power from it, his shen power would keep growing.

His rate of improvement would become astounding!

Zuo Mo was filled with confidence. Looking at the wooden A Gui, he couldn't help but go forward and ruffle A Gui's hair. He

muttered excitedly, “A Gui, A Gui, I succeeded! I really succeeded!”

A Gui’s warm and raven-black long hair was turned into a pitiful bird’s nest. However, she did not react and only looked at Zuo Mo.

That pair of dim and grey-white eyes seemed to be shrouded in mist.

Ka Zhuo was gaping. In that instant, the strong pressure that Zuo Mo exuded almost pushed him to the ground.

This this world had changed too quickly

There wasn’t anything that could give a person more confidence than power. Having recovered the majority of his strength, Zuo Mo was even more composed and calm. He did not continue to extract shen power. He hadn’t completely absorbed the shen power he had just taken. It would probably take two to three days before the process would be complete.

He decided to look at that young female mo.

As to Ceng Yi, a hint of battle spirit flashed across Zuo Mo’s calm face. He was going to give the other a great surprise!

So what if he was at the general level!

Chapter 552 - White Fang Mo Matrix

Murderous intent flashed through A Wen's eyes. He had, long ago, noticed the group of people nearby. It was clear that the group was targeting them and it could be seen that the other had a very low opinion of them. Unrestrained laughter could occasionally be heard from the groups.

One two three four seven!

A Wen counted inside. There were seven groups of mo, each of unknown origins surrounding them. They were clearly being targeted.

Right now, A Wen was not the same naïve youth that relied on only his talent to survive in the arena. He had fought in large scale battles, seen rivers of blood. Both Pu Yao and Wei had great affection for him and his talent, putting great effort into teaching him.

He was the strongest hardship guard in Guard Camp, even stronger than Shu Long!

A the only shadow mo guard his abilities were completely different from the other hardship guards. He had unparalleled speed so he had always acted as the scout.

Even though the troop was only barely more than one hundred people, Shu Long still methodically sent out scouts.

A Wen had quickly discovered these groups of bandits. The other's unrestrained nature caused murderousness to rise but A Wen did not act by himself, instead he reported the information to Shu Long.

"Seven groups of bandits" Shu Long made a thoughtful sound.

"Yes, all the groups have different head counts. The largest is about five to six hundred people, and the smallest is two to three hundred people," A Wen reported in detail, "There are about three thousand people in total."

Hearing this, Ye Ling's expression changed slightly.

Nan Yue, Cang Ze, and the others stared at each other. They were completely shocked at this news. Three thousand people! When they looked at the hundred or so people around them, they felt a wave of coldness rise.

Three thousand against one hundred. In other words, each one of them had to defeat thirty bandits.

This was a ratio that seemed hopeless!

They suddenly felt great admiration for Shu Long, as his expression was unchanged after hearing the news and there was no trace of panic.

As expected of the leader of Guard Camp, he had the mannerisms of a great general!

“Ye Ling, what do you think?” Shu Long suddenly asked Ye Ling.

Ye Ling’s expression had changed but he forced himself to maintain calmness. “Daren what we need to do now is increase our speed and charge out of this jie before they finish surrounding us!”

Shu Long did not nod. He was thinking.

He quickly shook his head and refused Ye Ling’s suggestion. “Our speed is not fast. They are bandits and are skilled in quick raids. They have an advantage of speed and there probably are more people waiting for us ahead .”

Ye Ling’s face was white. Shu Long’s analysis was to the point. “Then what do we do?”

“Fight!” Shu Long’s eyes were filled with murderousness as he said in a deep voice, “We mustn’t just fight, we need to fight them until their forces are crippled! Only then will we have a chance to charge out of this jie.”

Everyone, including Ye Ling and Nan Yue, was stunned. One hundred against three thousand, how did Shu Long Daren want them to fight?

Wasn't that just seeking death.

One hundred against three thousand, there wasn't any chance of victory!

Shu Long seemed to know their thoughts and said sternly, "We are a trained battalion group, they are just a bunch of bandits. No matter how many there are, they are just rabble, there is nothing to fear."

Ye Ling gritted his teeth. "How does Daren want to fight?"

"We will only have one chance. If we cannot destroy them in one strike, and they scatter, we will be harassed the entire way and then be in a reactive position," Shu Long said gravely.

Zuo Mo inspected the mo matrix on the young female's body. Now that he was half recovered, he didn't need Ka Zhuo to help him examine her.

His movements were very slow, and his expression was grave.

When the mo matrix's maturation was interrupted, it actually had caused irreparable damage. The mo matrix on the female's body was unusually complex, the White Fang mo matrix was unique to the White Fang Snake mo. If it had complete maturation, she would enter general level and her mo physique

would naturally form.

So young and she had touched the door to the general level. This young female was astoundingly talented.

The White Fang mo matrix was extremely unique. It could absorb power continuously and compress it to become more condensed. When it was cultivated to the extreme, one could compress all the power in the body to a point smaller than the point of a needle. This needle point was so powerful it could penetrate anything. Zuo Mo guessed that it could even penetrate a mature “Domain.”

Pu Yao and Wei examined the White Fang mo matrix curiously. None of them had ever seen the White Fang mo matrix before.

“It is slightly interesting. No wonder the White Fang mo matrix ranks sixteenth among the general rank mo physiques,” Pu Yao said interestedly. He was an expert in mo matrixes and with a glance, he understood the core fundamentals.

Wei looked at the young lady and then took his gaze away. He wasn’t too interested in mo matrixes but he had not seen this one before. Now that he saw the real thing, he was satisfied.

“Sixteenth among general level mo physiques?” Zuo Mo said in shock.

“En, a very strong mo physique. However what its greatest

feature is that if one reaches general level, the mo physique automatically forms!” Pu Yao suddenly said, “How about you get some of this girl’s blood. Her blood is probably strange.”

Wei who had been silent suddenly opened, “This idea is pretty good. I know some methods of blood sacrifice, maybe you can possess this bloodline as well.”

Zuo Mo thought and then shook his head. “No I feel that my Great Day mo physique will soon have a breakthrough, the feeling is very strong.”

“That’s true. You cultivate the Great Day mo physique. The other mo physiques cannot compare to it in terms of their foundations,” Pu Yao nodded and said in agreement.

Wei asked Zuo Mo, “You plan on saving her?”

“Save her?” Zuo Mo shook his head. “I do not have such great ability. This damage caused by the mo matrix has also damaged her blood and flesh. I cannot save her.”

Wei became silent.

Zuo Mo did not speak more and continued to examine the mo matrix of this young female.

He didn’t have any plans of saving her whatsoever. He couldn’t do it, but even if he could, he didn’t plan too. He was planning on

making trouble for Ceng Yi once he had his breakthrough to get even over the matter of being forced against his will.

He didn't have the habit of showing someone the right side of his face after they slapped the left.

But this White Fang mo matrix was really profound. Even Pu Yao didn't have many general level mo matrixes.

This was a rare chance!

Zuo Mo's fingertip moved along the mo matrix. The unusually profound White Snake mo matrix caused him to sink into an immersed state.

Without knowing it, a thread of shen power was drawn out of his finger.

When his finger traced the mo matrix to the forehead of the young female, something happened!

A great suction force suddenly formed at the forehead of the young female. Zuo Mo's shen power broke free of his control and furiously flooded towards the young female's forehead.

Zuo Mo was astounded!

What was this?

But no matter how hard he tried, the shen power did not listen to his orders and furiously flooded into the forehead of the young female.

Zuo Mo instantly panicked. If this kept on going, wasn't he going to be drained dry?

Zuo Mo who had just recovered half of his strength could not accept a fate of being drained dry again.

In a panic, Zuo Mo's right hand pushed against the young female's body trying to push her away.

Boom!

The mo matrix on the young female's body suddenly lit up. The blinding light broke through the room and a faint shadow of a white snake appeared in the sky!

It could be seen from far away!

"Jie master Ceng, you really will not reconsider it?" the youth in front of Ceng Yi asked coldly.

The youth had two slight bumps on his forehead. This was a trait

unique to those with the bloodline of dragons and this trait would only appear in those that had reached the general level. The youth's face was white as jade, his body tall, but his expression was cold and proud.

His gaze was filled with haughtiness.

There were two mo, one thin and one fat, standing next to the youth. The fat one had a jolly smile on his face and looked extremely welcoming. The thin one had a cold expression and his eyes were half-lidded.

“I do not need to consider it!” Ceng Yi's expression was unreadable. He slowly said, “This one is nothing special as a jie master but it is a free existence. This one will have to reject Marshal Yu's favor!”

At this time, Ceng Yi's expression suddenly changed. At the same moment, the thin one next to the youth suddenly opened his eyes, and the fatty's smile disappeared.

Without any words, all of them flew out of the room at almost the same time.

A building in the distance was giving off great light. Amongst the light, the white shadow of a snake flickered in and out of view.

“Lian'er!” Ceng Yi's expression changed dramatically as he shouted. Before the shout ended, he disappeared.

“Ceng Yi as a White Fang snake mo as expected!” The youth snorted and then joy came onto his face. “This is a good chance! His daughter is at such a crucial moment, he won’t dare refuse. Otherwise, hmph hmph, he can’t blame us for being vicious!”

Finishing, the trio disappeared.

Zuo Mo had never expected the other’s mo matrix to be so strange. He was extremely panicked. When he discovered the light given off by the young female’s mo matrix was so bright, he knew it was not good.

How could such a big disturbance not be noticed by Ceng Yi?

Damn it!

This was not a good time to face Ceng Yi but Zuo Mo didn’t have the time to regret it. He already detected Ceng Yi’s presence. No, there were also three more generals!

Zuo Mo was shocked. Four generals, even if he had a breakthrough, he definitely was not a match!

“Lian’er!” Ceng Yi called out panickedly. His eyes were filled with worry and held none of the cruelty and indifference he

usually had.

“Jie Master Ceng, I feel you should consider what I just said,” the youth said in a strange tone from behind Ceng Yi.

Ceng Yi was infuriated. “You”

“Ha ha, Jie Master Ceng, this is for your own good,” the fat one spoke with a smile, “as long as Jie Master makes a decision, we three are willing to help your daughter mature the mo matrix at the price of expending our own mo skills.”

Ceng Yi wavered.

Zuo Mo knew that it was not good. If Ceng Yi really agreed, then the one with the most terrible outcome would definitely be him.

But Zuo Mo didn't have the power to speak at this time. All of the shen power in his body was flowing towards the brow of the young female.

At this time, the suction at the young female's brow suddenly disappeared. Zuo Mo didn't even have the time to be happy before a strange shen power erupted out of the young female's forehead, and flowed into Zuo Mo's body along his finger.

This burst of shen power was extremely strange. When he looked inside his body, he could clearly see that the returning shen power was silvery white.

Once the silvery white shen power entered Zuo Mo's body, it was like a spark that ignited all the remaining shen power in Zuo Mo's body!

Boom!

It felt as though something exploded inside Zuo Mo's head.

Chapter 553 - Fragments

Shu Long made multiple inspections to be certain there were no mistakes before he stopped.

Nan Yue, Cang Ze, and the others were slightly nervous. They were having such a big battle for their first engagement, it would be lying to say they were not nervous. However, Pu Yao's high-intensity training showed its effects. They were nervous but they still managed to maintain their calm.

The mission that Shu Long gave them was very simple. They were to follow up on the hardship guards attack.

On the top of the mountain, there were copper pillars inserted into the ground that were covered in rough and thick engravings, these were totem pillars. Shu Long had made according to Wei's teachings.

The Hardship Guard that had been under Wei's tutelage had completely changed their battle style compared to when they were under Pu Yao.

All of the masters that Wei had been with had all been top level geniuses. This allowed him to have a vast knowledge regarding mo battalions. In his hands, Guard Camp's battle methods had quietly changed. He also added on many ancient tribal combat methods and made the camp even stronger.

Using the totem pillars was one of the methods.

If it wasn't that Zuo Mo had gathered large numbers of totem fragments, they could not have made the totem pillars.

Guard Camp had a natural weakness, speed. In this era where speed was one of the ultimate factors, the clumsy Guard Camp was innately disadvantaged. Wei did not use any methods to increase Guard Camp's speed, but used other methods to make them an unique heavy-armor battalion!

Ye Ling's heart gradually calmed because he found the entire battalion was well-organized. Even though there was only a hundred people, there wasn't any nervousness in their expressions. They were like precise instruments, their setup was crisp and efficient.

Such a powerful battalion!

Ye Ling who had seen many battalions before was filled with shock. The hardship guards had ease and calmness on their faces. There was no nervousness, no excitement. They seemed to move as though they were just training!

Shu Long Daren did not give any motivational speech. He only sent down orders like usual as if it was just another day.

This mountain peak was the tallest in the surrounding area. The peak reached into the clouds. The peak itself was a plateau about seventy or so mu.

One hundred and twenty totem pillars were securely embedded into the granite plateau so only half of the pillar was exposed. The hardship guards stood between the totem pillars and a certain kind of combat formation could be made out.

The bandits that had been following them did not understand what was happening so they did not attack immediately. The news about Mountain Dragon Corps had spread through all of Eminent Mountain Jie.

When the large formation was set up, Shu Long's eyes silently burned with heated fighting spirit.

Come!

————

Zuo Mo's head rang as though something inside had exploded. His mind went blank.

At this time, the young female under his finger made a sound.

Ceng Yi's expression became overjoyed as he unconsciously called, "Lian'er!"

The youth and the other two's expression sank. If they missed this chance, it would not be easy to persuade Ceng Yi. The three of

them were at the general level, but they were still wary of Ceng Yi's White Fang mo physique.

The three exchanged a look, coldness flashing through their eyes as they moved at the same time.

The youth headed straight for Zuo Mo and the young female to try to take the young female as a hostage, while the thin and the fat men leapt at Ceng Yi.

The moment the three moved, Ceng Yi understood their intentions. He shouted furiously, "Die!"

The almond-yellow snake pupils turned grey-white as he charged fearlessly at the two people. His right hand was slightly raised and now shone with a grey-white light!

A small howl seemed to come from hell.

The fat one and the thin one changed expressions. The fat one shouted, and a brown-red mo matrix appeared. Layers of invisible ripples spread out. The thin one's fingers were like claws and flashed with a metallic sheen. His dark green mo matrix crept around his arms like countless branches of ivy.

Hiss!

Ceng Yi's raised right hand came into contact with the invisible ripples. Without any pause, it pierced through like a knife into

water!

One layer after another!

The dozens of layers didn't manage to slow down Ceng Yi's grey-white hand at all!

The fat one's expression changed drastically. Ceng Yi's strength far surpassed his expectations. At such a dangerous moment, the thin man's fingers howled like ten sharp knives as it moved to block!

There wasn't any emotion in Ceng Yi's grey-white pupils. They seemed to be lifeless as his right hand continued to push forward without any thought of dodging the thin man's attack.

A vicious look appeared on the thin one's face. His mo skill was ramped up to its limits. The dark green mo matrix suddenly brightened, and the green light drew out a blinding streak in the air!

The two sides crashed together without any finesse-a contest of strength!

Boom!

The blinding green light instantly illuminated the yard. The burning light was piercing to the eyes!

Pah!

A minuscule sound of something breaking occurred in the middle of this blinding ball of light.

The light disappeared without warning. Pain appeared on the face of the thin one. Three of the fingers on his right hand had been broken!

The fat one had a terrified expression but he reacted quickly and shouted loudly, “Stop!”

“Jie Master Ceng, your honored daughter!” the fat one said with his fastest speed in his life.

Ceng Yi’s grey-white pupils suddenly moved.

The youth didn’t even look at Zuo Mo once. There was only the young female in his eyes! The great sound of the explosion behind his back and the grunt from the fat one caused his nerves to tense.

He knew that his conduct was akin to breaking the peace. With Ceng Yi’s temper, if he did not get even, he would not rest!

Ceng Yi was not famed, but the youth would not underestimate

him. If Marshal Yu was not occupied and unable to come, it definitely would not be him that had come. Out of caution, he had taken along two general mo, but he had not thought that these two had crumbled so easily when facing Ceng Yi. In one attack, one was forced to retreat and the other was wounded!

The White Fang mo physique lived up to the rumors!

He had the bloodline of dragons, but he had just stepped into general level and definitely was not Ceng Yi's opponent.

The only chance right now was to capture Ceng Yi's daughter!

That unconscious woman!

If he could take her hostage before she woke, she would cause Ceng Yi to become wary, and he could easily get Ceng Yi to bow his head!

He used all his power, his figure was lightning fast. In this moment, his mind was abnormally clear.

When the face of the young female entered his eyes, when that exquisite and beautiful face entered his eyes, in this moment, he almost forgot to breathe!

The long eyelashes flickered lightly, the slightly creased brow as though she was enduring some pain. On this flawless face, it caused one to unconsciously feel tenderness.

A certain part of this proud youth's heart suddenly softened.

The shout from the fat one behind him cause the youth to shake and wake up from his trance. This beautiful and flawless face in front of him had a demonic bewitching power!

The youth suppressed the trembling of his heart. He gritted his teeth and used all his power to grab at the young female.

He was now even closer!

The youth was filled with joy. Success was right in front of him. If he captured the young female, he could turn defeat into victory!

His right hand touched the cheek of the young female, he could even feel the softness from his fingertips

Success!

Suddenly, the young female's long eyelashes fluttered and she slowly opened her eyes.

The young female's eyes were like polished onyx, deep and bottomless.

In that instant, the exquisite and beautiful face seemed to come alive! A beauty that was indescribable and a presence that was

breathhtaking. But it seemed like a poisonous snake in the dark had silently burrowed into the heart of the youth.

The youth's expression instantly became dazed and his hand unconsciously stopped on the young female's snowy face.

“I am Lian'er.”

The young female's serene name was like a wisp that came with the wind.

“Act!” the fat one said panickedly.

The youth did not seem to hear him and remained motionless.

Pew pew pew pew!

Countless shots of blood sprouted out from the youth's body. The youth fell backwards.

The expressions of the thin one and the fat one froze. They looked in disbelief at the scene that they found hard to understand. They had not seen the youth make any movement, did not detect any power vibrations, they hadn't detected anything at all!

They knew the youth's power. He had risen to general level at a young age, and soon, he would be able to awaken his dragon bloodline. His potential was unlimited. Even now, the youth was

stronger than the two of them.

He had actually actually died!

They seemed to have seen a ghost. The scene in front of them was too strange, and out of the limits of their understanding!

“I am Lian’er.”

The young female said to Zuo Mo. That extremely beautiful face seemed to evoke tenderness.

Zuo Mo did not seem to hear it. He was motionless.

The young female’s eyelashes lowered as she closed her eyes. In this instant, countless fragmented scene appeared in front of her mind.

—————

The bead broke.

“... .. Do not forget”

The crisp young female’s voice was full of panic and worry.

“... .. Never forget”

The young female seemed to repeatedly warn.

The voice was clearly in front of him but no matter how hard Zuo Mo tried, he could not see the face of the young female clearly. It seemed as though there was a layer of mist occluding his vision. Fragmented scenes flashed through his mind's eye. Every picture was fragmented, and only the young female's voice was clear.

Sorrow and hopelessness corroded Zuo Mo like a spreading mist.

Zuo Mo bit down on his lips. Having gone through many battles, he could see many things from these shattered scenes, blood, killing

The young female's voice came in and out, and was just as fragmented as the visions.

“... .. don't be afraid”

“Young quick, run”

There were even more broken-up sounds that he could not understand.

It seemed like something was blocking Zuo Mo's heart. Indescribable sorrow spread inside.

Suddenly, a scene caused Zuo Mo to shudder!

A young female was carrying a young male as she ran furiously through the woods. Branches continuously scratched and whipped past them. Their clothing was torn and was in pieces. Zuo Mo could even hear the heavy breathing of the young female and the beads of sweat falling from her face.

Zuo Mo dazedly looked towards the bottom of the scene as though he saw something unbelievable.

-A pair of perfect bare feet stepping over muddy soil, sharp branches as they continued to sprint.

Zuo Mo stared at the running pair of feet and could not move his eyes away.

“Young Master, don’t be afraid, I will definitely come find you!”

At this time, Zuo Mo heard a complete sentence in the young female’s determined yet young tone.

In this instant, it was as though Zuo Mo had been hit by something, and tears uncontrollably flowed.

Chapter 554 - Solution

“Lian’er! Lian’er!” Ceng Yi didn’t even look at the thin mo and the fat mo. Looking at Lian’er, his expression was excited. He stepped forward and grabbed Lian’er’s hand.

Zuo Mo’s finger left Lian’er’s brow and her black eyes silently opened. She swept across the soundings, and when she saw A Gui, she paused slightly. When she saw A Gui’s bare feet, she had an expression of realization.

She had actually seen the scene inside Zuo Mo’s mind. She was also slightly shocked.

Was it

“Father!” Her voice was soft and serene.

“Lian’er! You’re alright! You are really alright! This is great!” Ceng Yi was extremely excited, and in his eyes, Zuo Mo was akin to empty air.

“He saved me,” Ceng Lian’er said serenely.

“Oh oh oh, I will definitely reward him well! He can have whatever he wants!” Ceng Yi nodded repeatedly. He could not suppress the joy on his face but his gaze did not bear to leave his daughter.

The fat one and the thin one silently sneaked away. No one paid attention.

Zuo Mo opened his eyes and the first thing he did was search for A Gui.

When he saw A Gui standing silently at the side a phrase floated up in his mind, “Young Master, don’t be afraid, I’ll definitely find you”. He couldn’t help but reach out and rub A Gui’s hair.

“A Gui, you found me.”

He wanted to smile, but his tears flowed down uncontrollably.

He thought about how A Gui had been covered in wounds when he had found her. She definitely had been searching for him! He thought about when they were trapped in the Nine Turn Sky Soil Disk, when she had faced the last attack of the Clear Sky Old Forefather, when they had been in the desert walking against the sand and wind as she had carried him, and her panting figure when she carried him through the woods in his memory.

His vision blurred, and A Gui’s figure also became blurred. This blurred figure and the young and blurry figure in his fragmented memories merged together.

Did you leave me the Five Element Glass Bead?

What happened? A Gui, who wounded you so?

A Gui took a deep breath. He grabbed A Gui's hand and his expression recovered but there was something else unusual in his gaze.

The release of the seal on the Five Element Glass Bead meant that he had broken through into jindan.

Recalling that silver white shen power, he suddenly turned towards Ceng Lian'er. That woman! His pupils contracted, and Ceng Yi!

“What just happened?” Zuo Mo asked Pu Yao and Wei.

Wei said, “It should be power resonance, a very rare occurrence. It means that the degree of compatibility between your powers is very strong, and are of different orientation.”

Zuo Mo knew what power resonance was. This usually occurred when two kinds of powers in perfectly opposite came into contact and was an extremely rare event. The two powers would respond to each other, and this kind of intercourse would greatly aid in the increase of power. No wonder the silver shen power the other had given back didn't cause him any trouble and helped him make a breakthrough.

But he cultivated shen power. The only power that could

resonant with his shen power was shen power. This meant the other had to also cultivate shen power!

And it was shen power of the completely opposite orientation!

“Careful, this woman is dangerous,” Pu Yao warned Zuo Mo.

Without needing Pu Yao’s reminder, Zuo Mo knew the other was dangerous. Up until now, Zuo Mo had only met three people of this era that cultivated shen power. One was he, another was A Gui, and the last was this Ceng Lian’er.

He could not get the measure of this woman.

But he didn’t need to, Zuo Mo thought.

After the breakthrough, his thoughts of making trouble for Ceng Yi had temporarily faded and the other had helped in his breakthrough.

What completely occupied Zuo Mo’s mind at the moment was A Gui. The memory fragments sealed in the Five Element Glass Bead had caused him great shock.

He just wanted to find a place and calm down.

Without another word, he grabbed A Gui and jumped away. He had heard Ceng Lian’er and Ceng Yi’s conversation. He didn’t need

to worry that Ka Zhuo would get in trouble.

“En?” Ceng Yi raised his head and was slightly surprised. The power that Zuo Mo showed was out of his expectations.

“Let them go.” Ceng Lian’er spoke.

“I’ll listen to Lian’er! Listen to Lian’er!” Ceng Yi said affectionately and took his gaze away.

————

“What do these people want to do? What do they mean by standing there?” a bandit asked in puzzlement.

“Haha! They aren’t able to run! So they are trying to fight back! Just one word from Boss One-eye, and look at this. Not just one hundred people, even if they are one thousand, they will be defeated.”

“You are right, we are using a sword to kill a chicken! I heard the people from Mountain Dragon Corps retelling about their strength and thought there would be a lot of people. One hundred, it isn’t even enough to pick our teeth with!”

“Stop wasting words, just one hundred people, how do we divide them up? We have to be first! There is only one space as a reward!”

“You are right!”

A bunch of bandits charged at the mountain. Their actions caused a chain response. Seeing this, the other bandits unhesitatingly charged.

One hundred people in a formation on the mountain couldn't compare to the three thousand bandits.

The bandits that charged were like a tsunami, covering the ground and the sky!

The suppressed fighting spirit in Shu Long's eyes lost all of its restraints and started to burn.

“Open!”

Black smoke suddenly sprouted out of the one hundred and eight totem pillars.

The black smoke grew with the wind and in a flash, it covered the entire mountain peak like a enormous black cloud.

The rushing bandits charged into the black cloud.

Boom boom boom!

The roiling black smoke was expelled from the totem pillars. They seemed to change constantly as though they were alive. Suddenly, the black smoke around one totem pillar condensed and formed the shape of a person.

A figure made from black smoke appeared above the totem pillar.

[Mo Grinding Disk]!

If a mo golden battle general saw this combat formation, he would exclaim in shock. [Mo Grinding Disk] was one of the strongest battle formations used to wear down the enemy. It was like a terrifying grinding disk. A battalion that was trapped in it was like a piece of meat thrown into the grinder and would be ground into meat paste.

There had been innumerable xiuzhe that had died in the [Mo Grinding Disk] in the past. But after that thousand year war, the [Mo Grinding Disk] had been lost and the technique never appeared after.

Yet at this time, one of the strongest battle formations, [Mo Grinding Disk], appeared on this little mountain, and there was only one hundred people.

“Kill!”

Inside the thick black smoke, Shu Long’s shout echoed in the air like thunder.

The battle formation shifted loudly and spun like a grindstone.

Zuo Mo looked silently at A Gui. A Gui sat beside him with a wooden expression.

When he saw A Gui's wooden expression, Zuo Mo's heart hurt. The shen power inside A Gui's body was too strange, and Zuo Mo couldn't find traces any of A Gui's thoughts and memories. Her mind was completely empty.

Zuo Mo remembered that A Gui had seemed most alive when she had been wounded and had no shen power.

Shen power!

That intimidating coldness and voice caused Zuo Mo's heart to hurt.

“Pu, Wei, what solutions do you have?” Zuo Mo asked.

Pu Yao and Wei were both silent. Zuo Mo knew that this was a hard problem for them. Pu Yao and Wei knew a lot about yao and mo cultivation, but they didn't know much more than he did about shen power.

“It would be good if A Gui could speak,” Zuo Mo murmured to himself. If A Gui could speak, then she could tell him everything.

Zuo Mo knew this was a delusion.

He forced himself to calm down and think back to every detail in those fragments. He instantly had many discoveries.

A Gui called him “Young Master.” This appellation implied many things. He probably did not have an ordinary birth. A Gui had carried him and fled for their lives. There had also been those fragments filled with blood and slaughter. His family had probably encountered trouble.

Who did it? Why?

Where had A Gui’s shen power come from? Who had erased his memories and changed his features?

Countless riddles came at him and almost pressed Zuo Mo to the point of suffocation.

Calm! He had to be calm!

Zuo Mo bit down hard on his lips and tried to maintain his calm. But his bulging tendons exposed the storm inside. A Gui’s shen power was the greatest obstacle. This shen power was extremely weird and Zuo Mo could not extract it.

At this time, Pu Yao suddenly said, “Do you remember the Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass that I once mentioned to you?”

Zuo Mo stilled and thought for a while with creased brows before he nodded. “I remember, you said the Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass can help me recover the fragments of my memory.”

“Yes. A Gui’s memories have been damaged, her soul is wounded, and I suspect that the wounds in her soul are related to the shen power that she cultivates. But if you want to know all this, you do not only have A Gui’s memories to repair,” Pu Yao said.

Zuo Mo reacted quickly and his eyes lit up. “Yes! There is no need to start with A Gui, we can start with me!”

The more he thought, the more excited Zuo Mo was. “Yes, yes! I should have also experienced those same vents, and there would be shadows left in my mind. If I can recover my memories, I can know all this! I will know what shen power A Gui cultivates, I can think of a way to heal A Gui”

He had closed himself in trying to find a way through A Gui. He had completely forgotten that he should also know!

Thinking back to the time that the sect leader had picked him up at Wu Kong Mountain, it was about the same time that was indicated in the memory fragments were sealed in the Five Element Glass Bead.

“Can the Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass really recover my memories?” Zuo Mo asked urgently.

Wei spoke and proved that Pu Yao was not boasting. “This is a grass that grows in the mo realm. As long as there is one piece of the memory, it can completely reflect and trace back your entire memory. You have so many memory fragments now. If we can find Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass, you should be able to get all of your previous memories!”

“Where is Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass?”

Pu Yao and Wei exchanged a look. Both hesitated.

“Where is it?” Zuo Mo exploded.

Wei slowly opened. “Supposedly, there is Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass in Nether Spring Jie of the Ming Realm.”

“Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass Nether Spring Jie!” Zuo Mo murmured, his gaze determined.

Chapter 555 - An Unusual Breakthrough

“What did you say?” shouted the one-eyed wolf mo as he suddenly jumped out of his seat wearing an expression of shock.

“Boss! They all died! All of them! No one survived!” His subordinate’s face was ashen and bloodless. He had been flailing and stumbling when he charged in and still appeared weak in the knees.

“All dead? Be clearer! How did they all die?” the one-eyed wolf mo quickly recovered his calm and asked calmly.

“The people from all seven groups died! More than three thousand people! Not one ... left alive!” the subordinate stammered. His eyes were thick with terror as though there was something chasing him. He was filled with hopelessness. He said tremblingly, “They ... they, on Black Dragon Peak, they killed everyone!”

“Impossible!” The one-eyed mo wolf was filled with disbelief as he shook his head. “More than three thousand people, how many people do they have? One hundred! One hundred killing three thousand, do you think they are killing chickens?”

“Boss! It’s the truth!” The subordinate was almost crying, “You can go to Black Dragon Peak and see! It’s corpses everywhere, from the peak to the base of the mountain, all corpses!”

The one-eyed mo wolf suddenly froze. Hearing the subordinate

He spoke like this, he finally believed it! Black Dragon Peak was not far from their base, his subordinate wouldn't easily make a mistake like this, and definitely would not lie to him about a matter like this.

How was it possible? That was three thousand people!

How could one hundred people kill three thousand people, and not one survive?

The one-eyed wolf mo's extremities felt cold, his throat dry. "Did you find any of their corpses?"

"N-no!"

Coldness rose up in the one-eyed wolf mo. How many years had it been, he had become so unfamiliar with the feeling of terror! Yet it was this unfamiliar terror that came like the tide and almost swallowed him.

They had kicked a metal board!

And it was a metal board that was the hardest there could be!

One hundred people were enough to massacre three thousand people, those were the elites of an extraordinary battalion! In the one-eyed wolf mo's career of raiding, he had never seen nor heard of such a powerful battalion.

If it hadn't happened to him, he would definitely not believe it. Right now, he only felt terror. Such a terrifying battalion was something only those enormous factions could possess.

Was this the personal battalion of a mo marshal?

The one-eyed wolf mo tried to maintain his calm but his legs uncontrollably trembled.

Any mo marshal in the entire Hundred Savage was the warlord of an area, marshal was a title that meant power. There were no mo marshals that lived alone except the ones that existed in legend.

He might be able to dominate Eminent Mountain Jie, but in the eyes of those mo marshals, he was a small character who could be killed at any time like an ant. Which mo marshal didn't have many powerful generals, and jie masters under them?

The one-eyed wolf mo looked vicious and arrogant but he was very smart. He never provoked any factions. He could not afford to.

The power represented by a mo marshal... it was an existence he could not afford to provoke!

Damn it! How had he done something so stupid?

The one-eyed wolf mo was full of regret. The only good news was that the other didn't seem to have sustained any serious injuries or fatalities. He was familiar with the mentality of those personages. For those personages, their time was unusually the most precious. As long as there wasn't great trouble, they were not willing to waste time on ants.

"Where are they?" the one-eyed wolf mo asked in a trembling voice.

"Go-gone!" the subordinate stammered out, "no-no one dared to block them."

The one-eyed wolf mo released a breath. "They are gone, good! Good!"

It was good if these kind of death gods were gone!

Shu Long and the others who only desired to keep travelling did not pay attention to the other bandits. The other bandits were frightened out of their wits. Which one of them dared to continue and harass the caravan? The news that a battalion of one hundred people killed three thousand bandits quickly spread.

Many people expressed their disbelief when they heard the news.

This news only exploded when the mirage of the hellish state of Black Dragon Peak was spread.

Everyone speculated to which faction this terrifying battalion belonged to. One hundred killing three thousand, this amazing result caused the reputation of this mysterious battalion to rise. Because they did not know the name of this battalion, many mo called this the Butcher Battalion.

Shu Long and the others only tried to travel faster. They didn't know that the battle of Black Dragon Peak had attracted the attention of many factions!

However, even if they knew, they would not have cared.

Because they received Zuo Mo's order, to reach Shattered Stone Jie at the fastest speed!

————

Zuo Mo furiously absorbed shen power from his hand.

The threads of shen power continuously merged into his flesh and blood.

After the breakthrough, Zuo Mo seemed to have broken all the chains holding him back and his cultivation increased at amazing speeds.

It was strange to speak of: Zuo Mo's ling power had finished core formation, his consciousness had formed the yin spirit, but it was his mo physique that was lacking. Zuo Mo could not understand

this. Of the three powers, the mo physique was the one he was most familiar and most skilled with. Rationally, the first breakthrough should have been his mo physique.

But Zuo Mo was not in a hurry.

At this time, he was in a stage where his power was steadily increasing. Every time he drew shen power from his palm, he could feel a clear improvement. Zuo Mo did not have the time to cultivate any of the three powers and processed shen power. The palm of his right hand was akin to a bomb that could explode at any moment.

The vast shen power in it was truly enchanting!

Zuo Mo didn't waste one iota of time and threw himself into furious cultivation.

In this time, he had investigated Nether Spring Jie.

Just like the xiuzhe world was called Four Realms, the mo world had another name, the Dark of Hundred Savage. It was divided into two realms, one was Hundred Savage Realm, the other was the Dark Realm. Nether Spring Jie was located at the deepest regions of the Dark Realm, no one knew much about the Dark Realm. They only knew that that was the darkest and most chaotic place of all of Dark of Hundred Savage.

It wasn't easy to even reach that place. One had to pass through

the territories of many great factions. The journey would be filled with danger and bandits. In the Dark Realm, there were vicious and savage mo that even those large factions were wary off.

This branch of mo was infamous. They were born as berserkers. They were cruel, bloodthirsty and without any emotion.

Zuo Mo knew if he wanted to eliminate A Gui's shen power, if he wanted to know everything, if he wanted to find the Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass, he had to become even more powerful!

By himself, his power was not enough, he needed helpers. He decided to wait for Shu Long's group at Shattered Stone Jie. He used all his time to cultivate day and night. He had never been as motivated as he was now!

A Gui was sitting silently beside him.

Just like normal, Zuo Mo started to cultivate, but he quickly detected an unusual shift inside his body.

The Sun Crystal Seed was spinning rapidly, the flames shifting in layers. The Greenvine Mystical Water released faint light that was warm yet cool. What surprised Zuo Mo was the even the Soul Setting Divine Light had become restless like a rainbow fish that swam nimbly without stopping inside his body.

All the signs signaled that something unusual was happening.

Was he having a breakthrough?

Zuo Mo knew, if this was the time, it would require him to be even calmer and maintain a clear mind.

He slowly channeled shen power. The shen power merged into his flesh and blood, turning to the three powers, and then turning back to shen power. It repeated this in an endless cycle.

The mo matrix on his body slowly lit up. The faint gold mo matrix was complex. The mo matrix brightened and dimmed as though it was breathing, but each time it flashed, the intensity of the brightness would increase.

When the golden mo matrix reached a peak brightness, the blinding golden light was piercing.

At this time, the Sun Crystal Seed suddenly released a flood of scorching flame. It was like burning lava that covered the shen power eating at his body. The Greenvine Mystical Water's presence also increased, and the moisture sank into Zuo Mo's blood and flesh. The blood and flesh that had just been burnt by the Sun Crystal Seed was instantly restored like nothing had happened.

The mo matrix on Zuo Mo's body instantly had new changes.

The golden mo matrix seemed to come alive and move along Zuo Mo's body, transforming!

Gradually, the mo matrix that was extremely packed started to divide into many areas. The mo matrix gathered in these areas, and as it's movement grew slower, ten clear marks formed.

Suddenly, the Sun Crystal Seed inside Zuo Mo's body brightened and released golden light from his chest!

An astounding scene happened.

The ten marks, that were formed by the mo matrix shrinking, had started to move along Zuo Mo's body as though there was an invisible line pulling them. The largest golden mo matrix moved to the center of Zuo Mo's chest as though it was attracted by a magnet.

The light of the Sun Crystal Seed merged with this largest mo matrix. The mo matrix seemed to turn into golden liquid and flowed along Zuo Mo's chest as though a pen was slowly drawing out lines.

At the same time, the other nine mo matrixes lit up.

The blinding mo matrixes connected, and changed. They each became rounder, and the ten pieces of the mo matrix became ten perfect circles like ten small suns!

Ten suns were situated at different parts of Zuo Mo's body!

The ten suns suddenly gave off great light, the dark night so bright it seemed like day, and the stars in the sky losing their light.

At this time, the swimming Soul Setting Divine Light ferociously burrowed into the Sun mo matrix at Zuo Mo's chest. Then, like a needle, it rapidly passed through the other suns!

Ruler-straight lines spread through the ten suns and connected each sun to the other nine. In a blink, there were criss-crossing golden lines on Zuo Mo's body that connected all ten suns.

Only now did the mo matrix's light seem to be used up.

Zuo Mo opened his eyes. His eyes had turned a faint gold, and it was possible to discern criss-crossing golden lines inside his eyes. There was a golden Sun mo matrix on his forehead that appeared extremely domineering.

"This is" Zuo Mo looked dazedly at the Sun mo matrix on his palms.

This Sun mo matrix was similar to the Day Script that appeared when he used Day Script Palm but it was even more complex and beautiful.

Ten suns, the largest was on his chest, the smallest between his brows. There was one each on his hands and feet, one on his stomach, and three on his back.

Zuo Mo knew that he definitely had a breakthrough.

But such a strange feeling

Zuo Mo had a strong feeling that his breakthrough was unusual!

What had happened?

Chapter 556 - Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus

Pu Yao and Wei looked at Zuo Mo like they were looking at a freak.

“What is with your gaze” Zuo Mo was unable to maintain his calm.

“You leveled up.” Pu Yao’s voice was as cold and indifferent as usual but Zuo Mo who had become familiar with him a long time ago could hear the thread of unusualness in his voice.

“I know I levelled up,” Zuo Mo muttered. He then asked in anticipation. “What mo physique do I have now? Is it powerful?”

Pu Yao’s gaze was very strange.

“Very powerful,” the one who spoke was Wei. Wei’s expression was also very strange. “Your present mo physique is called Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, a very rare mo physique, one even rarer than the White Fang mo physique.”

“This powerful!” Zuo Mo was overjoyed. Then he bent down his neck and said uncertainly, “Are you sure? Wait, isn’t the White Fang mo physique a general level mo physique?”

“You have not remembered it wrong.” Pu Yao’s gaze became even stranger.

Zuo Mo stilled. After a while, he said slowly, “General level? I levelled up to general level?”

Pu Yao and Wei did not speak and only looked at Zuo Mo strangely as though they could observe something from Zuo Mo’s body.

Zuo Mo was stunned by the news.

General level!

He had moved into the general level!

This was too fantastical!

His Great Day mo physique had been a colonel level mo physique. Zuo Mo had thought it had encountered some problem when it hadn’t had a breakthrough after all this time. He hadn’t expect to actually go past the brigadier level and go straight into general level.

The difference between general level and brigadier level was the difference between yuanying and jindan. There were innate differences.

This was not rational this was not rational! Zuo Mo thought dazedly.

“It should be caused by the Sun Crystal Seed.”

“And Greenvine Mystical Water and Soul Setting Divine Light!”

“What does Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus rank among the general level mo physiques? I don’t quite remember it”

“Third!”

Hearing the discussion between Pu Yao and Wei, especially when he heard that Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was ranked third, he shook and woke up. Zuo Mo grumbled, “Why isn’t it second?”

Pu Yao and Wei turned, looking at him as though they were looking at an idiot.

“Great Day mo physique was second in colonel level!” Zuo Mo said righteously. “From second to third, this is a step back!”

“Idiot!” Pu Yao spat out a word.

“A person like this actually could cultivate the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus” Wei’s gaze was also as though he was looking at an idiot.

“I just said so, it was definitely because of the Sun crystal Seed. With a treasure like this, even an idiot can possess Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus.”

“You are right”

Pu Yao and Wei’s disdain-filled discussion passed into his ears. Zuo Mo really could not resist. “Hey hey hey, speak clearer!”

After Pu Yao and Wei’s detailed explanation, Zuo Mo had a general understanding.

The leveling up of mo physiques would not have too much of a correlation with the initial rank. For example, while Great Day mo physique was second among colonel level, but there was more than one path it could level up through. The difference between each of the leveled up mo physiques was large, and Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was the best level up path for Great Day mo physique.

According to Pu Yao and Wei, they felt that the reason he had reached Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was directly connected to the Sun Crystal Seed inside of him, and also the Sun shen power he cultivated. Even the Greenvine Mystical Water and the Soul Setting Divine Light were hugely influential. Otherwise, with Zuo Mo’s present power, the best outcome of leveling up would be the Light Manifestation mo physique that ranked seventh in the brigadier level.

After listening carefully, Zuo Mo understood.

However, he did not care if the cause was the Sun Crystal Seed. What he cared about was ranking third in general level!

Having seen the power of the White Fang mo physique that ranked sixteenth in general level, Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus that ranked third should be even stronger!

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus?

Zuo Mo recited inside. His gaze looked unconsciously towards A Gui.

A Gui, I now have the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, I will become even stronger!

Gripping A Gui's hand, Zuo Mo went back to his cultivation.

He didn't want to waste one bit of time.

Ranking third in general level, Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, if he could drag out all the power of such a powerful mo physique, the chances of surviving a trip to the Nether Spring Jie should grow much higher!

Zuo Mo pondered this. .

Watching the furiously cultivating Zuo Mo, Pu Yao and Wei were silent.

"He's working very hard," Wei suddenly said.

Pu Yao looked at Zuo Mo and seemed to be thinking. His bloody pupil was deep and his emotions were complex.

A moment later, he suddenly spoke, "I've decided to help him."

"In which way?" Wei raised his head.

"Using everything I can do." Pu Yao raised his head. "You were right last time, we have to settle our accounts!"

————

Gongsun Cha laid on the bed and his thoughts wandered as he stared at the ceiling.

Zuo Mo Shixiong had passed information on everything that happened recently back to Turtle Island. There was nothing concealed. Each of them had read all of it.

No one had ever thought that Shixiong's history was so wondrous and so tragic!

Even though they didn't have a complete picture but just the information they had now was enough for them, people who had been through many battles, to smell the thick tang of blood.

Shixiong's present mood was probably

No, he couldn't let Shixiong fight alone, he had to do something!

Gongsun Cha suddenly sat up straight! A moment later, a smile suddenly rose in the clear eyes of the neighbor's boy. In the depths, fighting spirit rose like flowers on the wind.

They had always fought side by side!

The Dark of Hundred Savage it really was a challenge!

His spirit burned and his blood was nearly boiling, but Lil' Miss' mind was unusually calm. He started to ponder how to actualize his intent.

He definitely could come up with the most suitable strategic plan!

"Daren!" The guard outside knocked on the door.

"What is it?" Interrupted, Lil' Miss frowned.

The guard came in and handed Lil' Miss a jade scroll. He reported, "Just now, Wei Sheng Daren came and delivered a jade scroll. He said to give it to Daren."

Eldest Shixiong? Lil' Miss stilled.

He picked up the jade scroll. A moment later, he wore a grimace.

Eldest Shixiong had gone by himself to search for Zuo Mo Shixiong!

“To Gongsun Shidi brotherhood and friendship, one needs to remain true, I am unable to stand by and watch heart of a sort, can safely strike and be safe know that this one’s strength is not enough, so I bid farewell! I go to the mo world, using fighting to cultivate, kill mo to temper the sword if I am not dead, and reach the Nether Spring ... I will lend the strength of one sword!”

In the jade scroll, Wei Sheng’s voice was indifferent and filled with decisiveness.

“Crazy!” Lil’ Miss murmured.

Raising his head, his bangs swayed despite the lack of wind. A bashful smile hung on Lil’ Miss’ face.

“Hah, let’s be crazy together!”

Turtle Island’s atmosphere suddenly became tense.

The intensity of Vermillion Bird Camp’s and Guard Camp’s

training was increased to unprecedented level. The tense atmosphere allowed everyone to understand, something had happened! It quickly spread in the two camps that Zuo Mo Daren had encountered trouble!

Vermillion Bird Camp and Guard Camp had followed Zuo Mo from Little Mountain Jie and their bond was deep. Hearing that Daren had encountered trouble, and there were no orders to move out, only orders telling them to train, the group understood that their current strength was not enough to resolve the trouble for Daren.

Without needing any urging, the two camps started to cultivate more furiously.

The large families in Cloud Sea Jie quickly received orders. A new camp, Green Dragon Camp, was going to be set up and was requesting each family to send outstanding disciples to the recruitment. The families with disciples selected would receive more benefits.

This order caused a great wave in Cloud Sea Jie. As the Great Thousand Island Formation expanded day by day, every family knew that Turtle Island's rule of Cloud Sea Jie was unbreakable. Only by responding to Turtle Island's orders would they receive more benefits in the future.

Countless accomplished youths flooded towards Turtle Island.

When Shi Dong received the order, he was slightly puzzled.

His progression speeded far surpassed his own expectations. However, he had not expected that Lil' Miss Daren was still unsatisfied and ordered him to speed up his advance.

Other than this, he was also shocked that Lil' Miss Daren allowed him the right to expand Grey Camp.

Something major probably happened!

Shi Dong's temper was not the best but he was a smart person. The first he thought of was Zuo Mo Daren.

Zuo Mo Daren that daren that Ye Ling said could become king

He thought for a moment before sending down the order to expand the troops. He then ordered an increase in training intensity.

"Did something happen? Daren!" his subordinate asked suspiciously.

"Zuo Mo Daren might have encountered some trouble," Shi Dong explained.

“Ah! Our King Daren encountered trouble!” the subordinate paled and asked urgently, “Is it great trouble? Is there danger? Do we need to go reinforce him?”

Shi Dong was surprised by the subordinate’s fierce response, “You are very rushed?”

The subordinate stilled and said unhesitatingly, “Of course, that is our king!”

“You feel that he can become king?” Shi Dong asked something that had puzzled him for a long time.

“Definitely!” the subordinate balled his fist and had a serious expression. “We all believe he can!”

“So it’s like this” Shi Dong was thoughtful.

The subordinate charged outside without even bowing to Shi Dong. He had to pass along this news as fast as he could!

All hail the king!

————

“These are the mo matrixes that Daren has sent, as well as some of his own conclusions regarding the topic.” Master Sun Bao looked at the people below and said gravely, “During this period of

time, everyone will need to put aside all other work, and work on the mo matrixes!”

Everyone nodded but were slightly astounded. It had to be said that while the missions of Golden Crow Camp were difficult and demanding, the atmosphere was free. The two masters generally allowed everyone to explore their own projects and would only gather everyone’s power during some special missions.

Had something happened?

Everyone was puzzled.

Master Ji Wei’s expression was also very grave. He was handing out jade scrolls.

“Master, did something happen?” someone asked.

Everyone’s gaze gathered on Master Sun Bao.

“Daren encountered some danger,” Master Sun Bao said in a deep voice, “and needs our help.”

It was deathly silent. A second later, it exploded!

“Daren encountered danger?”

“Damn it! Did the other groups go play and not fulfill their responsibilities? Where is Lil’ Miss Daren?”

“Heavens! This isn’t true”

These young production xiuzhe were furiously and wanted to charge out.

That was Daren! Daren who all of Golden Crow Camp had sworn an oath to forever follow. No one would forget who had passed on spells and techniques, who had given them Golden Crow Fire, Why they did not have to worry for the clothing on their back, and could even do whatever they wanted. They remembered who gave them all this!

Damn it!

“Shut up!” Master Ji Wei’s shout caused everyone to stop talking.

Master Sun Bao didn’t have any trace of a smile. There seemed to be fire flickering in his gaze. “Everyone, make use of the time and study the jade scrolls. Inside are the conclusion and studies Daren has relating to the mo matrixes. We need to understand all the problems in the shortest amount of time!”

There seemed to be a fire burning in everyone’s eyes.

“And then, we will start engraving mo matrixes!”

“This is a war!”

Chapter 557 - Screw Live And Die Together

Zuo Mo did not know about what was happening on Turtle Island.

He forgot himself in his cultivation. In the past, Zuo Mo had not chased after power. He did not have great ambitions, it was enough to have enough power to live well. But right now, he had an almost absurd desire for power. It was clear that both the matter of healing A Gui or investigating his birth, success would be based on one foundation, strength, great strength!

Everyday, he was immersed in cultivation as though he did not know exhaustion. He was waiting for Shu Long and the others to arrive. If his investigation was right, Nether Spring Jie wasn't a place that he could go to alone.

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus.

The physique ranked third in the general level and as expected, it had its unique traits. Wei was familiar with all kinds of mo physiques and this allowed Zuo Mo's cultivation to be extremely focused. In a few short days, Zuo Mo's strength had shot forward and he finally had a comprehensive understanding of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus.

The name Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, alluded to the ten suns on different areas of his body. They looked more like carefully carved tattoos, and not mo matrixes.

The most eye-catching was the sun matrix at the center of Zuo Mo's forehead. The perfect circle was made of complex and beautiful patterns. There was a jagged zig-zagging pattern on the circumference of each deep dark gold sun, representing rays of light.

Zuo Mo's face was not handsome, but when the sun script symbol appeared there, it added a hint of mysteriousness and nobility.

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, each sun represented a source of power. He needed to accumulate power and activate each sun. Each sun contained a transformation. Ten suns, meant ten transformations.

According to Wei, mo that cultivated Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus were rare, and rarer were those that comprehended all ten transformations.

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, each transformation was extremely powerful and domineering. What was even more frightening was that the power of Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus would be used with finesse and technique, and was not just the application of brute force.

But what was most famous about the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was not the ten transformations, but that it had the title of best domain in general level, [Ten Crow Celestial Domain]!

Hearing this, Zuo Mo hungered for it. It was a pity that Wei didn't know how to comprehend [Ten Crow Celestial Domain].

[Domain] was a type of power that was accessible to only those yuanying xiuzhe, general mo, and Rahula yao. Ding Zhen's [Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain] was an example, and Wei Sheng had been able to grasp the beginnings of [Domain] while he was in jindan. Wei Sheng's talents were astounding.

Having seen Ding Zhen's [Lantern Fire Buddhist Domain], Zuo Mo yearned for [Domain].

However, Wei did not speak more about how to comprehend [Domain]. That was something far beyond where Zuo Mo was.

Even though Zuo Mo had obtained Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus due to having a precious treasure in his body, he still lacked comprehension. With his body now in a balanced state, having had a breakthrough in his mo physique, ling power, and consciousness. It was the two powers to first have breakthroughs that were now holding him back. Zuo Mo worked on processing the shen power in his right hand, and then turned it into ling power and spiritual consciousness. He used this method to also strengthen his Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus.

Zuo Mo had originally assumed that this stabilization would take a long time. Unexpectedly, he only needed ten days to raise his ling power to yuanying levels, and his consciousness to yao mansion.

One factor was the abundance of shen power. The increase in the power whirlpool in Zuo Mo's right hand was still accelerating, and the amount of shen power he draw everyday increased. While

overjoyed, Zuo Mo was also slightly worried. Based on this speed, the shen power being produced every day would soon surpass the amount he could process.

The other factor was that while his Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was not very stable, it was at the general level, and higher than both jindan and yin spirit. But Zuo Mo had forcefully crossed the boundary between levels by relying on treasures and his understanding of the power was completely different than others at the level.

All paths of power led to the same destination. Even though the mo physique was different compared to ling power and spirit consciousness, there were many places Zuo Mo could study and copy.

Pu Yao and Wei were not shocked by Zuo Mo entering yuanying. In their eyes, this was natural. However, Pu Yao was slightly excited now that Zuo Mo's consciousness formed the yao mansion.

Yao that formed their yao mansion were called Rahula yao and could be counted in the ranks of experts in the yao world.

Zuo Mo's talent in yao arts was actually very good, but compared to the even more amazing mo physique, it was slightly lacking. Leaving Pu Yao to feel that although Zuo Mo was his student, Wei had taken the glory. Now that Zuo Mo had formed his yao mansion, it meant that he could pass more yao arts to Zuo Mo.

Also, Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art was more suited to

Rahula yao!

However, Pu Yao did not say this. He was busy doing some other things.

Some strange messages appeared in the corners of Ten Finger Prison.

The messages were worded strangely and the sentences incomprehensible. They were also posted in remote places that were not attention-catching. But if those with intentions searched, they would find to their shock that there were similar messages at every level of Ten Finger Prison.

“Will this work?” Wei asked Pu Yao.

“Don’t know.” Pu Yao’s bloody pupil was deep. “It has been too long. I don’t know if they still remember, let’s just try.”

“I don’t know how many of Master’s supporters still remain,” Wei said calmly, “I have sent out the blood summons.”

Pu Yao’s eyes flashed with a reckless light, a cold smirk at the corner of his mouth. “No matter how powerful time is, it will leave some remnants behind.”

“You plan on having A Zuo inherit all of this?” Wei looked at Pu Yao.

Pu Yao shook his head. “He may not be willing to inherit.”

“Our thoughts are the same.” Wei nodded.

“However, he needs power.” Pu Yao’s robes moved despite the lack of wind, his voice became deep. “He doesn’t understand himself, and we cannot truly understand him. His enemies most likely are far more powerful than even he imagines, he only has one path.”

Wei suddenly gave a small smile. “Very similar to how we were.”

Pu Yao’s memories were stirred by this, a reminiscing expression in his bloody pupil. He quickly calmed down. “Also, it will not be unprofitable for them to follow him. Families that stood guard for thousands of years and did not give up should return to glory!”

Wei sighed. “I do not know how many still remain.”

Pu Yao also became silent. He also did not know.

————

Zuo Mo suddenly stopped his cultivation. He detected someone was approaching. His body turned towards the people approaching

and stood between them and A Gui, shielding A Gui behind him.

Two figures appeared like ghosts nearby.

“It’s you!” Zuo Mo’s gaze focused and he was shocked inside.

In the night, Ceng Lian’er’s exquisite and beautiful features looked more mysterious. Her black opal like eyes held an indescribable light. There was also a woman standing next to her. Looking at her attire, it should be Ceng Lian’er’s maid.

She stopped at a distance of five zhang from Zuo Mo.

“You are going to Nether Spring Jie?” the serene voice drifted over with the wind.

Zuo Mo who had not lowered his guard suddenly focused his gaze. He asked in a deep voice, “How do you know?”

“This is Shattered Stone Jie.” Ceng Lian’er did not pay attention to Zuo Mo’s wariness.

Zuo Mo understood. Most likely, his search for Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass had caught Ceng Yi’s attention. This outrageously beautiful woman in front of him gave him a great sense of danger. Even though a part of his breakthrough was owed to this person, and the other’s silver shen power had been one of the main causes of his breakthrough.

But he could not get the measure of this woman's power or intentions.

"I cultivate moon shen power." Ceng Lian'er's seductive face became slightly dazed. She raised her face, and the moon above her head brightened slightly. A ray of moonlight fell on her face, illuminating her delicate features.

The long eyelashes, the warm lips, the flawless face, under the illumination of the moon, it seemed to shake the soul.

"Moon shen power?" Zuo Mo finally understood why the other's shen power would have power resonance with his shen power.

"I will go with you to Nether Spring Jie," Ceng Lian'er said serenely.

"You'll go with me to Nether Spring Jie?" Zuo Mo heard this and stopped for a long time before he reacted. He felt it was humorous. "Haha, what are you saying? You are going with me to Nether Spring Jie? Haha."

"Yes," Ceng Lian'er looked at Zuo Mo with her calm eyes.

Zuo Mo heard the determination in the other's voice and his humor receded. He frowned. "This joke isn't funny, I'm not familiar with you."

Ceng Lian'er's voice was extremely pleasing to hear. "Because you cultivate sun shen power, and I cultivate moon shen power."

"Don't understand." Zuo Mo shook his head.

"If we cultivate together, our shen power will grow even more quickly," Ceng Lian'er explained.

Zuo Mo finally understood. "You mean power resonance?"

"It is also called paired cultivation," Ceng Lian'er said lightly, "it is very beneficial to you."

Zuo Mo was not persuaded. "I do not need it."

"Because of your right hand?" A hint of mirth rose in Ceng Lian'er's pupils.

However, Zuo Mo did not find it funny. His heart shook. The other's familiarity with his secrets surpassed his expectations... to even know about the whirlpool of shen power in his hand.

This woman

"I do not have any malicious intentions. The whirlpool in your right hand is growing, and you can only absorb a small amount. When it reaches a certain level, you will lose control of it."

She stared at Zuo Mo and said, “Paired cultivation can solve this problem.”

Zuo Mo spread his hands. “Why should I believe you?”

“Because when your shen power awakened me, it left an imprint on my body. If you die, I cannot live,” Ceng Lian’er said as though it was nothing. “If I die, your shen power will also crumble.”

“Ha! You are a good liar!” Zuo Mo laughed coldly.

“The paired cultivation... when it began it decided our fate. If I channel shen power, you will be able to feel it.” As she spoke, the moonlight around Ceng Lian’er brightened.

Zuo Mo’s expression changed drastically. His shen power was moving against his will!

“This is the power resonance you speak of. If you channel shen power, my shen power would also resonate.” Ceng Lian’ers words burrowed into Zuo Mo’s ear.

Damn it!

“I think that it is much safer to follow you, so that I do not die mysteriously one day without knowing the cause.”

Ceng Lian’er didn’t look at Zuo Mo as she slowly walked to his

side. She sat down, and her maid knelt down next to her. In a blink, a little wooden table appeared, an exquisite tea set, a small stove, and she started to boil tea.

Sea of consciousness.

Zuo Mo urgently asked Pu Yao and Wei, “This woman is truthful?”

The one that explained was Wei. “It is true, the paired cultivators in the ancient era usually lived and died together!”

“Screw live and die together!” Zuo Mo swore with a terrible expression.

“Actually, this isn’t a bad thing” Before Wei finished, Zuo Mo angrily turned and left the sea of consciousness.

“Moon shen power?” Pu Yao was thoughtful.

Chapter 558 - Light

Zuo Mo was furious about the situation but Ceng Lian'er didn't even bat an eyelid. She slowly lifted her teacup and elegantly drank. Under her long eyelashes, her bright black eyes were shrouded in the steam.

A Gui sat disaffected by Zuo Mo's body. She was like a puppet, wooden and lifeless.

In front of A Gui, Zuo Mo looked warily at Ceng Lian'er, his brow locked in a frown. He didn't know what to do with this woman that suddenly popped out.

Having recovered his calm, Zuo Mo started to ponder this matter. But no matter which angle he thought about this from, this matter was not anything good for him.

He wasn't interested in something like paired cultivation at all. Yet he had entered what was going to be a long period of attempting high level power increases. He also found it hard to accept that he had to now live and die together with an unfamiliar woman.

Also, if the other encountered danger, it meant that he would also encounter danger. In an instant, his risk of danger had doubled.

The damned paired cultivation!

Zuo Mo felt especially aggrieved when he saw the other's calm state.

Zuo Mo shook his head and decided to not waste any more time on this topic. He started his cultivation again, but out of consideration for safety, he shielded A Gui behind him. Even he didn't notice that he had done this unconsciously.

A faint gold light came out of Zuo Mo's body and was eye-catching in the darkness.

Almost the moment Zuo Mo started channeling shen power, Ceng Lian'er's body shook and faint moon essence shrouded her body.

Zuo Mo instantly detected the change in Ceng Lian'er.

The shen power inside his body was unusually active. The shen power that usually delved into his blood and fixed to his flesh seemed to be drawn out instead. The rate that the power whirlpool in Zuo Mo's right hand was spinning at slowed and the shen power from the whirlpool flowed out of his right hand, and merged with the shen power that floated out of his blood and flesh to circulate around Zuo Mo's body.

Observing the path that the shen power took in circulation, Zuo Mo unconsciously recalled the contents of the gold leaf and a kind of epiphany occurred.

The golden leaf recorded the cultivation method for the sun shen power, but due to the gap in eras, it was hard to understand the contents. Zuo Mo was confused by many parts. Now that shen power was circulating through his body in this novel manner, he seemed to understand many of the cryptic phrases on the golden leaf.

Immersed in the joy of understanding, Zuo Mo completely forgot the flow of time.

The golden light that Zuo Mo released was restrained but Ceng Lian'er's moon essence nearby was so thick it was almost tangible.

The moon moved, the night gradually faded. Dawn silently arrived and the sky started to turn white.

The moment the sun came up out of the horizon, Zuo Mo's body suddenly shook. It gave off blinding golden light as though it was a sun, responding to the sun in the horizon!

Boom!

The Sun Crystal Seed inside Zuo Mo's body suddenly gave off a great amount of flames. The golden flames criss-crossed and wrapped around the Sun Crystal Seed. Following that, a dash of golden liquid charged forward on the path that Zuo Mo's shen power took.

The golden liquid did not move quickly, but was extremely hot and felt as though it was burning. What shocked Zuo Mo the most was its domineering nature! It was the utmost domineering! As though nothing could stop it!

As though it was howling, full of dissatisfaction!

Like it had a dream that one day, it could be like the sun that was rising on the horizon, to hang in the sky!

In this moment, strange scene played out in front of him. Inside an empty and black void, a thread of celestial fire formed, and it grew with time, forming a ball of fire. After millions of years, it grew even bigger, so big until it was almost the size of a true sun.

Suddenly, a hand reached into the void, a hand that looked very normal. This hand only grasped lightly, it had a terrifying power that never had been experienced before. The hand squeezed from all directions.

The sun's enormous body was forcibly compressed to become the Sun Crystal Seed

For some unknown reason Zuo Mo suddenly understood. He understood its dissatisfaction, the dissatisfaction of not being able to be in the sky!

The burning golden liquid suddenly passed into Zuo Mo's heart. Zuo Mo's body suddenly shuddered and his chest felt as though it

was burning. The complex sun mo matrix at his chest slowly lit up.

Boom!

Blinding golden light sprouted from Zuo Mo's chest.

A domineering and vast power filled Zuo Mo's body. In this moment, Zuo Mo had a feeling he looking down on the world. Even those massive mountains and endless deserts were specks under his feet.

This feeling came quickly and passed quickly.

The sun mo matrix at Zuo Mo's chest seemed to come alive and slowly spun. Zuo Mo could clearly feel that the golden liquid turned into a ball of fire when it reached his heart and was spinning endlessly.

A feeling of unprecedented fullness spread through his entire body!

The first sun of Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus had formed!

The moon essence dissipated with the sun, Ceng Lian'er glanced at Zuo Mo. Her face was filled with shock and held none of the ease she had previously! It was as though she was looking at a strange monster!

He had actually had a breakthrough!

Even though she was unable to detect the exact changes inside Zuo Mo's body, she could clearly feel that Zuo Mo's power had reached a whole new level.

The moon shen power inside her body also had grown considerably with the paired cultivation but compared to the other, it was an insignificant increase.

Her face surprised, her black onyx eyes were filled with disbelief.

What she cultivated was moon shen power. Unlike Zuo Mo, she had inherited a complete inheritance. In reality, she had guessed long ago that Zuo Mo's shen power came from a fortuitous encounter. Zuo Mo's shen power cultivation methods had many areas that were irrational and he didn't even know about how they had entered paired cultivation.

But a person like this had had another breakthrough in the span of one night!

In reality, when she had come to Zuo Mo, she had been shocked when she first saw him again. It had just been a few days since she had first seen him, but Zuo Mo's power had clearly increased.

Breaking through the boundary between brigadier and general, her power was also in a period of accelerated growth. She had worked hard on her cultivation in these few days, and her power

had leapt ahead. Even when Master had been alive, Master had always praised her outstanding talent and for being the most talented and accomplished disciple of the lineage for more than a thousand years. She had believed in that.

But

Looking at this freakish person, her confidence started to waver.

She looked at Zuo Mo as though she was admiring a great masterpiece.

————

“How many more days?” Shu Long asked. Behind him, the hardship guards still moved uncompromisingly in their military formation.

“If it all goes smoothly, then ten days!” Ye Ling tried to stay alert but his voice was filled with tiredness.

In these days, they hadn’t rested at all. They had moved at the fastest speed that was safe. What was most irritating were the occasional battles along the way. Since the war between xiuzhe and yaomo had begun, security in these areas had declined and bandits could be found everywhere.

When they encountered bandits, Shu Long wasn’t soft-hearted. If they encountered any bandits, they would kill all of them.

Later on, Ye Ling thought of an idea. He put up a flag on the caravan with a the character “Guard” written on it. After winning the next few battles, the name of Butcher Guard Camp spread, especially when someone discovered that Shu Long’s group was the battalion that had killed three thousand bandits in Eminent Mountain Jie with only one hundred people. This bit of information instantly caused waves.

This also caused bandits to disappear from where Guard Camp was passing by. Even the local factions ignored this terrifying hundred person strong battalion. They definitely did not dare to provoke the caravan.

Luckily, Shu Long and the others moved quickly and did not linger. People paid attention to this and secretly speculated that Guard Camp was probably on a special mission.

Consequently, Guard Camp’s travelling speed suddenly increased.

Shu Long was full of praise for Ye Ling’s idea. He didn’t care at all about getting famous. His mind was completely filled with getting to meet Daren as soon as possible.

“Ten days!”

Everyone’s morale rose. This was the longest journey that Guard Camp had ever taken since it was established. They didn’t even know how many jie they had crossed.

Fortunately, Ye Ling had brought along enough mo bei. This meant they could use the blood pools. The blood pools of the mo and the yao doors of the yao, were like the transportation formations of xiuzhe, and similarly there were tolls to be paid.

Otherwise, it would take years to fly to their destination.

Nan Yue, Cang Ze and the others were also exhausted. However, their wills and hearts were more steeled compared to the past. All of them cultivated powerful yao arts to start with, and the fighting had been of great aid to their training. They were completely different people now.

In ten more days, they would be able to see Daren, everyone found themselves filled with energy!

Golden Crow Camp was filled with light but unusually silent.

Xiuzhe were lying askew in the enormous room. The snores were like the beats of a drum. Master Sun Bao was also in a corner and drooling as he slept. Master Ji Wei also was robbed of all dignity, his legs spread on the stairs as he laid with his limbs spread out, his mouth wide as his snores roared.

Each of them were sleeping sweetly. Many people had lingering excitement on their faces.

Not one of them was awake.

They were extremely tired. They hadn't rested for one moment in so many days. When they were tired, they would throw back a ling dan for energy and continue to work! Just by relying on a pile of ling dan, they did not sleep nor rest as they studied the mo matrixes and what Daren had sent back, about engraving, and activating mo matrixes.

Everyone worked as hard as they could. No one complained.

Everyone furiously worked as though they were possessed without any regard!

Everyone understood that this was a war!

But today, they finally saw the light!

Zong Ru entering seclusion did not attract too much attention. Right now, Turtle Island was unified, everyone was focused on getting stronger. Many people were using seclusion as a method.

He lightly covered the stone slab entrance. The last thread of light that crept through the cracks from the outside disappeared as the cloth settled in front of him.

It was completely dark inside the mountain cave but Zong Ru's

mind was unusually calm.

He had told no one else that his seclusion this time was intended as a death seclusion. Death seclusion was an extremely dangerous type of seclusion, death or advancement. In this seclusion, the number of mental demons would be ten times what it usually was. If one was the least bit careless, they would go mad, their minds would collapse.

But Zong Ru didn't feel any terror. As if it was just like usual, he crossed his legs and sat down, chanting sutras like usual.

In the past, he had sworn the Buddha Abandonment Death Wish that he was to use his vajra body to protect Daren.

Right now, Daren had encountered trouble and his strength was such that he could not help Daren.

In the darkness, Zong Ru's expression was calm. There was no hesitation, no fear, only calm—because this was the path he chose, oath he gave.

Chapter 559 - Meeting Up

“Shui Yue, how have you been these days?” a friend called out loudly.

“Hah! How has he been? Which one of you have ever seen him go out play?” another friend rolled his eyes and said exasperatedly.

Shui Yue smiled slightly and did not respond.

“Ah, I feel that my question is pretty stupid too.” The friend shrugged. “Alright, we’re going, we just got something on our hands, and it really would be a waste not to go out and have some fun.”

“This guy really wastes his good skill!” The other friend’s words were filled with envy and jealousy.

Shui Yue smiled and waved at his friends as they left. He was not tall and his figure was slim. His short hair was messy and soft, and his complexion was slightly pale and caused him to look prim and delicate. The smile on his face was especially endearing. Along the way, many females glanced at him, and some more daring mo females threw seductive looks in his direction.

Suddenly, Shui Yue’s expression changed slightly and his steps stilled. His expression quickly recovered and he looked just like usual except that he walked at a slightly faster pace.

When he returned to his home, Shui Yue quickly locked his doors. At this time, a thread of excitement flashed through his eyes.

He spread open his palm. A bright blood coloured dragon had clearly appeared on his skin. The blood dragon's head was raised proudly, that pair of eyes giving off a vicious air as though it could fly out of his hand at any moment.

“It is true! It is actually true!” he said to himself. He was out of his mind in excitement, laughing and crying at the same time.

He recalled both his father and grandfather who had passed away. Their last words had been so similar.

Wait for the blood summons!

He had doubted whether or not the blood summons existed numerous times. Grandfather had waited his entire life and never gotten it, Father had never gotten it either. He did not truly know what the blood summons were. To him, the faint dragon script on his palm was just a memento to remember his father and grandfather by. The blood summons existed only in a tiny part of his mind, a corner that he had long forgotten.

The Water Moon Family, he smiled weakly. When Grandfather had grown old, he would always tell stories about the past glory of the Water Moon Family, but from youth, Shui Yue only listened to them as stories, because he had never feel the glory of the Water Moon Family. None of his friends had ever heard of the Water

Moon Family.

As for Water Moon mo skill, it was just slightly better than the average mo skills. Shui Yue who had been very mature from a young age was extremely hard-working and his talent among those of the same age was among the top half. Grandfather had sighed countless times while saying that if Water Moon mo skill was complete, Shui Yue would far surpass his present skill.

When Shui Yue heard this, he would hurriedly try to comfort his grandfather each time, saying that he could still become very strong with the present mo skill.

He never believed that there was a complete Water Moon mo skill, but he understood Father and Grandfather.

Old people would always live in their memories of their past glory.

Not long after Grandfather passed away, Father also passed as well. Shui Yue had started to learn how to make a living for himself. Fortunately, he had worked hard from a young age, and was much stronger than those of his age cohort. As he was composed and willing to work-hard, people gradually stopped underestimating him because of his age.

He was young, but after hunting mo embryos, his battle experience was high.

Starting from a long time ago, he assumed that he would live his life like this.

Until today when the blood summons appeared!

Shui Yue recovered from his daze, his eyes becoming clear again. He stood up and started to pack.

There was no mental struggle, no resistance. He didn't know why. Maybe it was that the stories and reminders from his father and grandfather had leached into his blood in his youth, even if he told himself countless times that the blood summons didn't exist.

For the blood call, his forefathers had struggled and lived.

This youth's pale face was now full of longing.

Ceng Lian'er found it strange. Today, Zuo Mo had not cultivated like he usually did. She smelt something was unusual. In the days since she had come, she had personally seen how crazy Zuo Mo was in his dedication to cultivating. He was crazy, squeezing out every second of time. She had been astounded inside.

He repeated the dull and dry cultivation process over and over as though he did not know exhaustion.

In her eyes, Zuo Mo's manipulation of shen power was very crude and there were still many flaws. It was not as refined as hers, but if the two of them fought to the death, she felt that the one to survive would be Zuo Mo.

He really was a crazy person!

Every time she thought this, she would unconsciously look at A Gui. Those shattered yet heart-shaking visions would silently creep into her mind and cause her heart to tremble.

She casually pondered and observed as though everything had nothing to do with her.

But today, Zuo Mo was acting out of the ordinary!

He wasn't cultivating! This was the first time in the many days she had been here, that she saw him stop his cultivation.

Even though Zuo Mo seemed very calm, Ceng Lian'er perceptively noticed the thread of excitement in his eyes.

Was something about to happen?

At this time, Zuo Mo suddenly stood up.

Almost at the same time, a bunch of little dots appeared in the distant horizon.

Those were

Ceng Lian'er's heart shook slightly as she stared at the little black dots. While her expression was calm, her surprise increased. And her maid, Yan'er's expression showed terror.

A battalion!

Ceng Lian'er's eyes were very sensitive. There was only a hundred people but she could judge, from the organized formation, that this was a battalion, and it was a battalion that was very strong in combat!

A black flag was held at the front of the troop with a large word "Guard" written on it.

This battalion did not move quickly, but the formation was strict and flawless. The shock it brought was enough for Ceng Lian'er to be stunned, the daughter of a jie master who had seen numerous battalions!

The other also noticed the four of them and the troop suddenly turned in their direction.

Like a shark that smelt blood, the entire battalion accelerated without warning. A wild howl started like hundreds of beasts howling as they charged!

Ceng Lian's fist unconsciously tightened within her sleeve. She felt as though an invisible rope was strangling her!

"Miss!" Yan'er's face was ashen, her scream filled with terror. She pulled hard at Ceng Lian'er's sleeve trying to pull her to escape.

Even though her face was a pale white, Ceng Lian'er did not move at all because she noticed that Zuo Mo was motionless.

Was it ...

An absurd idea rose in her mind.

Boom!

The battalion had arrived. The dust that rose up from their landing was like a wall of earth that had appeared out of nowhere. It rose up and shrouded everyone's view!

Two zhang away, Zuo Mo fearlessly stood in front of the earth wall like a spear.

The wall of dirt dissipated and the true appearance of this battalion was exposed to Ceng Lian'er. The first phrase in Ceng Lian'er's mind was, veterans. This was a troop of just one hundred people, and each person's individual strength wasn't worth anything in her eyes. But when this dusty troop appeared in front of her, she was unable to dismiss their existence.

They seemed to be part of one being, the combat formation was intimidating as though it was a killing machine that was prepared to massacre the enemy at any moment.

“Daren!”

Many people’s voices were hoarse but everyone had excitement on their faces. Morale was high as they stared at Zuo Mo, their eyes filled with undisguised admiration and respect.

Looking at their dirt covered uniforms and the exhaustion that could not be hidden, Zuo Mo’s nose felt sore. He suppressed it, and a smile bloomed on his face. “Everyone, you must have worked hard!”

“Have everyone rest.” Zuo Mo said to Shu Long in a soft voice.

Shu Long was hesitant.

Zuo Mo knew what he was worried about and said directly, “I have broken through to yuanying!”

Ecstasy appeared on Shu Long’s face and then he nodded, giving the order to rest. When the order was given, everyone immediately sat down where they were.

Zuo Mo walked over and inspected every person to see if there

were any hidden wounds. They had completed such an astoundingly long journey with many fights big and small along the way by gritting their teeth and holding their breath. Now that they released it, the exhaustion and suppressed wounds would come up like the tide.

Yan'er's little mouth was wide. Everything that was happening in front of her surpassed her imagination. This battalion was that guy's!

She didn't understand why Miss had to follow this guy. Was it because he had healed and woken Miss up? It was the first time she had seen a man being carried in a princess carry by a woman. Such a weak man

But since Miss had decided to do this, she did not speak. In any case, her duty was only to follow Miss.

This scene stunned her and her mind turned blank.

Ceng Lian'er's gaze was deep. From beginning to end, she did not speak a word and only looked deeply at Zuo Mo.

It was unknown what she was thinking.

————

“Jie Master! We have identified them, this battalion is Butcher Guard Camp!” Chao Yu reported in haste.

“En?” Ceng Yi caught the thread of fear in Chao Yu’s voice and couldn’t help but feel slightly shocked. He knew his subordinate well who was usually black-hearted and very daring. It couldn’t be anything normal that had caused Chao Yu to lose his composure.

“Butcher Guard Camp” Ceng Yi said amusedly, and then asked, “What is their background?”

“Unknown, they are a battalion that suddenly appeared out of nowhere. They number just over one hundred people, but some time ago, when they were passing through Eminent Mountain Jie, they were surrounded and attacked by bandits. They massacred three thousand bandits and left unharmed.” When he spoke to here, Chao Yu couldn’t help but think of the blood scene in the mirage he had obtained, and his expression was slightly ugly.

“Eminent Mountain Jie, the jie of bandits!” Ceng Yi’s expression suddenly became grave. “One hundred three thousand unharmed”

He felt deep shock at this news. Eminent Mountain Jie was not far from where they were, and the fame of the jie of bandits was well-known. Even though he did not pay any attention to bandits, but three thousand bandits were not a small number. If the other side had just one hundred people, then it was a very terrifying matter.

If it was his battalion, he couldn’t help but shake his head. Unless he personally lead the troop, and took along all of the brigadiers

and colonels under his command, he wouldn't obtain such a result.

That youth's face appeared in his mind. He was shocked. This person's background definitely was not simple.

Thinking of his daughter, he grimaced. There was no use in thinking so much. Other than getting onto good terms with the boy, what else could he do?

After a moment of silence, he suddenly said, "Order the Celestial Planet Guard to follow Miss. No matter where Miss goes, they have to follow. Even if Miss tries to get them to leave, they have to follow."

"Celestial Planet Guard!" Chao Yu gaped and was stunned.

Chapter 560 - Departure

Zuo Mo glanced at the guards crowded around Ceng Lian'er and was slightly surprised. There wasn't a large number of guards, but their average skill level was not low. There were seven brigadier mo. The others were colonel, but they were each very close to brigadier level. It was clear that this was an elite force.

Remembering that the other's father was a jie master, Zuo Mo felt this was very normal.

However, the other guarded Ceng Lian'er constantly and didn't even move a step away. It looked as though they would not accept his orders. Zuo Mo did not care. He wanted Ceng Lian'er as far away from him as possible. He was strangely wary of this beautiful woman whose personality he could not understand.

A Gui was much better.

Zuo Mo thought this as his gaze landed on A Gui, softening his expression. However, when he recalled how A Gui had not shown any improvement even after consuming the Water Cloud Embryos, Zuo Mo's mood sank again. The mist people and Turtle Island had set up a transportation formation between Cloud Sea Jie and the mo territories so it was easier to travel through. Shu Long had coincidentally come to reinforce Zuo Mo after the mist people had delivered Water Cloud Embryos to Turtle Island, so he had brought them along. The mist people had special methods to preserve the harvested Water Cloud Embryos and so they would not lose their effectiveness.

But after A Gui used them, there was nothing else except slightly more vitality in her eyes. The shen power inside her body was strange and malicious, almost completely sealing off A Gui's soul. It had consumed the Water Cloud Embryo.

A Gui's shen power actually grew a fraction.

He could not keep dragging this on.

“Have you all recovered?” Zuo Mo asked Shu Long.

“All recovered!” Shu Long's face held joy. “Six hardship guards leveled up and also a flower yao. Additionally, Miss Nan Yue has leveled up.”

These hardship guards had been the elite of the elite he had picked from Guard Camp. The journey this time had been dangerous but since they made it through, they benefited greatly from their gains. Zuo Mo had taught Nan Yue the longest, and she was the strongest of the group. Adding on that she was stubborn and hardworking, she had only lacked real combat experience before. This long journey and the hundreds of small and large battles along the way had caused her to quickly break through and cultivate beyond yin spirit, stepping in the realm of Rahula yao.

Zuo Mo also had a happy expression. Every bit of strength meant they had a better chance.

In Guard Camp, only Shu Long and A Wen had been in brigadier

level. Now there were six more. Ye Ling had originally been a brigadier, adding on the flower yao and Nan Yue that leveled up, there were eleven people of at least the brigadier level in Zuo Mo's troop.

There were eleven brigadier, and one general level in a troop of one hundred people. The rest were also experienced fighters. This troop could be called a powerful one.

Shou Ping was observing this famed battalion, Butcher Guard Camp, maybe it was more accurate to call them infamous. As the commander of Celestial Planet Guard, Shou Ping was a silver battle general and Ceng Yi's left and right hand. However, every time, Shou Ping observed this battalion, he couldn't help but feel a part of his soul tremble.

Before this, he had been very confident in the skill level of the troop he commanded. It had been through his hard effort and energy that they had created the present Celestial Planet Guard. Not just in Shattered Stone Jie, even in the nearby jie, Celestial Planet Guard was considered the top battalion.

But with something to compare to, the top battalion in his eyes were like a group of idiots wearing glittering clothing in front of other people. Previously, he had suspected the truthfulness of the rumors that one hundred had killed three thousand, but after he met this battalion, he didn't doubt the rumors anymore. With a battalion like this, not just three thousand, even five thousand might be possible.

The other's regulations were so strict and they were shockingly

well trained.

He had never heard of a battalion maintaining their formation even while at rest. They would each cultivate of their own accord when they had any spare time. It was the complete opposite of himself who had to stand guard every day and supervise Celestial Plant Guard's training.

There were like a pack of insatiable beasts that never knew rest nor exhaustion.

Shou Ping was frightened. He wasn't the only one. The members of Celestial Planet Guard who were usually very proud were frightened. In the beginning, they had been rebellious when Shou Ping told them to not make any trouble. But after two days they had seen Guard Camp's group of crazy people that didn't seem like mo, they didn't have a temper.

They had a kind of killing energy where even a glance caused fear.

But Ceng Lian'er was extremely calm as she cultivated on a regular schedule. She would idly drink tea, and eat pastries as though she was on a sight-seeing tour.

Shou Ping felt admiration for Miss. As expected as the daughter of Daren. In the future, Daren's role might have to be passed onto Miss' hands.

Zuo Mo didn't pay too much attention to the Celestial Planet Guards. His standards had been raised up high by Lil' Miss and the others. He really did not think too highly of Celestial Planet Guard's skill level.

He turned and looked into the distance. That direction was the direction of Shattered Stone Town. He had the considered taking along Ka Zhuo and Dong Zi, but after thinking about it, he ended this notion. One was a simple youth, the other was a matrix awakening master without any skill to protect himself.

“Depart,” Zuo Mo said indifferently.

“Fei Lei, are you really going to leave?” The youths looked yearningly at the other.

Fei Lei reached out his hand covered in scars and rubbed the head of one of the youths. He said with a smile, “I have my fate.”

“Fate?” the youths' tender faces were puzzled.

“En, something that I have to do, that is fate.” Fei Lei explained with a smile. His body was extremely broad and well-built, his features sharp and weathered. His short dense beard was peppered and his eyes were a faint grey that was unusually deep.

“Will you come back and teach me?” the youth spoke in a stuffed

voice.

“No.” Fei Lei still smiled as he narrowed his eyes. He showed some hints of age. “You need to work hard on your cultivation, do not slack off. This way, you can enter the battalions early. Everyone, I am leaving.”

Finishing, Fei Lei turned and charged forward taking two steps and shot up into the air. His long windbreaker was like the wings of a bat as he flew into the sky.

He did not turn his head.

His deep light grey eyes looked towards the distance, filled the weariness of having seen the world. A burning flame shot out and silently pulsed.

There was a vicious looking blood dragon script on his tightly clasped palm.

The battle horn that had been sealed for thousands of years seemed to have been blown in his ear.

Zuo Mo's jie map had been obtained from Ceng Yi. The collections of the master of a jie was pretty good. Through this jie map, Zuo Mo was able to easily locate Nether Spring Jie.

This was a journey that was even longer than Shu Long's journey from Little Savage Jie.

Little Savage Jie and Shattered Stone Jie both belonged to Hundred Savage Realm, but Nether Spring Jie belonged to the deepest part of Dark Realm. The distance between them almost crossed the entire mo territories.

The factions along the way were many and their territories criss-crossed. The the majority of faction territories on their journey were not labelled, barely a tenth were.

Zuo Mo understood upon further thought. Ceng Yi was pretty powerful but he clearly had no ambitions to expand. The jie map only labeled the areas near Shattered Stone Jie.

Zuo Mo knew that this was not going to be an easy matter but he had no thoughts of retreat. He also planned on trying to buy Reverse Shadow Spirit Silkgrass along the way.

Fortunately, the mo had the blood pools.

It was the first time Zuo Mo saw a blood pool. The blood pool was like an enormous pond that was filled with a bubbling liquid that appeared similar to fresh blood. However, Zuo Mo knew that the "blood" was not actual blood, but a solution called Crimson Blood Solution. Its composition was extremely complex.

Just like the xiuzhe that were able to set up transportation formations in the xiuzhe territories, the mo that were capable of making Crimson Blood Solutions had high status.

Shu Long and the others were experienced and jumped into the blood pool in an organized manner.

Zuo Mo picked up A Gui and jumped unhesitatingly into the blood pool.

A Gui would only remain unaffected towards one person's actions, Zuo Mo.

When Shou Ping saw this, he stole a look at Miss. Miss appeared unaffected. He couldn't help but release a breath. It seemed that Miss was not attracted to this boy. Then he felt a slight regret. This boy wasn't tall, handsome, or rich, but he was fierce, influential, and strong!

Our mo traditions value fierce men, Miss!

It is the first time Old Shou has seen such a fierce man

Such a pity such a pity

Shou Ping muttered inside as he daydreamed. How powerful would it be if the two married.

However, none of this could be seen from his face. He calmly followed behind Miss into the blood pool.

When he jumped into the blood pool, Zuo Mo felt his vision turn blood red. A strange sweet scent came into his nose. Strangely, the Crimson Blood Solution would not enter his nose like water, but glued onto his skin like a cool membrane.

Suddenly, an enormous suction force came from underneath them.

Before they could struggle, they were pulled down by this force and disappeared.

When the force disappeared, Zuo Mo opened his eyes. He saw Shu Long and the others floating in the Crimson Blood Solution nearby. The blood red Crimson Blood Solution was clear like a red crystal. Zuo Mo could clearly see everyone's figures.

Without any orders or being directed, several of the hardship guards floated up.

Moments later, they signalled that it was safe so everyone floated up.

The blood pool was not always a safe place. It had been alright before the war started. None of the large powers would allow any safety issues to arise at their blood pools. This was related to the stability and infrastructure of their territories, they had

maintained their trade routes. However, the war was increasing in intensity, and many places were restricted. Some blood pools, because they were in areas that lacked a ruler, became places that bandits liked to lie in ambush.

Shu Long had encountered this kind of situation along the road so they were very familiar with the safety measures.

Walking out of the blood pool, what entered their eyes was a desolate scene that caused Zuo Mo to show wariness.

Shou Ping became nervous and signaled the Celestial Planet Guard to instantly encircle Ceng Lian'er.

Shou Ping said in a low voice, "Miss, the situation is not right."

Ceng Lian'er glanced at Zuo Mo and asked, "Not right?"

"En, this subordinate came here a few months ago. Previously, there had been a market here," Shou Ping said in a low voice as he looked around warily.

Shou Ping did not deliberately keep his voice down. Everyone had good hearing and naturally could hear him clearly.

The mood suddenly became tense.

Chapter 561 - The Beginning Of War

“This is the intelligence we have gathered, we have identified jies with chaos rifts.” Xie Shan’s face was tired but his eyes were unusually bright. “There are three jie in total!”

“East Flow Jie, Middle Granary Jie and Cloud Gate Jie.”

The enormous mirage showed a gigantic jie map.

Gongsun Cha listened closely, fearful he would miss a detail. Ma Fan, Wei Ran, and the others stood in ordered ranks.

“There hasn’t been any action at East Flow Jie’s chaos rift. Cloud Gate Jie’s chaos rift leads to the yao territories, and Earth Universe Sect in Cloud Gate Jie is very powerful and possess six battalions. They control almost half of Cloud Gate Jie.” Xie Shan’s intelligence was very detailed as he steamed on. “Our best target is Middle Granary Jie. It isn’t just the closest to us, its largest local sect was defeated. They are in chaos. It has been confirmed that the attacks are a mo battalion. It is definitely the mo territories behind the chaos rift. Because there have not been any mo hostages, we are unsure at the moment which jie it is.”

“As long as it leads to the mo territories, it is valuable to us.” Gongsun Cha caused everyone to sit up in alertness.

He stood up and slowly scanned the crowd. Everyone sat up straight.

“Everyone should know what is going on with Shixiong.” Gongsun Cha’s tone was very calm but his ruffled bangs could not stop the light of his eyes.

“Our goal is very simple, reinforce Shixiong! But if we enter any mo jie, we will create an endless struggle with the surrounding mo territories.”

“But we must reach into the mo territories so we can reinforce Shixiong.” Gongsun Cha had clearly thought this through. His rationale was clear. “We can create our own mo battalion using Guard Camp and Shi Dong. These mo battalions can enter the mo territories and then reinforce Shixiong. We can even turn Cloud Sea Jie into a place where yao, mo and xiuzhe can coexist. This is hard, but not impossible.

Everyone showed thoughtful expressions. After a few moments of thought, they nodded slightly and fighting spirit started to burn in their eyes.

Lil’ Miss smiled slightly. The bashful smile of the neighbor’s boy appeared. The eyes behind the bangs grew even brighter. His calm tone was filled with an indescribable insanity. “But before this, we need to take over the chaos rift and the territory that can lead into the mo territories! We need more battalions! We need more resources! We need to become stronger!”

Everyone’s eyes flashed crazily. They felt as though their blood was burning.

“Are you ready?”

The demonic slight smile and the furious fighting spirit crossed like light and dark on Gongsun Cha's raised face.

“Yes!” Everyone stood up and shouted together.

Gongsun Cha walked next to Middle Granary Jie on the mirage. He turned around, his bashful smile filled with cold fighting spirit.

“The war has begun!”

—————

Shi Dong's progress in Little Savage Jie was extremely quick. Right now, he had taken over all of Little Savage Jie. In the past, he had not been trusted but he had fame in Little Savage Jie. Everyone knew that Shi Dong was a very strong battle general.

So when Shi Dong suddenly returned to fight, other than his former leader that called for his head, no other power said anything. In the mo territories, events like this happened everyday. For those noble families, there were things like glory and honor; but for these little factions, the strongest was king. Whomever had the biggest fist was the leader.

Shi Dong faced off against his former boss. Before he could

attack, the boss' subordinates mutinied. Everyone knew that Shi Dong had not to been fully trusted but the boss, but everyone also knew how strong Shi Dong was. Being former allies they also knew better than other people. To stay alive, they directly surrendered.

After the great victory, Shi Dong dissolved the local battalions according to Lil' Miss' orders and selected the elite ones to replenish Grey Camp,

In a short period of time, Grey Camp had expanded to three times its former size yet he had only picked the top quality mo troops.

However, he also knew that it would take a certain amount of time for this reformed Grey Camp to be battle-ready.

But with [Great Day Hardship Guard] he had enough confidence he could make Grey Camp into a top-rank battalion!

However, he clearly underestimated Turtle Island's strength.

He received Lil' Miss' orders for Grey Camp to send members in a rotation to go to Turtle Island and undergo special training.

Special training?

He was slightly puzzled. What kind of training was special training?

However, these were orders and he knew what his duties were, instantly arranging it.

Zuo Mo did not know that there were countless eyes watching their journey.

The name of Butcher Guard Camp intimidated small forces and attracted the attention of larger forces. Though they were not willing to provoke Guard Camp, it did not stop them from secretly investigating them.

There had clearly been a fierce battle here. The market's ruins and the burnt black soil all pointed to this.

Everyone's nerves were tight. They were not worried about encountering bandits, but were very worried about encountering large battalions, especially xiuzhe battalions.

It was a dangerous matter for Shou Ping's group to fight against xiuzhe, enemies they were unfamiliar with.

Zuo Mo didn't want to encounter them either because his identity might be exposed. Even though Guard Camp didn't appear any different than mo after Wei's teachings, but those large sects were immeasurable in skill. If he was exposed, it definitely would not be fun.

Those people that exterminated mo would exterminate them as well.

Celestial Planet Guard and Guard Camp carefully kept their guard up. From the way they did this, it was possible to see the difference between the two groups. Every person in Celestial Planet Guard seemed to be anxious fearing they would face great enemies as they moved carefully. Everyone in Guard Camp had calm expressions. Only the light that occasionally flashed through their eyes exposed their wariness.

The skill could be instantly judged!

Shou Ping shook his head inside, and was deeply impacted. He quickly threw all stray thoughts to the back of his mind. Everything in front of him was unusual.

A black shadow suddenly flashed by and entered the ranks of Guard Camp.

So fast!

Shou Ping was shocked. The speed of this scout surpassed all people in Celestial Planet Guard.

“There are two groups fighting up ahead, both mo, the fighting is fierce.” A Wen reported the situation that was occurring up ahead.

Zuo Mo's brow creased. This path was one they had to travel, they could not go around it.

“Let's go see.”

The troop moved silently and the intense battlefield quickly appeared in front of them.

The sky was in chaotic. A small group of mo were surrounded by numerous mo that had dark green wings on their backs. These dark green mo were grouped together like packs of wolves that scattered and gathered, covering the sky, and howling.

“They are Green Yaksha!” Wei reminded Zuo Mo. “They are extremely fast and not weak offensively, innately cold-blooded and desirous of slaughter. They are most skilled in attrition battles, you have to be careful.”

“What weaknesses do they have?” Zuo Mo asked. If Lil' Miss was here, he definitely would not ask this question. Lil' Miss seemed to know all the yaomo.

“They like to fight, are easily angered, and their tempers are not well-regulated.” Wei said rapidly, “However, you need to be careful, while normal combat mo are not disciplined, it is easy for battle generals to come out of green yaksha. Those above silver are

pretty good, and actually, snake mo also easily produces battle generals.”

Zuo Mo’s gaze quickly landed on a mo wearing a bright red cape on the battlefield. This person was well-built and extremely brave. He stood with empty hands at the front of the formation. Every time he attacked, it was a ball of fire. If the green yaksha that charged were not careful, they would be burnt into ash at a visible rate.

The fatalities of the defending battalion was high. The reason they had not been defeated yet was mostly due to this large mo.

“Daren, they seem to be protecting someone,” Ye Ling said in a low voice. He was experienced and instantly detected it.

Zuo Mo made a sound. He had also noticed this. There were only three hundred people left in this battalion but they were still resisting and protecting an old person.

The fatality rate of the green yaksha was also high but they were in a frenzy, wave after wave battering against the other’s battle formation.

With every wave numerous corpses would drop from the sky, but fatalities would also occur in the other’s battle formation.

Zuo Mo’s expression changed. One side did not care about fatalities, the other side did not retreat a step. The battle was

intense and fierce. He had heard Wei and Pu Yao say before that the mo were skilled in battle and that their battles were unusually cruel. Having seen it with his own eyes, it really was so. In comparison, the battles between xiuzhe troops were lacking.

When Shou Ping saw the green yaksha, his expression changed.

Especially when he counted that there were seven to eight hundred green yaksha flying in the air. The green yaksha were not rabble like bandits. Seven to eight hundred yaksha were enough to take down a city.

Thinking about the ruins of the market they had walked past, Shou Ping's heart sank. Had it been these green yaksha that were responsible?

He couldn't help but turn to look at Zuo Mo. He saw the other had an expression of ease without any visible panic. He felt embarrassed inside. He was a battle general but he hadn't seen battle yet; he wasn't comparable to this youth.

Zuo Mo's expression was calm but he was slightly panicked inside. He was not as freakish as Lil' Miss, but his judgement had been honed with practical experience and he was much stronger than average silver battle generals.

The fighting most likely would not finish up in a short period of time.

The large man's side had fewer people but they were resolved and there seemed to be someone directing them. Their defence was very strict. Other than charging at them, the green yaksha didn't seem to have a good solution.

The battle probably would continue through to tomorrow night, Zuo Mo guessed inside.

But what he did not want to encounter such a delay.

The two sides fighting quickly noticed Zuo Mo's group.

An old voice suddenly came from the formation behind the large man. "Which friend is this? This one is Tao Xing from Endless City, please, Friend, give this one a hand in aid. After this battle, this one will give heavy thanks!"

The other was asking for help, but he still maintained his mannerism and there was no panic in his tone.

"Tao Xing!" Shou Ping's pupils suddenly expanded as he exclaimed.

Chapter 562 - Business

Tao Xing?

Zuo Mo beckoned at Shou Ping authoritatively, indicating for him to come over. In his eyes, Ceng Lian'er had come to him, so Shou Ping and the Celestial Planet Guard were like the bonus that one got after buying the main product. He felt nothing at ordering the other about.

Shou Ping's tendon pulsed. A youth that wasn't even twenty was ordering him about. If this was any other person, he would have smashed them into pieces! Even if you were a fierce man, even if your subordinates were powerful, even if you had a powerful background, you are not the jie master! But he saw Miss out of the corner of his eyes, and Miss was looking directly at him.

His heart jumped.

... ... I'll endure it!

Shou Ping obediently walked in front of Zuo Mo, "Sir, is there something you need?"

"Who is Tao Xing?" Zuo Mo did not waste words and directly asked.

"The city master of Endless City!" Shou Ping thought and felt that if they encountered any danger, they would not be able to

escape so it was best to actually speak seriously of this matter. “Endless City is a very famous and large city in Dark Abyss Jie, which is far from here. Tao Xing is most famous for raising mo embryos. Supposedly, because he had raised dark mo embryo, he was given Endless City by the jie baster of Dark Abyss Jie.”

“Mo embryos?” Zuo Mo noticed the flicker of yearning in Ye Ling’s eyes. He suddenly recalled that Ye Ling cultivated the Mist Hand Seat and needed mo embryos. Being unable to cultivate a mo physique was one of his regrets.

“Yes! Tao Xing is a true mo embryo grandmaster and very famous.” A thread of desire flashed through Shou Ping’s eyes but he knew this was just a futile hope so his gaze quickly regained clarity.

Zuo Mo suddenly turned and shouted towards the battlefield, “Tao Xing, do you have mist mo embryo?”

Shou Ping was stunned. All of Celestial Planet Guard was speechless.

A small indiscernible smile appeared on Ceng Lian’er’s lips.

————

“Grandmaster, will they help?” Tang Fei asked worriedly. Even though Tao Xing was the master of Endless City, but he was familiar with his people and liked being called Grandmaster.

Tao Xing was dressed in loose black robes. His face was wizened but his eyes were alert and gave people the feeling he was a scholar. The situation was urgent but his face was calm and indicated no panic.

He smiled slightly, his tone filled with nonchalance. “This is up to the Heavens.”

Tang Fei bit down on her lips. She was filled with regret and hate. If she had stopped Grandmaster when they departed, Grandmaster would not be in such danger!

Tao Xing knew what Tang Fei was thinking. He said with a smile, “Do not blame yourself. This matter is not your fault, you have done very well. With just five hundred people you were able to stop one thousand and five hundred green yaksha. When word of this gets out, you will be famous.”

Tang Fei was tall and the form fitting armor emphasized her body. The light green hair was up in a simple ponytail. Her right hand was on the mo weapon at her waist as she stood handsomely.

There was no pride on Tang Fei’s face. Her fingers were white as she gripped her mo weapon.

Even though she was speaking to City Master, the majority of her attention was on the battlefield. She noticed that Cha Xiong’s movement had slowed and instantly felt panic.

Tang Fei knew very well that she was able to stop this one thousand and five hundred green yaksha with five hundred people because Cha Xiong was a skilled fighter. Otherwise, they would have been defeated long ago.

If Cha Xiong ran out of energy, the balance would quickly tilt.

Suddenly, a voice rang out over the entire battlefield. “Tao Xing, do you have mist mo embryo?”

Tang Fei’s eyes widened and her expression froze. She felt unspeakably uncomfortable. She had followed Tao Xing for many years, and seen many times that Grandmaster had asked other people for help. But she had never encountered a situation like this. Each of the personages that Grandmaster asked would usually complete the request without a second word. After the matter was dealt with, the Grandmaster would naturally give his thanks, mostly with mo embryos and the two would establish good relations.

She had never met someone who started out by stating conditions. Comparing this, she couldn’t help but have a low opinion.

As expected, those personages were great and prestigious, their mannerisms were not anything that greenhorns could have.

If they saved Grandmaster, would they fear not having mo embryos?

And stating a price at such a crucial time, wasn't this just blackmail? Tang Fei was unhappy and her expression turned dark.

Tao Xing stilled. It was the first time he met such a direct person. However, he was usually open-minded and did not care too much. He said loudly, "Sir, what kind of mist mo embryo do you want?"

This time, it was Zuo Mo's turn to pause. What kind of mist mo embryo? He turned around and asked Ye Ling. "What kind of mist mo embryo do you need?"

The rims of Ye Ling's eyes turned red. When Zuo Mo asked about the mist mo embryos, his heart started beating wildly. When Zuo Mo asked him the direct question, a feeling he had never had before filled him. If Daren asked him to die right now, he would charge unhesitatingly.

My king

His lips trembled as he stammered out, "Ash Phase Mist mo embryo"

"Oh, it is Ash Phase Mist mo embryo." Zuo Mo nodded. He turned and shouted, "Old Man, Ash Phase Mist mo embryo!"

Old man!

Tang Fei almost drew the mo weapon at her waist. Her face was full of fury. This was the first time she had encountered someone so disrespectful towards the City Master! She was not the only one. The mo guards around her were also angry.

The Celestial Planet Guard, with Shou Ping as the leader, all looked reverently at Zuo Mo.

Heavens! This person was probably the first one that dared to call Tao Xing Old Man!

Tao Xing chuckled. He felt this person was very interesting. He shouted, "Boy, how many do you want?"

He had originally thought the other would ask a great price. He had not imagined that the other just wanted a Grey Phase Mist mo embryo. This wasn't anything to him. It seemed the other was truly a greenhorn.

He had made a mistake!

Zuo Mo instantly realized that his opening price was too low. He only knew a bit about mo embryos so it was hard to avoid making mistakes. For Zuo Mo who had greediness engraved into his bones, it was harder for him to accept making a mistaken quote than for him to cut off his own flesh. He wanted ask Ye Ling but when he saw the other's teary state, Zuo Mo felt it would be a waste of time to ask. He decided to just go in.

“One hundred!”

Shou Ping almost fell to the ground. Ye Ling’s tears froze in his eyes. He opened his mouth and did not know what to say.

Even the green yaksha stilled.

One hundred!

Mo embryos!

When were mo embryos counted in units of one hundred?

Woosh, Tang Fei unsheathed the mo weapon at her waist and prepared to fight to the death. Truthfully, she was more willing to go up and chop up that greenhorn. In her eyes, this person was even more horrid than the ugly green yaksha.

One hundred!

It was Tao Xing’s turn to be stunned. He didn’t know what to say.

Heavens, one hundred mo embryos. Even if it was the Grey Phase Mist mo embryos that were not high level, this number was outrageous. Mo embryos, these were mo embryos!

Was that person really a mo?

This absurd thought rose in Tao Xin's mind. What he did not know was that his thought was so close to the truth.

“Sorry, I only have three Grey Phase Mist mo embryos with me!” For some reason, when Tao Xing said this, even he felt slightly embarrassed. “Sire, can you consider changing the request to to other mo embryos?”

“Just three” Zuo Mo rubbed his chin and pretended to be deep in thought. He hurriedly asked Pu Yao and Wei. “Quick quick quick, what mo embryos should we get?”

Pu Yao's thin lips were like blades that drew blood with each swipe, “Gold Phase mo embryo, Day mo embryo, Nether Shadow mo embryo, Cold Blade Mantis mo embryo, Hundred Night mo embryo.”

Wei had a warm and harmonious smile as he added, “And Nether Water Clear Moon mo embryo, Magnetism mo embryo, Falling Star mo embryo, Flashing Spirit mo embryo.”

Zuo Mo repeated without missing a word. His voice spread through the entire battlefield.

The entire battlefield was completely silent. Everyone was shocked by this mo embryo list.

The eyes of all the mo gathered on Zuo Mo. In this moment, Zuo

Mo was the center of attention of thousands. Even the green yaksha were gaping as they looked at Zuo Mo like they were seeing a ghost.

The eyes of the green yaksha Leader turned red. If it wasn't an absolute order this time, he wanted to shout, give them to me, give them to me and I will immediately turn around and leave! No, just half, we only want half and we will leave immediately!

He suspected when he returned and reported to his superiors, those daren would also regret not giving him the power to make such a transaction

Tao Xing was like a statue. He was completely stunned.

Oh, Heavens, how could I have had such a stupid thought just now. How could this person not be a mo? A mo that could list so many mo physique names, he had never encountered one like this.

The pitiful Tao Xing was still immersed in the other's familiarity of mo embryos. He had not comprehended the mobei that was represented by this string of mo embryos.

"This is extortion!" Tang Fei shouted, unable to bear it any longer.

Zuo Mo stilled and then said unconcernedly, "This is a transaction done willingly on both sides. It's fine if you are not willing. I do not feel that there is anything more valuable than life.

You will not make a loss on this transaction.”

All the mo admired Zuo Mo’s shamelessness.

Tang Fei was unable to respond. Fire burned in her eyes as she wanted to burn Zuo Mo into dust.

Tao Xing stopped Tang Fei. Even though there was pain on his face, he shouted, “This little brother is right, there is nothing more important than life. Alright, I agree. However, the mo embryos are at Endless City. Sir, you will have to send someone to pick them up.”

“Are we going to pass through Dark Abyss Jie?” Zuo Mo asked Shu Long in a low voice.

Shu Long had been very calm all this time. In reality, other than Ye Ling, Nan Yue and the few others, all of the other people in the troop didn’t feel anything. They actually felt that Daren was correct. What was more valuable than life.

Shu Long nodded. “Daren, we will pass through it.”

Zuo Mo had a happy expression as he shouted, “Alright, agreed!”

The leader of the green yaksha instantly felt his heart was empty. Endless disappointment filled his body. This almost drove him insane.

So many mo embryos

He suddenly raised his head, his eyes bloody red as he shrieked,
“Kill them!”

“Kill them!” All the green yaksha had red eyes and vicious expressions.

A troop of just one hundred dared to dismiss them!

Kill them!

Chapter 563 - Fight!

The majority of the green yaksha dove down at them!

A layer of green light appeared on their spread wings. Their wings tore apart the air like knives, and the howling was like a rising tide.

Their eyes were bloody red, their expressions twisted. The black mo matrixes glowed on their exposed dark green skin.

The green energy gathered at the tips of their wings. When each yaksha flew, it created two blinding streaks of light. The lights of the swarm were like a chaotic storm, bright and intimidating!

Suddenly, they quickly organized into formation with astounding speed. The lights that covered the sky seemed to be compressed together by an invisible hand. They became closely packed together!

The green streaks all rose and intercrossed. They spun around each other and attracted each other, pressing towards the center. The light grew in intensity. Looking from afar, they looked like one being, like an enormous green yaksha that was dozens of zhang long. It was like a falling star that crashed down with great force!

“King Yaksha!” Tang Fei shouted, the blood in her face draining out. As a silver battle general, she was familiar with the ultimate killing move of the Green Yaksha Battalions.

No! This group of green yaksha definitely was not a normal group of bandits. This was a green yaksha battalion!

Untrained green yaksha would not be able to perform King Yaksha. King Yaksha was called the ultimate killing move of a green yaksha battalion. It was an extremely difficult maneuver and demanded high coordination from every green yaksha involved.

Tang Fei tightly gripped her mo weapon. Her blood coloured lips had drained to a pale white. If the other had used King Yaksha during their battle, they would not have managed to survive until now. Tang Fei had a high opinion of herself but she never would think that she would be able to stop King Yaksha with just five hundred soldiers.

This made her realize that other's goal was to capture Grandmaster alive!

In a blink, Tang Fei understood what the green yaksha were planning. But what was the use in knowing? She had never felt so helpless, never!

King Yaksha!

She wouldn't die a worthless death if it was in the hands of such a battalion, one that could perform King Yaksha.

Tang Fei felt hopeless.

The crossing lights from the green yaksha dazzled the eyes. The green rays of light that were dozens of zhang long almost stole the color from the sun.

Shou Ping's expression changed. He almost shouted at the top of his lungs, "Snake Coil!"

The Celestial Planet Guard's formation suddenly changed. Like a snake, the guard curled up its body. This was the defense formation that the Celestial Planet Guard was most skilled in. But Shou Ping didn't feel any confidence.

That was King Yaksha!

It was one of the most famed ultimate techniques of a green yaksha battalion. It was used as one of the standards to measure the strength of a green yaksha battalion. A battalion that could perform King Yaksha was not an average green yaksha battalion!

Shou Ping's eyes were filled with blood as he bit down hard on his teeth.

Celestial Planet Guard was strong offensively and weak defensively. If this was any other time, he would just charge and fight it out. The Green Yaksha had their King Yaksha, but Celestial Planet Guard had their own ultimate techniques. However, Miss

was here! No matter the time and setting, protecting Miss was the most important mission.

Damn it!

He looked urgently towards Miss. However, he found that Miss was looking serenely at Zuo Mo as though she did not see the King Yaksha forming in the air.

Was she

His mind shifted and he abruptly turned his head.

And he saw Zuo Mo raise his left hand.

—————

Zuo Mo's left hand was in a fist, his arm drawn back above his waist, his weight on his back foot, his figure slightly twisted to one side.

The howling in the air seemed to suddenly disappear. A strange feeling rose.

This was Shou Ping's eyes suddenly widened!

Dong!

An invisible ripple reverberated like that of a drum and transferred to every person behind him with Zuo Mo as the center.

Boom-boom !

Dong dong!

Every beat was strong and firm, penetrating to the mind. Everyone's blood and muscles seemed to feel a fatal attraction and pulsed out of their control!

The beats were stirring. With every beat, everyone unconsciously adjusted their power to the rhythm.

Countless ruler-straight dots of light flew from Shu Long and the other Guard Camp members. Like metal attracted to a magnet, they entered Zuo Mo's raised left fist. In a blink, Zuo Mo's left fist was covered in an almost tangible black light.

The Sun Script at the center of Zuo Mo's chest lit up. Threads of golden light extended out of Zuo Mo's left hand and mixed beautifully within the black energy.

Boom boom boom!

The rhythmic beating speed up like the hurried gallop of a horse. The black energy on Zuo Mo's hand increased. All the hardship

guards behind Zuo Mo that were covered in heavy armor vibrated uncontrollably.

Every beat caused them to feel excitement. Their fighting spirit rose like flames in the wind, and burned the blood in their bodies!

The power in their bodies uncontrollably pulsed with Daren's pace as though they were communicating to Daren!

When their fighting spirit reached a peak and their blood boiled, a low voice could be heard from the front of the troop.

“Kill!”

Almost unconsciously, all the fighting spirit, all the trembling, all of it found an opening to vent from and burst out!

Everyone roared with all of their strength!

“Kill!”

Every hardship guard punched out hard!

A hundred thick, almost tangible black energies left their hands.

Once these black energies left the fists of the hardship guards, they seemed to be attracted and flew towards Zuo Mo's fist.

The black energy on Zuo Mo's fist increased over ten times its size. The black energy wrapped around his wrist, wrapped around his arm, and flowed down following the angle of his arm.

With a spark of inspiration, Zuo Mo did not punch out with that shout of "kill" and forced himself to patiently wait.

Until now!

Like it was restrained with heavy chains, Zuo Mo's left hand seemed to take great effort to move as he punched towards the sky!

Time seemed to suddenly slow down. Zuo Mo's actions seemed to be in slow-motion.

The ground underneath him started to tremble. A pebble trembled and was drawn by an attracting force and breaking free of the ground. It slowly rose, and then crumbled under the pressure, turning into dust.

A handful of dust floated upwards. The scene was eerie to see.

Woof!

A deep humming came out of nowhere and slowly grew in intensity. When the soil crumbled, the sound was a roar.

Boom!

Everyone's ears were flooded by this sound.

Time seemed to instantly resume its flow and Zuo Mo's left fist punched out forcefully. The black energy was like a black dragon darting out of a deep abyss. Carrying a deep and domineering killing essence, it crashed into the King Yaksha rushing downwards!

This scene was so domineering almost everyone stopped breathing.

The black and green forces crashed together without any finesse.

Boom!

The opening clash caused an enormous explosion as though it was the climax of the entire battle. Everyone's body was numb. Shocked, they were unable to respond when the terrifying explosions shock wave reached them like a tsunami.

Those that were slow in reacting were blown away. Their faces were draped in terror.

Moments later, they struggled to stand up. But when they raised their heads, their terror froze on their faces as they stood petrified.

A black energy rained down over the battlefield. There were golden threads that glittered among the black energy like the sunlight during the darkest storm, bright and unparalleled.

And that intimidatingly loud group of green yaksha had been erased from the air and didn't leave a trace behind.

————

The rain of energy that carried dots of golden light added an aura of mystery to the sky.

Even though it was daytime, Tang Fei didn't feel any warmth. Her limbs were cold as though it was the dark of midnight during the coldest day. Her face was as white as paper, even the last bit of blood had drained away.

That scene, just that short instant, spread inside her like a powerful poison.

Four hundred green yaksha. She had great visual acuity and her eyes were almost never wrong. She could see how many green yaksha had rushed at this group of despicable people that appeared.

The four hundred yaksha that were performing the King Yaksha were completely destroyed by a troop of one hundred. Not one was left.

The entire battle amounted to just one exchange.

If other people told her about this, Tang Fei would definitely feel it was a joke, but right now, she couldn't laugh.

No one was able to laugh.

Shou Ping's limbs also felt cold. His face was raised as he looked dazedly at the sky. His expression was frozen and the other Celestial Planet Guards were even worse. They seemed to be soulless. Even an amateur could see the deep terror in their eyes.

Ceng Lian'er had a look in her eyes. She was also very shocked.

However, while the other people were shocked by the hundred man troop, she was shocked by something else.

————

The remaining three hundred green yaksha's morale completely crumbled. They scattered as though they were crazy. They were completely robbed of courage, their battalion routed. Many yaksha were flying in unstable patterns and faltered as they fled, as though they would fall over at any moment. There was only terror on their faces. They would probably never forget this battle.

No one laughed at the green yaksha. They believed that no battalion could not crumble under a situation like this.

Even those who were just watching this brief fight had also lost their courage to face this troop.

They looked at Zuo Mo's group as though they were looking at demons that had crawled out of the nine hells of the underworld.

Respect and fear!

This battle imprinted respect and fear into the bones of these people so deep that they would not forget it in this lifetime.

This youth that didn't even look twenty years old was a true demon.

Only those noble and evil mo would have such terrifying power.

The yells of the terrified green yaksha faded into the distance. The enormous battlefield became silent.

The other people were still struggling in their terror while Shu Long and the other's were savoring the attack. Shu Long was full of admiration towards Daren. That move had just been the Little Mo Kill of the Crow Fiend Mo Killing Formation. Daren had just made a small transformation to the attack and the power had increased by more than ten times!

Daren was born to be a battle general!

Zuo Mo did not know what Shu Long was thinking but he was also savoring the move just now. That pause and spark of inspiration.

He felt as though he had touched upon something.

Chapter 564 - New Discovery

General level!

Was this the power of the general level? Zuo Mo thought back to the feeling he just had, that spontaneous pause. The change was not a major one, yet the power had drastically changed. Guiding the influx of power but not immediately attacking with it required a higher level of control. If he had tried this in the past, after the Guard Camp members shouted “kill,” he would not have been able to. If the roaring killing essence was not used immediately in an attack, it would have backlashed against him.

Control, this was the power of control, the control made possible at the general level.

He finally understood somewhat why all the mo battle generals were strong people. Gathering the power of tens of thousands into one point, other than astounding coordination, it also required an astounding ability to control oneself. The influx of power would cause those with weak bodies would have exploded long ago.

Just now, he suddenly found a wondrous use of shen power

—shen power could greatly increase the stress tolerance of his body.

For normal mo, this might not be important, but for a mo battle general, this was crucial!

The manipulation of shen power was Zuo Mo's weakness all this time. Both Ceng Lian'er's and A Gui's shen power manipulation was exquisite. It was invisible and impossible to defend against, as well as being amazingly strong. But Zuo Mo could not reach their level. His manipulation of shen power was extremely crude. The gold leaf he obtained was like a book of the Heavens, hard to read and harder to understand. He only used shen power to cultivate his three powers. It was faster to cultivate shen power than the three powers individually.

A Gui could not speak, and Zuo Mo didn't even consider asking Ceng Lian'er for advice. He had decided to explore himself.

Until today!

That pause allowed him to find a completely new channeling method of shen power.

Zuo Mo did not have Eldest Shixiong's persistence and resolve, his periods of hard work were usually done to allow him to slack off in the future, but he was undoubtedly a smart person.

When he found that shen power would be channeled along with his mo physique, he instantly asked himself, could shen power be added into ling power? Could it merge with his spiritual consciousness?

When these thoughts popped up, he became excited!

Having had a good taste, Zuo Mo wanted to start experimenting immediately. However, he could only think about it at the moment. There were affairs to take care of right now.

Right, there was profitable business.

Everyone gradually recovered from the deathly silence and the terror stricken expressions faded. But when their eyes swept across Zuo Mo and the others, they couldn't help but shudder. Celestial Planet Guard silently distanced themselves from Zuo Mo's group. If it wasn't that Miss was here, they would have most likely turned and ran back to Shattered Stone Jie by now. Even Shou Ping started to miss the peaceful environment of Shattered Stone Jie.

However, he noticed that Miss was not shocked by the success of Guard Camp.

“Make some tea,” Ceng Lian'er serenely spoke.

Xian'er seemed to wake up from a dream and started to boil water. However, there was still terror on her face and her hands were trembling.

Ceng Lian'er glanced at her. She faintly said, “Let me do it.”

Purple Charcoal Stove, Black Mud Pot, a little tea table, a bamboo tea place, a sky blue little pot, white cups, and Ceng Lian'er sitting there with her layered dress was like the flower blooming in the night. Her movements were elegant, her expression serene. Her seductive face was peerless. She seemed to be at ease as though she was in her own home.

Sitting amongst the disordered battlefield, she was unusually eye-catching.

The members of Celestial Plant Guard stared at each other and then they felt slight embarrassment. Miss was so composed and calm, but they had felt the urge to flee. This was an embarrassment!

The restless Celestial Plant Guard quickly calmed down.

“This subordinate is useless!” Shou Ping admitted his crime with an ashamed expression.

Ceng Lian'er took a light sip, her long eyelashes blurry among the steam. The beautiful face became more ethereal as she said serenely, “It is good for you to see the power of the general level.”

“General level!” Shou Ping's eyes widened, his expression disbelieving. “Heavens, he's so young!”

“Starting from today, you will all obey his orders.” Ceng Lian'er's voice passed into Shou Ping's ears through the rising steam of the

tea.

“This” Shou Ping hesitated. They were Ceng Yi’s personal guard yet Miss was telling them to listen to the orders of another person. Shou Ping naturally could not help but feel resistant.

Ceng Lian’er continued to drink tea and her eyes didn’t even look up as though the person who spoke wasn’t her.

Shou Ping gathered his courage and voiced the puzzlement he felt. “Miss, this subordinate does not understand what Miss wants? This person is of unknown origins and his future vicious and hard to predict”

“You are disobeying?” Ceng Lian’er put down her teacup, her serene voice carrying a ice cold tone.

“This subordinate does not dare!” Shou Ping’s broke out in a cold sweat. He knew Miss’ temper very well. If he hesitated at all, Miss would execute him without a second word.

“Go,” Ceng Lian’er said lightly as though nothing had happened.

In the span of time that this word was said, Shou Ping’s back had been soaked. He couldn’t help but sigh inside, Miss had more presence than the Jie Master did at this age.

He didn’t dare to inquire further and retreated.

But when he almost reached Guard Camp, he suddenly recalled. What did Miss mean by “go?”

Shou Ping grimaced.

“This one is Tao Xing, many thanks, Little Brother, for your aid,” Tao Xing said politely to Zuo Mo. Just now, the power that Zuo Mo had shown shocked him. He was curious who Zuo Mo was. Such a strong youth could not be unknown.

“No need for thanks, this is just business.” Zuo Mo waved his hand with an unconcerned expression.

Tang Fei’s face turned black. It would have been fine if Zuo Mo didn’t mention it. Now that he did, she recalled this person’s past actions. It made her furious, the other had blackmailed them! Robbed them using threats! In her eyes, a person who acted so at such a crucial time had terrible conduct.

While she was angry, she suppressed it.

Even now, that astounding attack was still lingering in her mind.

“What should I call Little Brother? Where are you from?” Tao Xing smiled and asked. He was able to accept this. Even though the

price caused him some pain, but it was worth it to save his life. Also, now the other would go to Endless City with them so their safety during this journey now had a very good guarantee.

“Just call me A Zuo.” Zuo Mo was an old-timer and understood what the other was probing for. He acted as though he did not hear Tao Xing’s second question.

Tao Xing did not care and said with a smile, “A Zuo is so young and has reached general level, your future is limitless!”

On the side, Tang Fei’s expression changed. General level! This person with terrible virtues was actually general level! She then had an expression of realization. No wonder this person was so powerful.

Tang Fei’s strength was pretty good but she was still brigadier level. Among the mo, brigadier mo were usually silver battle generals, and gold battle generals had to be general level and above.

Was this person a gold battle general? Tang Fei shook her head inside. She felt her thought was too absurd. Such a young gold battle general. That would only appear in the most prestigious of mo noble families.

This person in front of her was unrivalled in greed. What mannerisms of a prestigious upbringing did he have?

“How long until we reach Dark Abyss Jie?” Zuo Mo asked Tao Xing.

Tao Xing thought and said, “About a month or so.”

“En, let’s keep hurrying along.” Zuo Mo clearly did not have any interest in talking and ended the conversation.

Tao Xing was slightly shocked. No matter where he went, he was respected and taken care off. It was the first time that he had encountered someone like Zuo Mo that didn’t even have an interest in talking.

A person without manners!

Tang Fei added another criticism of Zuo Mo to her list.

Zuo Mo did notice that there were many eyes observing the battle from the shadows. However, due to the intimidation of Zuo Mo’s terrifying attack, those hidden scouts felt fear so they only followed from a distance. They feared that if they approached, the other would crush them to bits.

Immersed in his investigations, Zuo Mo did not detect that the name of Guard Camp was had gained infamy.

This battle had caused some ruckus when news that they had killed four hundred Green Yaksha with one blow. Facing the King Yaksha and still being able to destroy the enemy with one blow, the strength of the battalion was evident. Intelligence on the leader of Guard Camp was quickly gathered by this group.

All kinds of mirages appeared.

Guard Camp's history was very mysterious. No one knew their origins, nor did they know what faction they belonged to.

But what attracted the attention of most people was Zuo Mo. So young, and in general level, this attracted everyone's attention. Many people speculated on Zuo Mo's background but there were no results.

But Zuo Mo did not know that his business deal had also tempted many of the powers hiding in the shadows.

This really was a great big piece of business!

Zuo Mo did not pay attention to Tao Xing's group. He urgently wanted to test out the ideas in his head. He wanted to go into seclusion.

However, that clearly was not realistic. He could only think as he travelled. He quickly managed to come up with some techniques.

“He is a good mo battle general.” Wei had been paying attention to Zuo Mo’s experiments. In this period of time, Zuo Mo had asked him numerous times for advice, especially in the area of battle generals. Zuo Mo was not skilled in yao fighting methods but he would rapidly understand the mo battle methods and come up with new ideas that caused Wei to frequently sigh in amazement.

“Hmph!” Pu Yao’s expression was displeased. Everyday, he was in the Ten Finger Prison, and tormented the yao battalions. The pitiful Nan Yue, Cang Ze, and others, traveled during the day, and spent all of their remaining time in the Ten Finger Prison. It was extremely hard for them.

However, Nan Yue and the others gritted their teeth and managed to endure. This journey had caused them to understand that there was nothing more important than strength in troubled times.

What depressed Pu Yao was that there was nothing happening in his search of yao while Wei’s blood summons had gotten responses.

Damn it!

At this time, Pu Yao abruptly stopped. He suddenly stood up, a light flashing through his bloody pupil as he disappeared.

A yao had responded to the summons!

Chapter 565 - Yao Summons Response

Pu Yao was in a complex mood. He walked very slowly.

Even though he entered the Ten Finger Prison like usual, there seemed to a different power that caused him to feel a rare nervousness. The past few thousands of years were like a vast river that divided the past and present. Some things had blurred in his memory, but some things were as clear as though he had saw them yesterday.

When a rebellious figure entered his vision, his nervous emotions suddenly calmed down.

Thousands of years, the glory had long dissipated and only left behind a sigh.

Already mentally prepared, Pu Yao did not feel demotivated. The light blue crystal that he seemed to recognize caused his thoughts to blur and felt slightly moved.

“You are a child of the Youqin Family?” Pu Yao’s tone was indifferent.

The other examined Pu Yao from top to bottom, his voice filled with suspicion. “You left behind the news?”

He was not tall, and there was a irregular blue crystal on his forehead. His eyes were long and narrow, a rebellious smile at the

corner of his mouth. The fiery red hair was like a burning ball of flame and gave people the feeling of disobedience.

“Yes, it was me,” Pu Yao said indifferently.

“So pretentious!” The youth snorted. “Hey, Old Person, who are you really?”

Old Person?

Pu Yao’s eyes narrowed slightly. There had never been a person that dared to call him this. He snorted and without visibly moving, countless chains of light erupted from under the youth and tied him up.

The youth’s expression changed slightly but he did not surrender. “Old Guy, there’s no accomplishment in bullying little children!”

“Are you the only one left in the Youqin family?” Pu Yao asked coldly.

“Just ye is left!” The youth widened his eyes and raised his head. “How about it? Don’t think that you can pretend in front of ye with some conning yao arts!”

Then he seemed to say to himself, “If I knew this long ago, I wouldn’t have listened to the old man. What stupid thing, what daren, is this an evil cult?”

Pu Yao did not seem to hear him. “What is your name?”

“Youqin Lie!” The youth rolled his eyes. The other person’s power was beyond his predictions.

“A good name,” Pu Yao said expressionlessly. He then asked, “Where are you living now?”

“Jail!” The youth snickered. “A Bei Ge Jail, maximum security, how about it? Very strong!”

“Why are you in jail?” Pu Yao asked.

“Ha, I killed a bastard from a prestigious family, motherf***er, I’ll kill his entire family if I see them again!” Youqin Lie said hatefully.

“You have a grudge against him?”

“No!” Youqin Lie’s head moved up, his eyes bloodshot and his hair seemed to burn. “Ha, that bastard raped my friend’s younger sister. Ye spent three months before finding a chance to kill him!”

“Three months? You are really weak!” Pu Yao smirked coldly.

“You can try!” Youqin Lie looked disdainfully at Pu Yao. “He had at least twenty guards , and has two people guarding the door even

when he is doing that thing! Please, it is a prestigious family, the yao arts they cultivate is much stronger than ye's. However, hee hee, got tricked by ye, I almost killed all of them."

Prestigious family! Pu Yao smirked inside and then asked, "You can come into the Ten Finger Prison from jail?"

"Ha, those idiots, they think putting jinzhi on ye will work, how can they know ye's skills? Getting into Ten Finger Prison is child's play!" Youqin Lie said smugly.

A thread of light flashed through Pu Yao's bloody pupil. He continued, "Has your father has spoken to you of your mission."

"That old man!" Youqin Lie's tone was unconcerned but his rebellious gaze suddenly became warmer. He shook his head. "Hey, it's not that ye wants to miss this, but ye is in jail and cannot help."

"Just escape the prison." Pu Yao said coldly.

"Escape the prison?" Youqin Lie seemed to hear the greatest joke and roared with laughter. "This is A Bei Ge Jail, maximum security prison. Haha, I've never heard of anyone escaping this prison!"

A ball of light suddenly appeared in Pu Yao's hand. He pressed his hand against Youqin Lie's forehead. The ball of light seemed to be soaked up by a sponge and entered Youqin Lie's head.

"Hey, what are you doing?" Youqin Lie's voice held a thread of

panic. But his eyes suddenly widened as he said disbelievingly, “This is”

“You have ten days to escape the prison,” Pu Yao said coldly.

“If you cannot escape, then die inside it.”

Finishing, Pu Yao disappeared.

Youqin Lie didn't seem to hear him. His mouth was wide, his face shocked and his eyes unfocused as though he was possessed.

————

E De felt his heart was drumming.

He had always lived in Little Savage Jie. After Little Savage Jie changed hands, he entered Shi Dong Daren's battalion due to Shi Dong Daren's reputation. At the start, the days had been pretty good. Even though the cultivation was high intensity, no one complained. The more hardship they experienced when training, the easier it would be to survive when they fought on the battlefield.

There was nothing to say about Shi Dong Daren's skill. [Great Day Hardship Guard] was a mo skill on a level that they used to dream about and it stirred up everyone's desire to cultivate. There was no need for supervision. Everyone furiously cultivated. On the battlefield, Shi Dong Daren had been undefeated and taken down

all of Little Savage Jie.

Everyone was filled with hope about the future.

Yet at this time, they had suddenly received Shi Dong Daren's order. They needed to go to a place called Turtle Island and receive special training.

Special training?

No one had heard this before. He had asked everyone, including the people that had followed Daren for a long time. Special Training? They all shook their heads and spoke of their ignorance on the matter. Everyone desired to go to Turtle Island because the old-timers of the battalion would tell them how great that place was. Most importantly, the king was there.

Yes, right now, everyone knew that Shi Dong Daren and Ye Ling Daren had sworn allegiance to a daren. This daren was called the one that was most likely to become king.

King, for the mo of Little Mountain Jie was a far away term.

But no one doubted Shi Dong Daren and Ye Ling Daren's judgment. Almost everyone believed that they were following a powerful person that could possibly become king!

Turtle Island was completely different than what E De had imagined. This place was filled with xiuzhe.

This mo army that entered Turtle Island for the first time almost turned and ran. Fortunately, everyone later found that Turtle Island didn't just have xiuzhe. There were mo and also yao.

Thinking back to everyone's expressions at that time, E De found it was humorous. Actually, he hadn't been much better. He quickly found that no matter if it was yaomo or xiuzhe, they could all coexist peacefully here. Even though there would be unfriendly gazes, but no one would fight you just because you were mo.

Only now did E De completely believe in the power of the king!

Before this, no one was able to do this.

As expected of the man that was most likely to become king!

E De quickly started to like this place, and liked the atmosphere. However, as they became familiar with Turtle Island, the special training that had been spoken of for so long finally arrived.

E De carefully entered the room as instructed, and seven to eight pairs of eyes instantly stared at him.

E De instantly became nervous. What made him even more nervous was that these people were all xiuzhe! Even though there was no fighting between yaomo and xiuzhe on Turtle Island, he couldn't help but feel unsafe being stared at by a group of xiuzhe.

“Don’t be nervous, a question first, your bloodline?”

“Some of Shell Crocodile mo, but just a little bit,” E De hurriedly said.

“Shell Crocodile, not a bad bloodline, colonel level. We can engrave the Shell Crocodile mo matrix for you and awaken the Shell Crocodile blood inside of you to increase your combat strength about two times. Of course, the specific effects will only be seen afterwards. Also, the choice is in your hands.” The one who was speaking was Master Sun Bao.

“Engrave a mo matrix?” E De’s face was puzzled.

“Do you know matrix awakening masters?”

“Yes.”

“A bit more high level than that.”

E De finally understood some of this. His heart couldn’t help but move. He asked, “I have awakened my mo matrix already? Can I still get a mo matrix engraved?”

“Yes.”

“I’m willing!” E De was afraid the other would withdraw the offer knowing he had already been awakened. He finally

understood what special training was.

E De's quick and decisive responsive surprised Sun Bao and the others. They had originally thought that the other would hesitate. They had even prepared a great deal of methods of persuasion but the other didn't even think before agreeing.

Xiuzhe could not understand the desire mo had towards strength.

But since E De agreed, then engraving the mo matrix naturally started.

When they learned that Zuo Mo had encountered danger and needed help, Sun Bao and Ji Wei had started to discuss how they could help Daren. Coincidentally, Zuo Mo had sent back some information on the matrix awakening methods he had learned. The duo's eyes lit up and then found that the mo matrix could help Daren.

Mo were most suited to move in the mo realms.

Therefore, they organized all the power of Golden Crow Camp and started to study the content that Zuo Mo had sent back about mo matrixes.

The present Golden Crow Camp were not the greenhorns of the past. No matter if it was individual strength or collective strength, they had multiplied many times. Adding on that everyone was unprecedentedly united, the entire plan progressed rapidly.

Pu Yao and Wei also helped out in this process.

Zuo Mo had pioneered the process of engraving mo matrixes on Dong Zi. Golden Crow Camp quickly familiarized themselves, and compared to the mo matrix Zuo Mo carved on Dong Zi, Golden Crow Camp had more skill. Their methods were more developed and effective.

But because engraving could not escape the basic requirement of bloodlines, Guard Camp was temporarily unable to undergo the process. The two masters put their focus on the other mo battalion, Grey Camp.

Lil' Miss approved their mo engraving plan on the spot.

Therefore, there was the special training order.

E De did not hesitate. He never dreamt that something good like this would land on his head. He had once heard that those matrix awakening masters could activate the blood in people's bodies to the greatest extent, but there were no outstanding matrix awakening masters in Little Savage Jie. The effects of E De's matrix awakening had been very terrible.

Otherwise, he believed that he would not just be the strength he had now.

No one had expected that a completely new era had started like

this.

In the name of war!

Chapter 566 - Bu Heng

“How was it?” Wei asked Pu Yao.

“A boy from the Youqing Family,” Pu Yao said indifferently.

“Youqing Family,” Wei nodded with a reminiscing expression. “A very powerful family but I think that their tempers are not good.”

“The boy is the same.” Pu Yao’s tone softened greatly. “However, his talent is not bad.”

“How do you plan on using him?” Wei asked.

“Let’s see if he can pass the test.” Pu Yao snorted coldly and suddenly asked, “How are your blood summons?”

“There are two responses,” Wei said with a sigh, “It has been too long. The other families probably have died out.”

“Two is enough,” Pu Yao said indifferently.

“Yes.” Wei smiled slightly. “Adding on the boy from the Youqing Family, three of them. It is time for the seed planted thousands of years ago to sprout.”

“Trash is just trash! They cannot even accomplish such a small matter!”

In the hall, Bu Heng’s cold voice echoed. He ignored the ugly expressions of the other people. He was not tall, but standing there, he was full of pride.

“That is Butcher Guard Camp! One hundred slaughtering three thousand, who can guarantee victory?” a green yaksha stood up and tried to defend.

“Trash do not need reasons,” Bu Heng said indifferently. He didn’t even look at this green yaksha as though the other was only air.

“What does A Heng think about this?” the clan leader slowly said. His face was dark.

“Regardless of Tao Xing, we must win this fight,” Bu Heng did not dodge the gaze of the clan leader and said coldly. “The world is in chaos. Our green yaksha clan is not a strong one, and cannot afford to lose. Even this Guard Camp that popped out of nowhere was easily able to defeat us, sooner or later, we will become prey for other people.”

The expressions of the other green yaksha became uglier. They knew that Bu Heng was right. There were many branches of yaksha, and the green yaksha were just one of those. The reason that people were wary of the green yaksha was not because their

blood was noble, nor because they were strong, but because of their vicious conduct. People were afraid of being targeted.

“Yes,” the clan leader slowly said, “our green yaksha clan is able to grow and prosper due to the fame of our viciousness. No one dares to offend us. If we do not defend our reputation, we will become a weak target in the eyes of other people. Then it will not be far from the day of our destruction.”

“Bu Heng, you are the strongest battle general in the clan. This time, you will go! I only have one demand, come back with their heads, except for Tao Xing!” The clan leader’s expression was filled with murderousness.

“Yes!” Bu Heng did not waste words. After bowing, he retreated from the hall.

“Bu Heng? Now this is interesting!” Ximen Ning played with the wine cup in his hand and said amusedly. His body was heavily-built, he had large eyes and thick brows. There was a necklace of bones hanging from his neck. He was half-naked and the curves of his muscles prominent, as if carved. People would not doubt that his body contained great power.

“Boss, what about us? Should we act first? Bu Heng has some skill!” one subordinate said urgently.

“Some skill? Your tone is so great!” Ximen Ning laughed. “He’s a gold battle general, the strongest battle general of the green yaksha clan. Even in all of Hundred Savage Realm, he can rank in the charts.”

“Boss, you are pushing others up and pushing yourself down. Bu Heng is a gold battle general but so are you! The green yaksha is scary to hear, but our Black Ghost Corps is not weka. In terms of rank, our Black Ghost Corps is in front of Heng Battalion,” another subordinate inserted. He was called A Qing, deeply trusted by Ximen Ning and his right and left hands.

Ximen Ning smiled and said, “You are interested?”

“Boss, none of us have mo physiques,” A Qing said.

Ximin Ning sat up. He was clearly persuaded by A Qing’s words. Because there were no mo embryos, his closest subordinates were unable to obtain a mo physique. He said, “Then we have to plan well. Bu Heng is not easy to deal with. There probably are a lot of people targeting this fat piece of meat.”

The people below had joyous expressions.

Tang Fei suppressed the displeasure she felt and walked in front of Zuo Mo. She said coldly, “Sir there are people watching us from the shadows.”

Surprise flashed through Zuo Mo's eyes. He nodded and said, "I know."

Looking at the other's unconcerned expression, for some reason, the fire burning inside Tang Fei erupted but she managed to suppress it. "Sir, I suggest that it is best for us to increase our speed and pass through this area. It is very dangerous here."

"Speed up?" Zuo Mo shook his head. "The speed right now is very good."

It wasn't that Zuo Mo did not want to speed up. For Guard Camp, speed was their weakness. If they sped up, it would drastically increase the energy expenditure of Guard Camp. If they encountered danger, they would be left in a reactive position. Zuo Mo didn't dare to use anything like the nimbus clouds in a mo jie.

Tang Fei finally could not suppress herself from mocking, "I think that Sir, you do not understand the habits of the green yaksha. They will send people to attack again and again, they will not rest. The green yahsha will send their trump card, Bu Heng!"

"Bu Heng? Who is that? Are they strong?" Zuo Mo asked interestedly. The people around him were unfamiliar with this area. Even Shou Ping was not familiar.

Tang Fei's brow creased. "Sir, do not joke! How can you not know the name of Bu Heng?"

“I don’t know.” Zuo Mo spread his hands with an innocent expression.

“You!” Tang Fei’s brows arched. At this time, a light cough came from behind her. It was Tao Xing. “Lil’ Tang, let’s talk. Mister Zuo does not understand the situation around here, so you should give an explanation.”

Tang Fei had opinions about Zuo Mo but since Tao Xing spoke, she could not do a thing. She said irritably, “Bu Heng, the most famous genius of the Green Yaksha Clan. He didn’t just enter general level when he was twenty, he is also a gold battle general.”

“General level, gold battle general!” Zuo Mo couldn’t help but pay attention. These two phrases allowed him to understand how strong this Bu Heng was.

Did he really not know? Tang Fei saw that Zuo Mo did not seem to pretend and was puzzled. She continued, “Bu Heng’s battalion is called the Heng Battalion. It is ranked ninety third of all battalions in Hundred Savage Realm and has never been defeated before!”

“A battalion ranked ninety third in Hundred Savage Realm!” Zuo Mo inhaled sharply and his expression grew grave.

A battalion that ranked ninety third in Hundred Savage Realm was a terrifying ranking. It intimidated Zuo Mo more than the terms of general level and gold battle general.

It had to be said that even Zuo Mo's Vermillion Bird Camp could not rank in the top one hundred of any realm in the Four Realms. Any battalion that could rank in the top one hundred of any realm was an extremely powerful battalion.

Were there only one hundred jie in one realm? The factions were numerous and the number of battalions were just as innumerable. A battalion that could reach the top hundred of thousands of battalions was definitely a powerful existence.

Even though his own strength had grown recently, the power of a battalion was not something that could be defeated by his individual power.

A strong feeling of danger surrounded Zuo Mo.

"What solution do you have?" Zuo Mo asked directly.

"It will be best for us to hurry to Great Peace City." Tang Fei's tone was confident. "No battalion dares to offend Great Peace City."

"Great Peace City?" Zuo Mo's expression was blank.

Tang Fei was extremely depressed. Did this strong person in front of her not know anything? He didn't even know Great Peace City?

“It is a city near us. The biggest primary town in the surrounding nine jie.”

“How do we get there?”

“In the direction we are going,” Tang Fei said. She reminded, “But we need to speed up.”

When Zuo Mo explained why they could not increase their speed, Tang Fei’s expression instantly became strange.

————

In Middle Granary Jie.

Vermillion Bird Camp that had been unstoppable all this time finally met its match. This mo battalion was exceptionally troublesome. After a few hundred rounds of contact, no one had gained the advantage.

The two faced off in the air.

Lil’ Miss examined the other battalion. After fighting for a few days, he had a direct understanding of this mo battalion.

The other’s formation was not organized but their average strength was very strong. A battalion of not even one thousand people had an average of one brigadier per twenty people. Just this

number far surpassed Vermillion Bird Camp. The other's tactics were very nimble and rapid.

This was the strongest battalion that Lil' Miss had ever encountered!

Just like Lil' Miss, the battle general of this battalion was examining Vermillion Bird Camp.

A Zha Ge closely examined this xiuzhe battalion. After he led the battalion across the chaos rift, he had been undefeated and had not expended any effort until he encountered this battalion in front of him.

In the three days of fighting, he hadn't gained any advantage.

This shocked him. The other battalion's average strength was a whole level lower but they were well-matched in combat.

A Zha Ge was clear that this meant he had actually lost.

The other's tactical skill was higher than his. This was the only way they could make up for the lack of strength in the battalion.

A Zha Ge couldn't help but feel respect. He suddenly flew in front of the formation and said loudly, "In these three days, we have had a good fight. Sir's tactics are high-leveled and A Zha Ge feels admiration! May you tell your name so A Zha Ge can remember it!"

A weak-looking youth walked to the front of the battalion.
“Turtle Island, Gongsun Cha.”

A Zha Ge’s face was filled with shock. He hadn’t expected the one that was a match for him was such a weak-looking youth!

“As expected, heroes come from those young! A Zha Ge admires you!” A Zha Ge said sincerely. He suddenly said, “A Zha Ge is willing to retreat from this jie and hopes to become friends with Little Brother Gongsun!”

The other’s words surprised Gongsun Cha. He did not immediately answer and asked, “How shall we be ‘friends’?”

Chapter 567 - The Seeds Sprouting

E De opened his eyes. The world in front of him was clearer than it had ever been. Feeling the swell of strength inside, a heart-moving feeling rose. His tears rolled down silently.

Power!

This was the flavor of power!

The desire of a mo towards power was almost ingrained in their bones. Power that he had dreamed about flowed inside his body. He had never felt such great power before but he almost immediately understood.

Brigadier level!

This was the power of brigadier level!

The light was so bright, the world was so beautiful, the future was so deserving of anticipation!

Gongsun Cha's expression was dark. He was not in a good mood. It was not a bad result to ally with A Zha Ge but for someone like Lil' Miss that was unusually stubborn about victory, this was not something to be proud of.

The expressions of his soldiers were also terrible. This was the least enjoyable battle that Vermillion Bird Camp had ever fought. The other surpassed them in strength and it had been hard for them to fight. If it hadn't been that Lil' Miss had been higher in tactical ability, they would have been defeated long ago.

This was something hard for the proud Vermillion Bird Camp to accept!

Everyone's eyes flashed with unwillingness as though fire was burning.

When had Vermillion Bird Camp been left in such a sorry state? When had Vermillion Bird Camp dragged down Lil' Miss Daren? When had Vermillion Bird Camp ever been forced to accept an alliance?

Lil' Miss coldly swept everyone and hurried all of them out without any words.

Calming down, he could finally consider the gains and losses from this alliance.

A Zha Ge did not have any ambitions about Middle Granary Jie and it was clear that A Zha Ge had many other considerations. Gongsun Cha felt that this was the reason that A Zha Ge had formed an alliance with them. A Zha Ge probably felt pressures from other quarters and could not spend too much effort on Middle Granary Jie. Adding on that he found Lil' Miss was harder

to defeat than expected, he had decided to offer an alliance.

They had taken over Middle Granary Jie but Gongsun Cha's goal was not Middle Granary Jie but the chaos rift that went from Middle Granary Jie to the mo territories.

This plan had undoubtedly failed. A Zha Ge might have said good words, but if he really sent forces into the mo jie, the other would instantly break the alliance.

It really was a headache. Lil' Miss rubbed his head.

How was Shixiong doing? Did he encounter any trouble?

Only when he encountered truly powerful factions did he learn what he lacked. The smoothness in the past had numbed everyone to reality.

He thought of the numerous brigadiers in the others ranks, and then the jindan of Vermillion Bird Camp. In comparison, the number they had was pitiful.

This was a major difference. This kind of difference was not something that could be made up in a short amount of time. How strong a sect was did not depend on how many experts it had, but what the skill of its disciples were. The former could appear due to fortuitous occurrences, but the other could only be reached through the accumulation of resources and time.

Gongsun Cha did not have any good solutions.

He knew that Vermillion Bird Camp was already working very hard on their cultivation. Their cultivation methods were not the most outstanding but it was still better than average sects. Adding on the engraved formations, they could take ling power from jingshi and were much better than normal sects. However, when they encountered a truly strong power, he found that their advantages, in front of other people's accumulations of hundreds and even thousands of years, was so weak.

A paper crane suddenly landed in Lil' Miss' palm.

Lil' Miss stilled and opened the paper crane.

His pupils contracted and a rare expression of joy appeared on his face.

Youqin Lie was racing through the night. This was already the third day since he escaped the prison. The jail had definitely discovered that he had left.

However, he was not worried.

He was full of confidence in his yao arts. Even though he had just comprehended the yao arts that Pu Yao gave him, he had spent only one day in order to comprehend them. He then spent three

days to secretly break through the jinzhi on his body and used the yao arts to make a realistic illusion before spending a day to find a path to escape.

He only spent five days before successfully breaking out of the jail.

Free, the first thing he went to do was go to Ten Finger Prison to find Pu. He was rebellious but he was a honorable person. Disregarding the last words of his father before death, it had been the yao arts that Pu Yao gave him that helped him escape.

In his view, this was a favor that saved his life.

As to whether or not the other was using him, he did not care.

Since Pu Yao had saved this life, he could give it back to Pu Yao. Youqin Lie's thinking was simple.

He did not hesitate and raced towards a yao art house according to Pu Yao's instructions.

The yao art house in front of him was very normal and there didn't seem to be anything special. Carefully following Pu Yao's directions, he found a stele in a nondescript corner of the yao art house.

He cast a strange yao art. The stele silently cracked and revealed the stone coffin underneath.

Just as Pu Yao had said, the stone coffin was empty.

Youqin Lie felt slightly hesitant but he gathered his resolve and laid down in the stone coffin as Pu Yao had instructed.

At the worst, he would give this life back to the other!

Youqin Lie watched as the stone coffin closed.

The darkness covered him.

————

Shui Yue's face was covered in dust. He looked very tired from days of travelling. There had been fighting occurring all along the trip. Some were fights between mo, and others between mo and xiuzhe. The bandits that were roaming everywhere made every place dangerous.

If it wasn't that he was very experienced from hunting mo embryos, he would have died long ago.

Did he finally reach his destination?

The dust on his face could not cover this pair of clear and determined eyes. He looked around.

This was a very remote mountain valley. It had been very long since someone had come here. The entire valley was overgrown with a kind of purple vine. Shui Yue was extremely careful. He recognized this purple vine. Its small thorns were extremely poisonous and death was almost instantaneous. No wonder he couldn't even find wild beasts here.

The thick purple vines sealed this little mountain valley into a desolate patch of death.

Excitement appeared on Shui Yue's face but he quickly calmed down. His rich hunting experience told him that maintaining calm was the only way to survive until the end.

He reached out and exposed the blood-colored dragon on his palm.

The blood dragon suddenly lit up.

The purple vines in the valley moved as though they were alive. Shui Yue looked curiously at this scene. A short while later, a small path appeared in front of him.

Shui Yue did not hesitate. He walked deep into the mountain valley along the little path. Behind him, the purple vines moved back together and the little path disappeared.

The end of the little path was a hidden cave.

Shui Yue took a deep breath and duck into the mountain cave.

Inside the mountain cave, a pool appeared in front of him. The pool was filled with an inky black liquid that gave off a special fragrance.

“Dad, Grandfather, please be with me!”

Shui Yui said to himself.

Then he jumped into the pool.

In the deep of the desert, Fei Lei looked at the ancient and simple sacrificial altar in front of him. This sacrificial altar that had been buried by the sand for thousands of years finally saw the light of day again.

The ancient patterns on the sacrificial altar seemed to have an unusual power. They seemed to be alive and were responding to something.

Fei Lei dazed out as he stared at the sacrificial altar. He had found this sacrificial altar by following the guidance of the blood summons.

“What is my fate? I’m finally going to learn!”

Fei Lei murmured to himself. His unfocused eyes suddenly became clear and he stepped onto the sacrificial altar without any hesitation.

The sacrificial altar suddenly lit up!

A deep voice murmured as though it came from far in the past. Faint shadows floated above the sacrificial altar and moved around Fei Lei.

Fei Lei’s gaze was unfocused and he lost consciousness.

The sacrificial altar rumbled as it moved.

Inside Zuo Mo’s sea of consciousness, Wei’s body suddenly shook slightly. Pu Yao also raised his head, the light of his bloody pupil brightening.

“The seeds are starting to sprout!”

An anticipation of waiting for thousands of years echoed in the sea of consciousness.

—————

Zuo Mo sat on the Sandstorm Insect Carpet and looked around curiously. Tens of thousands of little flying worms were woven into a living carpet that supported Zuo Mo as it flew forward at an astounding speed.

Shu Long and the others each rode a great big blue bird.

Tang Fei looked at Zuo Mo who was looking around like a child and felt even more puzzled. When she heard the reason that Zuo Mo could not speed up, she didn't know whether to laugh or cry. Did these people not know there were no steeds?

Out of consideration for safety, Tang Fei paid for the steeds out of her own wallet without another word. She bought a team of blue birds for every member of Guard Camp and almost bought all the blue birds in the local market.

Tang Fei also paid for the Sandstorm Insect Carpet that Zuo Mo wanted. This amount of mobei was insignificant to Endless City. However, she was very puzzled. These people seemed very powerful and didn't seem to be from a small family but how could they be so ignorant to not even know about no steeds?

But unconsciously, Tang Fei's enmity towards Zuo Mo decreased.

In comparison, the Celestial Plant Guards were much better outfitted and summoned their no steeds.

The Sandstorm Insect Carpet was very large and could hold

about ten or so people. Zuo Mo, A Gui, Ceng Lian'er, Yan'er, Tao Xing and Tang Fei were all sitting on the Sandstorm Insect Carpet. Ceng Lian'er took out her tea equipment and started to drink. Tao Xing chuckled and also bummed off cups of tea. Tang Fei sat silently at the side.

Zuo Mo studied for a while and quickly grasped the Sandstorm Insect Carpet. These tiny and nimble black insect were very strong and intelligence. They were very interesting. If Chun Yu Cheng Shidi was here, he would be very happy.

When he thought about this, Zuo Mo couldn't help but miss everyone. However, he then smiled. He looked at A Gui, reached out and rubbed A Gui's hair.

"We are approaching Great Peace City, it soon appear in front of us." Tang Fei's words interrupted Zuo Mo's actions.

Zuo Mo raised his head and looked forward. He couldn't help but show shock. An unprecedented city appeared in his view.

Chapter 568 - The Immortal Great Peace

An imposing and vast city floated on top of an endless black sea. The city seemed to be floating on the surface of the sea and stretched out as a thick yellow line across the horizon.

“Let’s head down.” Tang Fei jumped first off the Sandstorm Insect Carpet. “Flying is not allowed in this area.”

Hearing this, everyone dismounted and put away their mounts.

They couldn’t help but exclaim at the scenery in front of them. The vast and boundless sea in front of them caused them to feel minuscule.

Walking forward a few steps, Zuo Mo went closer and then said in surprise, “This black sea is not naturally formed?”

“En, it isn’t, this black sea is called the Unsullied Sea. At the time, Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming planned to build a city. The heroes of the world gathered, gifts delivered from seven mounts, and forty six mounts, generals that came from all corners of Hundred Savage Realm to personally participate in the construction. After three years of building, they formed this immortal city of great peace.” Tao Xing sighed and said, “At the time, there was only a pond by Great Peace City. There was an endless flow of people that came to visit. Every pilgrim that had travelled here would bring along a bottle of rootless water from their homeland to pour into the pond. The pond grew and after two hundred years, it formed a sea. One

hundred years ago, two mo marshals took this sea and harvested Black Dark Heavy Water from the Nine Nether Ground of the Dark Realm, forged them with secret techniques to form this Unsullied Sea.”

Zuo Mo’s mouth gaped after hearing this. What kind of person was this Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming that he had such terrifying power. Everyone behind him, including Tang Fei, had astounded expressions.

Zuo Mo had been muddled about the strength levels of mo in the past, he knew them now. Every mo marshal was a powerful warlord. Any of them was someone strong enough to alter the power structure of the mo world. Even mo generals were lords of an region.

Forty six mo generals that spent three years building a city for this person. If Tao Xing had not said it, Zuo Mo definitely would not believe it.

Tao Xing’s expression was devout as he stared at Great Peace City with a thread of pride. “My ancestral master also participated in the construction of Great Peace City.”

Zuo Mo finally could not suppress his confusion. He asked, “Who is this Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming? Why does he receive such reverence?”

Tao Xing’s expression became reverent. “Us mo’s pursuit of power is like an instinct, we will do anything. But there are also

some virtuous ones in our history who are not strong but have had unrivalled intelligence. They are able to see through everything and point straight to the mo heart. They are selfless and revered by tens of thousands of mo. Shi Zi Ming's life can be considered a legend. He was found sentient at a very young age and learned better than most people. He himself did not have any martial ability, but his understanding of the core of power is something no one can rival. He roamed all over, and everywhere he went he would give talks to pass what he knew to others without asking anything in return. Those seven mo marshals and forty six mo generals had received his guidance. He resolved countless conflicts and spread his favour all over. He is revered by an innumerable number of people."

Zuo Mo had to admire this person. Able to teach mo marshals and generals, what level was he at?

"Let's walk and talk." Tao Xing looked at everyone's expressions and said with a smile. He walked first towards the Unsullied Sea. When he stepped on to the surface of the Unsullied sea, a black porpoise came out of the water and supported Tao Xing's weight.

Zuo Mo saw this and was very interested. He copied Tao Xing. As expected, another black porpoise supported him.

"These are welcoming porpoises. Everyone, there is no need to be nervous," Tao Xing hurriedly explained.

Everyone stepped onto the surface of the sea and a crowd of porpoises instantly appeared to carry them towards Great Peace City. The black porpoises occasionally let out happy chirps.

Tang Fei said seriously to Zuo Mo. “No matter how powerful Heng Battalion is, they will not dare to attack in Great Peace City. Up until now, no battalion has dared to fight in Great Peace City. However, you need to be careful. While Great Peace City does not permit battalions to fight, they do not stop individual fights. Because of the mo cultivation teachings that Shi Zi Ming passed down in the past, Great Peace City is a combative one. Those that refuse challenges from other people will be laughed at.”

“So it is like that.” Zuo Mo nodded. Even though his battalion could not match others, he did not fear other people if it was one-on-one.

Right now, he and Tao Xing were ants on the same string. Their glory and defeat were tied together. Zuo Mo suddenly asked, “Will there be mo marshals?”

“No.” Tang Fei’s expression was strange.

Did this guy think that the mo marshals were so idle they could lazy about everyday?

She thought inside but she replied seriously, “There will be many general levels. Because the complete contents of what Shi Zi Ming had taught in the past is in the city, many mo generals that are stuck at a bottleneck would come here in search of a breakthrough.”

“That’s good, that’s good.” Zuo Mo instantly felt much safer.

Tang Fei did not say anything but she felt extremely awkward. She hadn't expected Zuo Mo to be so confident that he did not care about the other mo generals.

However, she did not have any intentions of urging Zuo Mo to be careful. She wanted Zuo Mo to trip up. Great Peace City was full of strong people. It had been decades since one faction had dominated.

The black porpoises were very fast but even so, they had swam for four whole hours before they reached the gates of Great Peace City.

Arriving at Great Peace City, the tall soaring walls cast a shadow that covered them like a black cloud. They caused people to feel their own significance. Zuo Mo raised his head. He was uncertain just how tall the walls were.

The porpoise carried Zuo Mo to a group of stone stairs. The stairs moved up towards the gates.

Zuo Mo piggy-backed A Gui and jumped up the stone stairs. The black porpoise chirped happily before diving back down into the Unsullied Sea. The group followed Zuo Mo closely and occasionally sighed, Tang Fei included. It was her first time at Great Peace City.

Stepping up past the stone stairs, the area spread out flat in front of them. A space that was thousands of zhang in radius was flat as though it was cut from one piece of stone. It was extremely smooth

and all kinds of complex and beautiful mo matrixes that were carved into the ground were like a grand carpet that spread into the distance. Such vast grandeur astounded everyone. Even Zuo Mo was speechless. Looking at such exquisitely carved mo matrixes, everyone almost didn't bear to step on them.

So grand! Extremely grand!

Sighing as they walked past the city gates, it was as though they walked into a completely different world. A wave of loud noise came at them.

Everyone's heart relaxed. The vast acquisitiveness at the gates almost suffocated them and the familiar scenes in front of them jerked them back to their original world. Their minds relaxed.

The streets were very wide, hundreds of zhang wide and could hold large-scale mo steeds. It was possible to see mo riding mo steeds of all kinds of strange appearances. The mo themselves were also had different appearances. Some had horns, others four legs, some had wings. It dazzled Zuo Mo's eyes and stirred his curiosity.

But Zuo Mo quickly felt scared. In this short amount of time, he had found at least six brigadier mo. Great Peace City was, as said, filled with experts!

Brigadier ranks were the core power of a battalion. Their skill level was directly related to the strength of the battalion. In those more remote jie, brigadiers were even able to rule a small region. Naturally, brigadier level was not something that Zuo Mo would

sigh in wonder about, but he had found six brigadiers on the street. Then how great and terrifying was the number of brigadier mo here in the city?

Up until now, he had not noticed even one general rank. But this was enough to raise his wariness.

Tao Xing seemed to noticed Zuo Mo's shock and said in low voice, "Do not be rash. The structure of powers in Great Peace City is very complex. Any mo here could have a great faction behind it. If you offend too many factions, you might not even know how you died. Even though Great Peace City does not permit assassinations, how is it possible to stop something that occurs in the shadows? Do not be rash!"

Tao Xing had lived in Great Peace City for a time when he was young and was familiar with everything. This time, he felt danger when he had been attacked by the green yaksha on the road. Now that he entered Great Peace City, he felt much safer. There were many experts in Great Peace City and also many factions that would be willing to give him face.

The only thing he worried about was Zuo Mo. He had spent a long time in Great Peace City and seen countless youth that had been left bloodied by Great Peace City. These young geniuses were filled with pride and did not know how deep the waters in Great Peace City flowed.

Right now, he was stuck together with Zuo Mo. If Zuo Mo provoked trouble, he would not be able to avoid it. He also owed Zuo Mo a lot of mo embryos.

Thinking about these mo embryos, he wanted to go back to Endless City immediately and pay back his debts as early as possible.

At this moment, a ruckus sounded.

An enormous troop walked proudly at the center of the road. They were all blue dragon rhinoceros that were three zhang in height. Their bodies were covered in thick, shield-like scales. Their steps were extremely heavy and with every step, the ground trembled.

The entire troop rumbled and caused the ground to shake.

A bald large man sat on top of the blue dragon rhinoceros at the very front. He was extremely well-built and his skin was a strange faint blue that contained black patterns. His face was in a snarl, the small eyes flashing viciously. Sitting on top of the blue dragon rhinoceros, his body sway with the steps of the blue dragon rhinoceros.

Noticing Zuo Mo's gaze, Tao Xing glanced and quickly recognized the other. "It should be the Lan Family from Luo Jie. They are one of the branches of the dragon mo and natural born fighters. The most outstanding of the younger generation is Lan Tian Long and Lan Rong. This one should be Lan Tian Long"

Zuo Mo's eyes narrowed slightly. He was very familiar with Lan Tian Long's presence. General level! This was the first general

level he encountered in Great Peace City!

This place was filled with experts. Zuo Mo's heart shuddered. The other did not disguise his presence at all. A vicious and domineering presence spread out without any restraint.

Just that presence was enough for Zuo Mo to judge the other's power was not weaker than his.

Zuo Mo's gaze swept past Lan Tian Long and he looked further away. Suddenly, his pupils shrank and his body froze.

He didn't hear one word of what Tao Xing said next.

Zuo Mo stared hard at the back of a blue dragon rhinoceros, his body as tense as steel!

Chapter 569 - Lan Tian Long

“The Lan Family is a very old family, their history can be traced back thousands of years. They rule three jie, their conduct is in the open yet strict. They are brave and skilled in battle. However, ever since five hundred years ago, their family has not produced a marshal so their power has declined, that is, until Lan Tian Long and Lan Rong appeared. They are the most accomplished members of this generation and have been labeled as geniuses who are likely to enter marshal level, especially Lan Tian Long. He is extremely strong and was able to establish himself securely in Great Peace City. The presence of the Lan Family has grown as well”

Tao Xing talked about it as though it was a family affair. He had once lived in Great Peace City and was familiar with this ancient family.

On a roll, Tao Xing did not notice Zuo Mo had put down A Gui.

“The prestigious families are all families where marshals have appeared. Those that do not have marshals, even if they are strong now, cannot withstand the power of history. In the eyes of others, they are just the nouveau riche, they do not have strong foundations, and cannot be truly called large clans. In Great Peace City, families that do not have fundamentals are looked down on”

Tao Xing suddenly stopped. His eyes widened, his face full of terror.

Zuo Mo lightly leapt forward under his terrified gaze and landed on the center of the street, blocking the advance of the blue dragon rhinoceros troop.

“En!” Lan Tian Long’s eyes narrowed, and a vicious light flashed. He lightly tapped the blue dragon rhinoceros with his foot and the blue dragon rhinoceros stopped.

The entire rhinoceros troop stopped at the same time. The Lan Family mo on the backs of the rhinoceroses looked viciously at Zuo Mo that was blocking their path.

The noisy street quickly quieted. Everyone looked in surprise at Zuo Mo.

Lan Tian Long had been in Great Peace City for more than three years. In these three years, he had had hundreds of large and small battles but rarely lost. The Lan Family had regained prestige in the eyes of the public due to this.

In Great Peace City, Lan Tian Long was famous. When everyone noticed that someone had dared to stop Lan Tian Long’s rhinoceros troop, they were very shocked.

In a blink, the enormous street emptied.

Shu Long and the others did not move. They did not know what Daren was doing but they were very calm. They were blindly confident in Daren.

Tao Xing opened his mouth, his face shocked. Zuo Mo's sudden action caused his mind to blank. Tang Fei, Shou Ping and the others changed expression and were terrified.

In the now silent and empty street, an enormous rhinoceros troop and a lone figure faced off.

“Ha, it's been awhile since I came to Great Peace City, it seems that everyone doesn't recognize Old Long anymore.” Lan Tian Long smiled darkly. His sharp teeth flashed with frightening light under the sunlight. He raised his head and looked down at Zuo Mo. “Boy, you don't want to live?”

“I'm asking for a person from you.” Zuo Mo's tone was deep. Those familiar with him would be able to detect the fierce emotions suppressed under his deep voice. The emotions were like the raging flows under the thin layer of ice that rampaged soundlessly!

“Asking for a person?” Lan Tian Long's tone was surprised. He narrowed his eyes, “Which person?”

“The seventh blue dragon rhinoceros, in the cage, the one in the blue robe,” Zuo Mo said coldly.

“Oh?” Lan Tian Long glanced over towards the seventh blue dragon rhinoceros. He quickly found the target. A youth inside the cage with unfocused eyes. The youth looked with a puzzled and slightly shocked gaze at Zuo Mo.

If Wei Sheng was here, he would definitely recognize the youth in the cage

– Luo Li!

Zuo Mo's second shixiong, Luo Li!

Lan Tian Long chuckled, "This little xiuzhe! He's pretty handsome, you want him? Haha."

Crack crack crack, Zuo Mo's hanging fist gave off a string of crackling noises.

His life on Wu Kong Mountain flashed in front of his eyes. Even though he had separated from Wu Kong Sword Sect due to many reasons, he had deep feelings towards Wu Kong Sword Sect. However, he usually hid these attachments deep inside. Now that he saw Luo Li Shixiong in the cage, his mind exploded.

Something happened to Wu Kong Sword Sect! Something had definitely happened to Wu Kong Sword Sect!

Zuo Mo's blood seemed to burn. Fierce murderousness was like a fierce beast freed from its cage that charged at his mind. Every part of his body was trembling, uncontrollably trembling!

How was it possible

How could it be possible!

His eyes filled with blood.

However, Zuo Mo was more accomplished than in the past. He had seen more and experienced more. He took a deep breath and suppressed the turmoil inside. He suddenly raised his head, his bloodshot eyes staring at the other. He slowly spoke, his voice deep and hoarse, emphasizing each word.

“According to the rules of Great Peace City, I challenge you.”

Boom, everyone in the surroundings exploded in noise. The rules of challenge in Great Peace City was if both sides accepted the challenge, then it was alright to kill one's opponent and not get punished. In other words, the challenge must gamble with their own life.

Lan Tian Long's gaze suddenly became extremely vicious. His murderousness spread without restraint. All sounds of discussion suddenly choked off as though someone gripped their necks. The spectators were both scared and excited. Lan Tian Long's almost tangible murderousness rushed at Zuo Mo like furious waves smashing against the shore. Even from far away, a person would be affected.

Tang Fei and Shou Ping's complexions were ashen and bloodless. In front of such raging murderousness, the strength of a brigadier was as minuscule as an ant. Their hearts instantly sank. They

could not understand why Zuo Mo would provoke such a scary opponent!

Was he insane?

Tao Xing recovered from his shock at this time, and his face was as white as paper. He felt great regret. Why had he told this person the rules of challenge in Great Peace City just now? He really was an idiot!

Lan Tian Long had not expected the matter would become like this. He was not afraid of battle. How could anyone that came to Great Peace City be afraid of a challenge? However, it depended on what it was for. He felt it was absurd to accept a challenge for a worthless slave.

What made him feel a thread of uncertainty was he detected a twinge of danger.

The youth in front of him looked extremely average but for some reason, he had a premonition of danger like he was being targeted by a poisonous snake.

He had been through hundreds of battles and was extremely experienced. He believed in his intuition. He knew that this intuition was an instinct hardened through battle.

Lan Tian Long narrowed his eyes.

The murderousness grew. Faint blue mist erupted from his body like steam. In this moment, Lan Tian Long's aura caused even the sun in the sky to lose color.

Suddenly, Lan Tian Long gave a loud roar of laughter and his murderousness disappeared without a trace.

“Such heroic mannerism! Good man! I, Lan Tian Long, like meeting good men like Brother!” Speaking, he waved his hand back, “Come, get that slave!”

A subordinate quickly carried Luo Li over.

“Since Brother likes him, I'll give him to you!” There wasn't any brutality on Lan Tian Long's face, only a face full of sunshine and undisguised admiration. There wasn't any trace of insincerity.

Zuo Mo was surprised. Lan Tian Long seemed to have switched to a completely different personality. His face changed at a fantastical speed. However, Zuo Mo also felt some admiration. Normal people could not change like Lan Tian Long did.

The rumors that he was a brutal killer were not true. This person had a scheming mind and was not a simple-minded person.

“Many thanks, Brother Lan!” Zuo Mo was not a stupid person. Just now, he was fighting with his back to a cliff. He did not have any certainty he would win.

Lan Tian Long smiled widely. “Just a small matter, nothing to speak about. To be able to meet a hero like Brother, it is alright to give them all to you!” Finishing, he took down a metal token from his waist and threw it to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo caught it.

“Brother, if you are free, come to my rundown compound to drink. There’s nothing else, but there will be enough liquor to make sure Brother gets drunk!” Among the loud laughter, the rhinoceros troop rumbled as it moved. The voice came from far away and was extremely carefree.

At this time, Zuo Mo really did admire this guy that appeared rough yet had a deep mind. From beginning to end, he did not ask Zuo Mo’s name and his conduct was free.

“I’ll definitely visit!” Zuo Mo said in a loud voice.

The street resumed its normal activity. Many people showed admiration. Lan Tian Long’s move didn’t damage his reputation but allowed people to feel his charisma.

As to Zuo Mo’s group, they did not attract too much attention from the people around them, but a lot of attention from those in the shadows.

Zuo Mo helped Luo Li up and turned to the others saying in a deep voice, “Find a quiet place.”

Tao Xing and Tang Fei seemed to wake up from a daydream. Releasing a breath, they hurriedly led people to find a place to rest. Right now, they were startled birds. Zuo Mo had ran up and challenged someone without a second word. If this occurred a few more times, they felt they would be frightened to death.

Luo LI suddenly spoke. His voice was dry and hoarse. “Who are you? Why did you save me?”

He had been surprised just now. The other had pointed right at him so the other must know him. But when he carefully inspected Zuo Mo’s appearance, he was sure that he had never seen this person before. What was even more unbelievable was that he felt something familiar about this person. But no matter how hard he tried to think, he could not remember who the familiarity reminded him of.

Zuo Mo whispered in a low voice by his ear, “Second Shixiong, I’m Zuo Mo.”

Luo Li’s body shook, his expression freezing. A moment later, tears poured down.

He finally understood why he felt the other was familiar.

“Do not say anything. We’ll find a quiet place and speak later.” Zuo Mo’s calm voice caused Luo Li to calm down. In this moment, he was very emotional. The little greedy shidi had grown to such a state!

To Tao Xing who had stayed in Great Peace City before, finding a big compound was naturally easy. As the city master of Endless City, Tao Xing was extremely rich. Without even a change in expression, he rented out a big estate. This estate was so large that it was more than enough to hold everyone.

Guard Camp, Celestial Planet Guard, and Tang Fei's battalion instantly started to set up defenses.

Zuo Mo hurried everyone other than Luo Li and A Gui out. There were too many mysteries that needed to be answered.

What had happened?

Chapter 570 - Causes And Consequences

Luo Li's voice was deep as he recollected the events, as though he was sleep-talking.

“The chaos rift appeared and the mo battalions invaded. They came so suddenly we did not have the time to flee. Bright Wave Jie started to gather all the major sects. The ones in charge were some people from Kun Lun and they were very strong. The sect leader and the shishu were all called over and put on the front line!”

Zuo Mo punched the floor and shattered stone flew. His fist became deeply embedded in the flooring. His features were twisted and vicious. Even though everyone had separated, but the shishu had all been good to him and, in their own way, taken care of him. Zuo Mo had command battalions and he knew that the front line was the most dangerous place. It was also where the fighting was most intense. Not many could survive.

There were only two types of people that would be sent to the front lines, one was elite troops, the other was cannon fodder.

“Ever since Eldest Shixiong disappeared from the sword cave, many groups of people from Kun Lun came to ask the sect leader about the sword cave. One time, the argument became intense and Xin Shishu almost drew his sword. After that, our sect's position started to decline in Bright Wave Jie. Other sects started to antagonize us. The disciples started to leave.”

Luo Li's gaze was empty and unfocused.

“The sect leader felt very depressed but the other shishu were alright. The disciples from before the expansion did not leave since days would be the same no matter where they spent it. Later on when the nearby sects came to antagonize us, Xin Shishu beat them away. No one cared too much. Was there a place that did not have conflict? It was at this time when the chaos rifts opened and the mo battalion came.”

“Kun Lun came and wanted the shishu to go to the front lines. The sect leader did not agree and said that Fourth Shigu was not strong offensively and wanted her to remain behind. Kun Lun did not agree. They surrounded the sect. Fourth Shigu eventually agreed but requested for the disciples to be kept in the rear. Kun Lun agreed.”

Luo Li's expression suddenly became twisted.

“But who knew when the sect leader and others left, Kun Lun's people put jinzhi on us. They said it was to prevent us from betraying them. On the road, we were attacked by a troop of mo. The people from Kun Lun forced us to go to delay the mo, otherwise, they would activate the jinzhi killing us. We could only listen and go, and then the Kun Lun people turned and ran abandoning us. Some of us died and some were wounded, the rest were captured. As a slave, I passed through the hands of several people before this mo.”

“Kun Lun!” Zuo Mo squeezed out the two words from his teeth, his eyes bloodshot. He had never thought that Kun Lun would do something this low.

“After Eldest Shixiong disappeared, Sect Leader was very distraught and his hair turned white overnight. From then on, the sect leader started to talk about many things with me. Second Shixiong, Lin Qian always suspected that you were yaomo and mentioned something about Stars in Daytime. The sect leader had heard some rumors and deliberately did not search and have you come back. Sect Leader said, he had picked you up and brought you back, if you really are then this was better than handing you over to Kun Lun”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo's tears could not be suppressed anymore and flowed down his cheek. The thread of resentment that had been inside disappeared. Indescribable sorrow and regret welled up.

Luo Li was sobbing.

A moment later, Zuo Mo stopped his sorrow. He raised his head and asked, “What about the other shidi and shimei?”

“I only know that Xiao Guo and Li Shimei are still alive. They were also captured. Shidi, you have to rescue them!” Luo Li grabbed onto Zuo Mo, his grey eyes filled with begging.

Zuo Mo's heart hurt and he unhesitatingly nodded. He said resolutely, “I will definitely rescue them!”

He then asked, “Second Shixiong, do you know who bought them?”

Luo Li lowered his head and thought for a moment before saying, “It is a female mo, she seems to be called Princess Xia.”

“Princess Xia” Zuo Mo repeated a few times fearing he would forget.

It seemed he had to go investigate who this Princess Xia was.

Zuo Mo secretly cast a resting spell on Luo Li, causing Luo Li felt his eyelids become heavy and quickly slipped into sleep. Zuo Mo inspected the wounds inside Luo Li’s body and his expression became terrible.

The channels inside Luo Li’s body were shattered. It would be extremely difficult to heal such severe wounds.

“Kun Lun!”

Zuo Mo had never hated a sect so much before, never!

Ximen Ning drank his wine and listened to the report from his subordinate.

“Boss, you have great foresight, Guard Camp really entered the Great Peace City!” The subordinate was admiring in his tone.

“Haa haa, there aren’t enough people in Guard Camp. If they had some more people, they might fight Bu Heng. This group is not friendly, and their origins definitely are not simple,” Ximen Ning said with a slight smile.

“A strong dragon cannot suppress the local snake. Even if they are strong, they can only eat dust,” A Qing’s voice came.

“Haha, A Qing is right. Their origins will quickly be found. So many mo embryos, we probably are not the only ones interested. That will be fun to see when the time comes,” Ximen Ning said with a smile.

“Only when the water is cloudy can we take advantage to steal fish,” A Qing inserted at the perfect time.

Ximen Ning laughed.

“When Guard Camp entered the city, they had a standoff with Lan Tian Long.” The subordinate hurriedly narrated the information he had obtained.

“Lan Tian Long!” Ximen Ning’s brow creased.

Ximen Ning was very familiar with Lan Tian Long and naturally knew of the other’s fiery temper. Lan Tian Long had not fought? This didn’t seem like Lan Tian Long’s usual style.

The leader of Guard Camp definitely had some special trait. Otherwise, it was not possible to explain Lan Tian Long's course of action.

Was it strength? Or background?

Ximen Ning pondered. It would be exaggerated to say that there was an individual's strength that Lan Tian Long would be wary of. He had researched. The leader of Guard Camp was a youth not yet twenty. Could such a young youth be more powerful than Lan Tian Long?

He didn't believe it!

So the only way would be background! Lan Tian Long recognized the background of this person so he purposefully retreated. Ximen Ning felt this was the most plausible. He had fought against Lan Tian Long before and knew while this person had a fiery temper, he wasn't simple-minded as people assumed.

This speculation was supported by many details. For example, the strong Guard Camp was likely be the personal guard the young man's family had sent to protect him.

Background ... what was his background?

At this time, another subordinate came in to report.

“Boss, Bu Heng has entered the city!”

Ximen Ning came out of his thoughts and laughed. “It has been very long since Great Peace City been so busy!”

“Is there some way to heal him?” Zuo Mo looked at Pu Yao and Wei.

Pu Yao was silent, Wei did not make a sound.

Zuo Mo instantly felt disappointed. When he agreed to rescue Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng Shijie, he had seen the desire to die in Luo Li Shixiong’s eyes. Zuo Mo was clear. Under these circumstances, many people would lose the will to life. Their hearts were dead.

Zuo Mo didn’t know how to persuade Luo Li. He could only use the resting spell to temporarily force the other to rest.

Suddenly, Pu Yao spoke. “Maybe there is a solution. However, it is almost the same as death.”

“What solution?” Zuo Mo was like a person drowning that grabbed the life-saving reed and hurriedly asked.

Pu Yao slowly spoke, “On the battlefield in the past, I had found an incomplete spell from a xiuzhe. Read it and you will know.”

Finished speaking, he threw a ball of light at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo took the ball. After he read it, he finally understood what Pu Yao meant that it was not much different than death.

This was a spell called [Life-Death Lock] that was incomplete. It was very extreme. Saying it was a spell was not accurate. In Zuo Mo's view, this was just a daring theory. The spell was not complex, and was actually very simple.

Enter the path through death!

In this speculative chapter, it assumed that a person's death was a process, like passing through layers of biscuits, one layer after the next. Only when one broke through the last layer was one truly dead.

The person who wrote this assumed that while the upper layers were also death, it was only a fake death. A state of fake death could easily stimulate the instincts of a person. If one was able to slow down the speed at which they passed through these upper layers of death, and stimulate their potential so that their potential counterbalanced death. This required that the rate their potential increased surpassed the speed they passed through the layers of death, doing so they could totter on the edge of life and death, and completely express a person's complete potential.

After reading this, Zuo Mo had to admire the person who wrote this.

Such a strange idea. It looked so absurd, but the author was able to explain what it meant. This person had also spent great effort to ponder how to stimulate one's potential in the state of death to twist life and death.

It was just as Pu Yao had said. This was not any different than death. The entire chapter was speculative. In the end, even the author did not believe this spell would work and stopped writing.

Consequently, this spell was incomplete.

Zuo Mo also hesitated. From every angle, [Life-Death Lock] was so absurd, but the phrases in the chapter swirled in his mind. They seemed to hold a strange power. Many of the ideas gave him great inspiration.

He had a faint feeling that this [Life-Death Lock] was a wondrous spell.

At this time, Luo Li slowly woke up.

He opened his eyes. When he saw Zuo Mo, he forced a smile. His eyes were grey and empty, lifeless.

Xiuzhe were powerful, but if their heart was dead, their vitality would flow away faster than normal people. Because their heart was the base of all their power.

When Zuo Mo saw Luo Li's eyes, he knew it was not good.

“Shixiong wants to die?” Zuo Mo suddenly said.

Luo Li was surprised but he nodded and said honestly, “I am nothing now, my channels are all broken, my dantian destroyed. Even the best ling medicine cannot heal me. I'm satisfied now that I am able to see Shidi. I do not have anything left to connect me to this world. With this broken body, I will drag down Shidi. I will also feel life is boring and painful. Rather than suffering through that, death is an easy matter.”

Zuo Mo stared hard at Luo Li's eyes. He saw Luo Li's expression was the same from beginning to end and knew the other was resolved.

“Shixiong, do you not want revenge against Kun Lun? Do you not want to rescue Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng Shijie?” Zuo Mo asked.

“Shidi, do not” Luo Li grimaced.

“I have a spell here. It is dangerous, but it may be your only hope.” At this time, Zuo Mo could only hope for the best and took out a jade scroll, [Life-Death Lock].

Luo Li assumed that Zuo Mo was trying to persuade him but did not bear to reject his goodwill so he took it.

After sweeping a glance, he froze!

Chapter 571 - Mo Skill Steles

“Princess Xia?” Tao Xing was slightly shocked. “Why have you asked about Princess Xia?”

“Do you know her?” Zuo Mo instantly became alert.

“No.” Tao Xing shook his head and said in self-mockery. “I might have some skill in mo embryos, but in the eyes of those truly great personages, I’m just someone that raises mo embryos. To them I’m not any different than a person who raises insects.”

Zuo Mo was instantly disappointed but he still hurried to give comfort. “You are still very powerful.”

At the side, Tang Fei’s expression became strange. It was the first time she had heard someone comfort another person like this. Didn’t he know that City Master was just being humble?

Tao Xing laughed and then warned, “Do not provoke Princess Xia. You were very rash today in provoking Lan Tian Long. However, Princess Xia’s background is deeper than Lan Tian Long’s. Look at how arrogant Lan Tian Long was at the city gates today. If Princess Xia was present, he would be docile.”

“Who is Princess Xia?” Zuo Mo was confused, his face puzzled.

“Princess Xia comes from the ancient Anwei family and is much older than the Lan Family. The Anwei Family is one of the oldest

families in Hundred Savage Realm. They have the most noble bloodline called the Anwei Bloodline. In history, they have produced sixteen marshal levels. You can imagine the glory of this family.”

Tang Fei had a desirous expression. Sixteen marshals, such a powerful existence.

Tao Xing could not stop himself from warning again. “You have to be careful and not offend Princess Xia. The Anwei Family is an enormous entity that is truly at the top of the food chain. Right now, the leader of Anwei Family, Anwei Ming, is a mo marshal. They rule over seventy four mo jie!”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo was also frightened. One mo marshal ruling seventy four mo jie. A powerful family like this was really scary.

However, when he thought of Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng, Zuo Mo threw all the fear to the back of his head.

“Where is Princess Xia now?” Zuo Mo asked.

“I do not know this.” Tao Xing spread his hands. He felt more and more admiration towards Zuo Mo. In his view, even though the other was too direct in his conduct, he was a very good young person.

“Anwei Family” Zuo Mo murmured.

In his consciousness, Pu Yao's voice suddenly piped up. "I have a solution."

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised and looked suspiciously at Pu Yao. "What are you scheming now?"

Pu Yao said with a snicker. "The Anwei Family are old opponents! Hmph hmph, I had wanted to settle the debts from the past. I had not expected them to come to us!"

Murderousness brimmed in the bloody pupil.

Wei also came out and said with a smile. "A Zuo, in the past, we and Anwei Family had a little conflict. Oh, you will help us, right?"

Zuo Mo instantly felt his head swell up. "Can you not fool around at a time like this?"

"Don't you want to save Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng?" Pu Yao snorted coldly. "We know everything about Anwei Family' origins. We will help you find and save Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng, in return you will settle our debts with the Anwei Family."

Zuo Mo turned towards Wei.

Wei nodded crisply. "He is speaking the truth."

Pu Yao and Wei both nodded. This matter seemed reliable.

Zuo Mo nodded. “Alright! You help me, I’ll help you!”

However, he was gaping inside. It seemed this Anwei Family had seriously offended these two. More than a thousand years had passed, but they did not forget their grudge. Just how serious had this conflict been?

However, as long as he could rescue Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng, Zuo Mo let the two do what they wanted.

“Oh, Lan Tian Long really did not act?” Bu Heng asked coldly.

“Yes! This one learned this. Lan Tian Long remained peaceful, he even gave the slave to the leader of Guard Camp as well as a token, and he invited the other to his compound to drink,” the subordinate replied in great detail.

“It seems that this person is not so simple,” Bu Heng murmured to himself and sank into deep thought.

Originally, he had planned to challenge Zuo Mo when he entered Great Peace City and kill the other in the open to wash away the embarrassment on his clan. However, when he heard this news, he immediately realized that the situation was much more complex than he imagined.

Bu Heng was strong but he was more skilled as a battle general. His individual strength was not comparable to Lan Tian Long.

Lan Tian Long had a fiery temper but he was someone with brains. If he did not act in public, then there was something to ponder here.

If it was due to individual power, then it was even more unwise for Bu Heng to challenge the other. If it was any other reason that caused Lan Tian Long's actions, then Bu Heng had to be even more careful.

If the other had a background that even Lan Tian Long had to worry about. Just the slightest carelessness could bring down a calamity that would destroy his clan.

As a gold battle general, Bu Heng was able to see the important connections.

The embarrassment was related to the morale of the soldiers, but offending those ancient families would bring extinction to his clan!

Not even a scrap would remain!

Familiar with history, Bu Heng knew that countless families had perished like that.

Zuo Mo walked along the street, Shu Long and the others a few steps behind him.

“Anwei Family will have a faction established in Great Peace City.” Pu Yao’s tone was very certain. “That old man was right just now. The Anwei Family is full of talents and has produced many mo marshals. However, Anwei Family has never produced a king! Haa, Anwei Family has always had ambitions and this is the greatest thorn in their side. The desire of each generation of the Anwei Family has towards acquiring mo skills is something other families cannot compare too. They desire too much to have a breakthrough! The Mo Skills Steles placed in Great Peace City contain mo arts that can touch the power of the king level. How could they pass up on that?”

The more Zuo Mo heard, the more he felt that Pu Yao had a special understanding of the Anwei Family.

“This Shi Zi Ming is definitely a influential person to be able to teach mo marshals.” Pu Yao who usually had his eyes high up expressed rare respect towards Shi Zi Ming. But then he smirked coldly. “However, it is not so easy to understand what people like him think. Shi Zi Ming’s Mo Skill Steles are real, but it is hard to say if visitors can read and understand their contents. When techniques and skills reach that level, it is very hard to describe them using language.”

“And then?” Zuo Mo couldn’t help but ask.

“The people of Anwei Family are very smart. They cannot understand the steles but there will eventually be someone who can. I suspect that the construction of this Great Peace City was supported by the Anwei Family from the shadows. If this Great Peace City was built, the Mo Skills Steles were put up, many geniuses will gather and eventually someone would understand them. Ha, what is left to do is very simple. Either they pull the person into their Anwei Family, giving them enough mobei and beauties. If the person doesn't obey, hee hee” Pu Yao laughed coldly.

Zuo Mo's hairs stood up upon hearing this. “Aren't there other people that see this?”

“Probably.” Wei continued, “That Shi Zi Ming definitely knew this but he sees clearer than the Anwei Family. He only wants his succession to continue and he definitely did not believe that the Anwei Family would gain complete control because the other families are not stupid. Why have so many factions established themselves in Great Peace City? Because experts and geniuses will be produced here. Which family doesn't need experts and geniuses? Why were there so many mo generals and marshals that helped out with the construction. Were they really repaying Shi Zi Ming out of gratefulness? No, it is because everyone saw the benefits. But this is where Shi Zi Ming was good. I have to admire how he used the powers!”

Hearing this, Wei sighed.

Zuo Mo finally understood. However, after the two exposed this, much of his admiration and reverence of Great Peace City

dissipated. But he felt even more interested in Shi Zi Ming.

“We can use this to our advantage.” Pu Yao snorted coldly and said, “If you go to the Mo Skills Steles and pretend to be intoxicated for a few days and act as though you have comprehended them, you will naturally attract the attention of all the factions, including the Anwei Family. Then you can throw out the information that you do not have any background. At that time, these factions will come to recruit you. You can make a few challenges to prove your strength. The Anwei Family definitely will not be able to sit still. At that time, they will give you whatever you want, not just Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng!”

“Pu, you are so cunning!” Zuo Mo sighed. He then asked, “But this does not guarantee that Princess Xia would come. What if they send someone else?”

“They won’t,” Wei came to explain. “Princess Xia of the Anwei Family is not a name, but a special identity. There will only be one princess in each generation. They hold many duties such as recruiting talents. Their arrival represents the Anwei Family. If you display enough skill, they will definitely come!”

“Do not say it so pleasantly. They are just a socialite,.” Pu Yao inserted coldly.

Zuo Mo gaped on hearing this.

“Well, that’s true,” Wei said and nodded. “Before each generation of princess debuts in society, the family will try to

increase her reputation. Making her the object of everyone's attention and surrounding her with geniuses. After a decade of storms, they will choose a powerful family and marry her off. This is a marriage alliance."

Zuo Mo listened to this as though they were matters from a different world. He didn't know what to say.

"Daren, we are at the Mo Skill Steles."

Shu Long's voice interrupted Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo refocused and was instantly attracted by the spectacular scene in front of him.

There were rows of tall sword-like steles carved with clear characters. Even after three hundred years of wind and rain, they were pristine and whole as though they were newly carved. The stone steles formed a dense forest. Every stone stele was carved with characters.

These were the famous Great Peace Mo Skill Steles.

There were many mo studying below each mo skill stele. Some were copying down content. The mo that came here were at least colonel level. Brigadiers could be seen everywhere, and Zuo Mo saw several generals.

Gazing at such a spectacular stele forest, for some unknown

reason, Zuo Mo felt admiration for Shi Zi Ming.

A person that did not have any mo skill to cultivate dared to carve his knowledge of power onto stone steles for the world to read, examine and judge.

The stone steles that pointed up into the sky suddenly became much taller in Zuo Mo's eyes.

The mannerisms of the great ones in the past were so!

Chapter 572 - Confidence And Going All Out

“He wanted a servant? The servant is a xiuzhe?” Bie Han asked indifferently.

“Yes, Your Highness,” Fu Feng said respectfully. “Lan Tian Long did not accept the challenge to fight and gave the slave to him.”

There wasn't any warmth in Bie Han's cold eyes. The golden jinzhi which had been etched all over his body had been completely erased. What replaced them was a snowy-white mo matrix. On the black skin, the exquisite white mo matrix carried an almost unusual seductive beauty.

“Could this person also be a xiuzhe?” Bie Han suddenly asked.

Fu Feng stilled and reflexively shook his head. “Xiuzhe? Probably not. Lan Tian Long would have recognized that.”

“Like me, can Lan Tian Long recognize this?” Bie Han shook his head.

“Your Highness, you” Fu Feng hurriedly said.

Bie Han said indifferently, “In the future, do not call me Your Highness.”

Bie Han's words called Fu Feng to pale. He hurriedly said, “No!

No! Your Highness, your identity is noble”

Bie Han raised a hand and stopped Fu Feng from speaking. His expression was cold. “Father’s properties will end up being Elder Brother’s. I have spent so many years on the outside and have not seen Father from a very young age. The clan does not like me, and that is normal. I am already satisfied that we have managed to remove the jinzhi from my body.”

Thinking about the cold treatment that Bie Han had received in this period of time, Fu Feng was sorrowful. “Your Highness no matter what identity Your Highness has, in Fu Feng’s heart, you are still the Little Highness that was in Mistress’ arms!”

Bie Han’s gaze softened slightly.

A moment later, he suddenly asked, “Fu Feng, you followed my mother for many years, how old am I now?”

“Your Highness is twenty five this year!” Fu Feng had an expression of remembrance. “If Mistress is in heaven and learned that Your Highness has returned home, she would definitely be happy.”

“Twenty five.” Bie Han murmured. A dazed expression flashed by and his face became cold and indifferent again. “Go tell my brother if he can erase the jinzhi on Sin Battalion, I will make a request to the clan to set up my own household.”

“Your Highness, no!” Fu Feng paled dramatically. Setting up one’s own household meant leaving the clan. One didn’t just lose their place in succession, they would not receive any more help from the family. In the Mo territories, this was a very severe punishment.

At this time, his tears flowed. When he thought of the mistress that had passed away long ago, sorrow rose.

“Go.” Bie Han’s expression was indifferent and he did not speak further.

Looking at Bie Han’s cold and stubborn figure, in a flash, it merged with the beautiful figure who had passed. Fu Feng stopped his tears and said firmly, “Yes!”

The contents of the Mo Skill Steles were arranged based on difficulty of their contents, from shallow to deep. There were more people huddled around the steles in the outer regions, and fewer as one went deeper.

Zuo Mo started to pretend to read starting from the first stone stele.

How was he to act as though he was immersed? Uh, how could he appear immersed?

Zuo Mo had been worried but after his first glance, he was unconsciously attracted by the content on the mo skill stele.

The content on this stone stele was very simple and was a rough explanation, but for Zuo Mo who had never received a systematic training in mo skills cultivation, it filled in his insufficiencies causing many areas that he was lacking in to instantly become clear.

Zuo Mo's starting point was very high. He had cultivated the Great Day mo physique very early on. It was enough to show that his talent was outstanding. But he was very unfamiliar with these basic cultivation practices. When he had been in Shattered Stone Town, he had benefited greatly from Uncle An Ya's teachings. But Uncle An Ya's skill was limited, and what he cultivated was very crude.

But this Shi Zi Ming was really a great genius. There were hundreds of basic cultivation methods he described, and every basic method would have a corresponding description that was worthy of deep thought.

Zuo Mo read stele by stele like he was possessed.

Shu Long stood guard warily at his side.

What no one had expected was that just like how Zuo Mo was enchanted, A Wen was also enchanted.

“I know.” Jiang Zhe’s tone was calm as though he already knew this information.

The shock and fury that was expected did not appear. The subordinate that was reporting was slightly surprised but he released a breath inside. Jiang Zhe Daren was harmonious usually but when he was angry, he was extremely scary. Everyone was afraid of him.

Feng Yu Daren had suddenly left taking one thousand combat xiu with her. Rationally, Jiang Zhe should not tolerate this kind of conduct.

These thoughts flashed through the mind of this xiuzhe before disappearing. Feng Yue Daren was beloved by them. No one wanted Feng Yue Daren to be punished because of this.

After the subordinate left, Jiang Zhe sighed, worry flashing through his eyes.

A moment later, he suddenly raised his head and shouted, “Someone come!”

A guard hurried in. “Daren!”

“Have Gao Xuan come see me!” Jiang Zhe’s expression was calm.

A tall well-built battle general quickly came in and bowed.
“Daren!”

“Take five hundred people from the Jiangzi Battalion and go support Feng Yu.”

Gao Xuan was slightly surprised at Jiang Zhe’s order. His expression was filled with surprise. Everyone knew that Feng Yue Daren had secretly taken the battalion to take revenge for Ding Zhen Shishu. Originally, everyone thought that Feng Yue Daren would not be able to escape punishment this time. Daren looked easy-going usually, but his adherence to military law was strict and no one dared to break them.

It seemed that Daren also wanted revenge for Ding Zhen Shishu!

Gao Xuan couldn’t help but feel excited. He was not eye-catching in the temple and his strength was average, but Ding Zhen Shishu had also once taught him. However, he was not as brave as Feng Yue and did not dare disobey orders.

“Yes!” Gao Xuan said loudly.

“I’m not worried with Feng Yue’s skill level,” Jiang Zhe’s expression was stern. “But her personality is rushed and she likes to be risky. You are much steadier, and you can make up for what she lacks.”

Jiang Zhe looked at Gao Xuan and said, ‘You do not have much time. You need to quickly fight and resolve it. The battle for Cold Mountain Jie is not finished. I speculate that after some more time, the mo will mount a counter-attack. It is best for you to come back before then.’

“How long?” Gao Xuan said cautiously.

“Do not go take more than two months!” Jiang Zhe said decisively.

Yes!” Gao Xuan said in a deep voice, his expression filled with confidence.

The battalion under Jiang Zhe’s command had followed Jiang Zhe for many years. Jiang Zhe had almost gathered all of them from all the major sects. There was one jindan among every twenty people.

The Jiangzi Battlion was one of the core battalions of Xuan Kong Temple.

The battle of Cold Mountain Jie had turned this battalion, that Jiang Zhe had spent so long creating, into an even sharper blade. Due to this battle, Jiangzi Battalion had become famous, and became one of the top four battalions in the Four Realms.

Just these five hundred Jiangzhi Battalion soldiers were enough to give Gao Xuan the confidence he could take over a jie.

Also, the one thousand person battalion that Feng Yue Shijie had taken were not decorative. Their selection was not as stringent as the Jiangzi Battalion but they had also gone through many tests. Each of them were accomplished disciples from the outer sects. In any jie, they were able to become elite. It was just that they were from Xuan Kong Temple and the competition was so fierce that they did qualify for the Jiangzi Battalion.

A Cloud Sea Jie that was an unknown force, how strong could it be?

Even a person as steady as Gao Xuan did not think the other could make any waves. If they were careful and did not fall into traps, the other wouldn't have a chance.

Jiang Zhe finally got a matter off his mind and smiled slightly. "Go, do not waste time."

Gao Xuan saluted Jiang Zhe and turned to leave.

A five hundred person battalion quickly left without a sound.

Lil' Miss had been very busy.

Golden Crow Camp's study of the mo matrixes had been

outstanding, especially on those mo with good bloodlines. Their power would frequently increase by a whole level. Little Savage Jie was a small and remote jie but it still had many colonel level mo. Most of them had some special bloodline. It was not pure, but this wasn't a problem for Golden Crow Camp.

Shi Dong's reputation in Little Savage Jie was not bad, and the benefits he provided was very good. Adding on that the legend about the king quickly spread in Little Savage Jie, it attracted many mo with potential

These mo with potential were quickly delivered to Golden Crow Camp at Turtle Island for mo matrixes to be engraved.

In this short time, there were sixty brigadier level mo!

The insanity of Golden Crow Camp infected Lil' Miss. With unprecedented speed, he started to think of how he could use the strength of these mo to their greatest potential. In the end, he decided to merge these brigadier mo into Vermillion Bird Camp.

Mo battalions were not difficult for him. In reality, he was much more familiar with the soldier types and battalions of yaomo than the types of xiuzhe soldiers and their battalions.

He decided to plan out new tactics. The addition of these brigadier mo caused Vermillion Bird Camp to grow more versatile and even stronger. They had the power to finish even more complex and difficult tactics!

Lil' Miss could not swallow the result of his battle against A Zha Ge.

He was clear if they wanted to help Zuo Shixiong, they had to become stronger!

These brigadier mo were extremely resistant to Vermillion Bird Camp and disdained them, but after Wei Ran led a single troop that was comprised of half jindan and half ningmai to defeat a battalion composed entirely of brigadier mo, these brigadier mo were won over.

Mo emphasized strength the most. The right of speech depended on their strength. If they submitted, they never played tricks. Also, they were not stupid. Even though it was hard for them to accept living together with xiuzhe, as the power of Turtle Island was gradually exposed to them, and Turtle Island treated mo the same as others, they gradually threw away their opinions.

Most importantly, all the mo believed this was the estate that their king had conquered.

Our king, that was a true mo!

The mo that gradually acclimatized to Turtle Island displayed very good control, their persistence and endurance. The sword xiu of Vermillion Bird Camp felt admiration.

The sword xiu of Vermillion Bird Camp were also unwilling. All

of them were working as hard as they could.

Under this kind of atmosphere, a brand new Vermillion Bird Camp with brand new tactics gradually formed.

Chapter 573 - Pang Chen

“Daren, everything has been arranged.” The subordinate reported to Bu Heng.

Bu Heng asked, “Who did you find?”

“Pang Chen, general level, he stepped into general level seven years ago and has a wealth of battle experience. His most famous battle was against Qi Diao Yu. He lost after thirty moves, even though he was defeated, it was a glorious battle, and his reputation rose as a result.”

“Qi Diao Yu!” Bu Heng’s expression shifted. “He really is strong to have fought Qi Diao Yu to thirty moves.”

“Yes! After Pan Cheng lost to Qi Diao Yu, he came to the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles in search of a breakthrough. He has stayed in Great Peace City for more than three years, and has had more than twenty major and minor challenges. His strength has improved over this time.”

“Not bad, not bad.” Bu Heng had a satisfied expression.

A general level that was strong like this could accomplish his goal of probing the unknown youth’s abilities.

“Where is that person from Guard Camp?” Bu Heng then asked.

“He’s at the Mo Skill Steles,” the subordinate instantly responded,” Pang Chen has already gone ahead.”

Bu Heng had an expression of anticipation. “Have you sent someone to observe?”

“It has been arranged.”

Zuo Mo was deeply concentrated in reading. The content on the stone steles were the most basic of fundamentals and there were few, if any, mo that would read all of it. They would learn these fundamental concepts from a very young age and were extremely familiar with them. But Zuo Mo read all the paragraphs without skipping any, one stone stele after another.

He did not feel that any of these topics were troublesome. The words that Shi Zi Ming used were simple and easy to understand. The more Zuo Mo read, the clearer his mind was. It was like there had been a painting in his mind shrouded in mist that was now slowly becoming clearer. Many places that he had thought were blank were being added. This painting was becoming more complete.

This was not a strong feeling of pleasure but it still deeply enticed Zuo Mo. That happy feeling of the blanks being filled meant that he was progressing and could not stop his steps.

It was like he was possessed.

In the sea of consciousness, Pu Yao and Wei were also sighing in surprise.

“This Shi Zi Ming is a very powerful person!” A rare expression of shock appeared on Pu Yao’s face. Wei understood more about mo cultivation than Pu Yao. Much of the content here, especially some of Shi Zi Ming’s explanations seemed to hold a special power that enchanted people and caused them to sigh in wonderment.

“Is this guy really comprehending all of this.” Pu Yao was slightly depressed. Zuo Mo’s talent in mo cultivation was scary. It was like if a spark was given to him, he could immediately create a sea of flames.

In comparison, Zuo Mo’s talent at cultivating the yao arts was not bad, but comparing the two... they were not on the same level. No wonder Pu Yao was slightly depressed.

“En?” Wei suddenly turned his face and said, surprised, “A Wen’s talent isn’t bad!”

Pu Yao snorted coldly, “Only he has a spark of talent in all of Guard Camp. The rest are just all poor people.”

A Wen’s talent was the brightest among Guard Camp. His comprehension ability was wondrous and even Shu Long was lacking in comparison. However, Shu Long’s methodical and

persistent personality was something people would have to consider when comparing the two. The Mo Skill Steles were in front of him, but Shu Long did not even read one character. He had kept a constant guard by watching the surroundings, and followed closely behind Zuo Mo.

“There’s nothing wrong with being poor.” Wei’s mood was clearly very good. Guard Camp had a good seed in A Wen with his wondrous comprehension and had a reliable leader in Shu Long . Wei was naturally in a good mood.

At this time, a light flashed across Shu Long’s eyes. A figure was walking directly towards them.

Shu Long’s expression changed slightly as he stared closely at the other. His body unconsciously shifted to a defensive posture.

The other’s steps seemed to have a certain mysterious rhythm. Each step seemed to fall on a strange beat. In this moment, Shu Long felt everything else in his view seemed to retreat like the tide. The only thing left in his vision was this male that was walking closer!

Suddenly, a hand was placed on his shoulder. Shu Long’s body shook slightly and the parts of his view that had disappeared suddenly recovered. The strange power of the man that was coming towards them disappeared. Shu Long’s mind suddenly relaxed.

“Daren!” Shu Long was full of shame.

“It’s fine.” Zuo Mo patted Shu Long’s shoulder and said in a low voice, “Protect A Wen, do not let anyone disturb him.”

“Yes.” Shu Long bit down on his lips and felt even more ashamed. They encountered an enemy but they needed Daren to defend them. Shu Long, oh Shu Long, was there anything more shameful than this?

He swore inside that he had to work harder and cultivate!

Zuo Mo walked in front of Shu Long, his eyes flashing with a cold light. Truthfully, it was not a pleasing matter to be interrupted when he was reading in pleasure. The other was clearly targeting him and held enmity.

“It seems that even if you do not to find people to challenge someone has come to find you.” Pu Yao’s tone was that of a spectator.

The other stopped in his walk about three zhang away from Zuo Mo and said politely. “This one is Pang Chen, greetings to Brother!”

Pang Chen was in his thirties and his body had an extremely well-balanced build. The muscles exposed was not in bulky, but were well toned. Each muscle seemed to wrapped around him like coils of wire. People would not doubt the astounding power contained within.

Zuo Mo looked coldly at the other. They had just arrived in Great Peace City and didn't know anyone in the city. This middle-aged man called Pang Chen had directly approached them and disrupted their comprehension. He clearly did not have any good intentions.

Fortunately, Zuo Mo was only immersed in reading, and was not having an epiphany like A Wen. The state of epiphany was something of luck. If it was disrupted, no one knew when it would be the next time it occurred.

No matter if it was xiuzhe or yaomo, this kind of interruption was something that was almost forbidden.

“Say what you want!” Zuo Mo said coldly. Since the other clearly did not have good intentions, Zuo Mo had no intentions on wasting effort being polite. Also, in Pu Yao's plan, he had to challenge some people to increase his fame. Since someone had come to him, that was good.

Zuo Mo started to push up his sleeves.

Pang Chen was slightly shocked. It was the first time he had seen someone like Zuo Mo.

He suddenly found it was interesting. Did the other not know this was Great Peace City? In Great Peace City, someone that conducted themselves with this kind of attitude would not survive for long. This really was an arrogant greenhorn!

He should finish this quickly.

Pang Chen thought and did not waste words. “This one wants to spar with Sir.”

“Spar? You are challenging me?” Zuo Mo raised an eyebrow.

The mo in the surroundings instantly started to discuss. Pang Chen had been in Great Peace City for more than three years. Anyone who had spent some time in Great Peace City knew of him. People also quickly recognized that Zuo Mo was the person that had challenged Lan Tian Long at the city gates.

The crowd instantly became excited. What people enjoyed the most in Great Peace City were the challenges. In this place, it was very easy to become famous, they just had to challenge others.

Of course, there were unspoken rules about challenges. For example, if an unknown mo challenged a mo that was well-established, the other could completely dismiss the challenge. Otherwise, those experts would not have time to do anything else.

In the words of Great Peace City, those that just arrived in Great Peace City were nobodies. If new people wanted to become famous, there were battle stadiums where they could gain a little fame. Those that won in the battle stadiums would have the chance to challenge the famous warriors.

For example, no one laughed at Lan Tian Long for refusing to fight Zuo Mo when Zuo Mo directly challenged him. They would feel that Zuo Mo was a new person who didn't know anything. Lan Tian Long's actions had people admiring his composure and mannerisms.

But Pang Chen?

Pang Chen was definitely someone of renowned skill in Great Peace City. He was able to withstand thirty moves from Qi Diao Yu. This kind of strength was enough to stun others. And in these years in Great Peace City, he had never lost a challenge. People admired and respected him.

If it wasn't that Pang Chen did not have any intentions of being recruited into a faction, many families would have sent him an invitations already.

But a famous warrior who had been famous for so long challenged a newcomer.

It was not common to see something like this in Great Peace City.

Pang Chen felt slightly discontent at Zuo Mo's gaze. He had been famous for a long time. When had a junior ever looked at him with a gaze like that?

He smiled coldly and exposed his white teeth. "Exactly!"

The crowd instantly became excited. Even the stupidest person could see that something else was causing this challenge but no one cared. They were excited that they could see Pang Chen fight.

A famous warrior!

How long had it been since a famous warrior had fought!

The news that Pang Chen challenged Zuo Mo quickly spread throughout Great Peace City.

Due to the Sky-Splitting Calamity, war rose in all areas, and everyone's attentions turned to the state of the world. Great Peace City had been calm for a long time.

Those families instantly smelled the unusualness of this challenge. Their intelligence gathering was faster and more accurate than the average person. The intelligence about Guard Camp, their conflict with the green yaksha was quickly delivered to their desks.

The name Guard Camp started to enter their eyes starting from this moment.

Connecting this to Bu Heng entering Great Peace City recently, they instantly knew who was behind this. However, the great majority of them just smiled. They felt that Bu Heng was too

cautious. He had definitely paid a significant price to have Pang Chen act.

Using Pang Chen to deal with a newcomer, wasn't that bullying?

Many people felt that Bu Heng's reputation was overstated and they were even too lazy to go spectate.

Lan Tian Long was one exception.

When he heard his subordinate report the news, light flashed out of his eyes. He recalled that indiscernible feeling of danger that day. A deep meaningful smile appeared at the corner of his mouth.

Famous warrior... .. Pang Chen

Lan Tian Long unhesitatingly stood and sprinted outside.

“Go! Let's go watch!”

When he flew onto the street, he saw the people moving like the tide.

A famed warrior was fighting. It caused Great Peace City which had been peaceful for too long to finally get busy.

Hearing the people below excitedly discussing Pang Chen's

ultimate skills, his famous fights, and the rumors about him, Lan Tian Long suddenly felt great anticipation for this fight.

Chapter 574 - Domineering

Great Peace City, Challenge Stadium

The flood of people flowed in and quickly filled up the majority of stands. There had been people fighting inside but when they heard a famous warrior, Pang Chen, was challenging someone, they instantly cleared the challenge stadium arena.

Zuo Mo's original plan was to beat this dislikeable person until he was on the ground picking up his teeth but no one was allowed to fight near the Mo Skill Steles. Zuo Mo was also worried about interrupting A Wen during his epiphany and agreed to go to the Challenge Stadium.

When he watched as the stands filled up, Zuo Mo recalled attending the Sword Test Conference back at Wu Kong Mountain. This scene was very similar to back then. That was the only combat competition he had ever attended. All the fights since then were battles of life and death. They were harsh and cruel and people would do anything for survival.

He really missed that!

He thought of how he had used formations to defeat his opponents and was scolded by the shishu for embarrassing the sword sect. Thought of the adorable Xiao Guo, thought of Li Ying Feng Shijie. Right, back then, he had relied on Li Ying Feng Shijie. Unconsciously, Zuo Mo's thoughts led him away. Those were hard but very happy days. Those warm scenes of being scolded were like

rays of sunlight passing through the wooded canopy and warming the ground. They carried warmth and a slight breeze that filled his heart.

An indescribable longing and sorrow spread in his heart.

Zuo Mo lowered his head. In his vision the ground was distant and blurry. The noise of his surroundings seemed far from him. There was only the sound of his heartbeat and his breathing. The world was silent, there was only his heart's murmurs.

Sect Leader, Shishu, I will definitely rescue Xiao Guo and Li Shijie!

There was no gritting of the teeth, no steely determination. He was so calm there was barely a rise and fall to his breathing as he said these words, as though he was just carrying out a normal matter. There was no burning spirit, no cursing or swearing, this was what how Zuo Mo had said this to himself.

In silence, Zuo Mo raised his right hand and started to unwrap the bandages wrapped around his hand. He did not raise his head to glance at Pang Chen standing on the other side.

A discussion started on the surrounding stands.

“Who is this person? He is so arrogant? Is he a newcomer? He dares to posture in front of Pang Chen. Haha, He really is seeking death!”

“Ahahaha, in any case, it’s his death. It’s good for him to show off before he dies!”

“So strange, Pang Chen is challenging a newcomer? Just how bored is this person? What is even more ridiculous is that this newcomer agreed! I cannot understand, I cannot understand it!

“What if Pang Chen is defeated”

“Ridiculous! Please, Pang Cheng is a famous warrior! Do you think the name of a famous warrior is worth so little? These newcomers now really do not have good judgment. So young, and he will lose his life.”

“But Pang Chen’s victory will not be a good one, he is lowering himself”

The stands were not filled. Even though they could see a famous warrior fight, Pang Chen’s opponent was undoubtedly too weak in the eyes of the public. These people had just come to see Pang Chen fight. As to winning and losing, there wasn’t anything to look at.

“Pang Chen, if you cannot defeat this person within ten moves, don’t try courting me anymore!”

A young female suddenly raised her voice from the stands and shouted into the battlefield. This young female had an outstanding appearance with her bright eyes and her pouting lips that made

her seem even more adorable.

The stands instantly exploded.

“Wow wow wow! That is Miss Hua Ning! Now there is something to see now!”

“Haha! I heard long ago that Pang Chen was pursuing Miss Hua Ning. It seems that the rumor is true!”

“Now there is something to see! Ten moves! Miss Hua Ning is really vicious!”

Pang Chen roared in laughter. “Since Little Hua Ning has said it, Pang Chen does not dare to disobey! Ten moves it is!”

This shout was full of bravado and said without any hesitation. The mannerisms and confidence of an expert was displayed! Many mo females showed admiration on the stands. Even though Miss Hua Ning was present, they still shouted and cheered for Pang Chen.

The discussion increased in volume as everyone’s interests were stirred up. Compared to the victory that was undoubted, this promise of victory in ten moves was something more entertaining to see. Everyone started to speculate how many moves Pang Chen would need to win. Many people even started placing bets.

Hua Ning was very satisfied with Pang Chen’s response, her face

excited. The guard beside her also looked with a smile at the stage.

Receiving motivation from a beauty, Pang Chen's morale rose.

Right now, his mind was filled with thoughts of how to win more beautifully. The beauty, Hua Ning, was here. If he did not win beautifully, then he would waste this rare chance to win her favor.

However, when his gaze landed on Zuo Mo, his face suddenly darkened.

The other's head was lowered as he attended to unraveling his bandage. From beginning to end, the person did not look at him.

Anger flickered through Pang Chen's eyes. He had had dozens of battles in Great Peace City before and no opponent dared to dismiss him like this. He did not take the opportunity to make a sneak attack. He had enough confidence in his own strength.

Originally, he had only accepted money to do this yet the underestimation that Zuo Mo showed completely infuriated him.

He, Pang Chen, was being dismissed by a newcomer!

A feeling that he was being embarrassed rose. Pang Chen took a deep breath, his murderousness rising.

If he could not kill this person, how could he leave an impression

on Hua Ning?

The long bandage was unravelled, and the mo matrix on Zuo Mo's right hand slowly was exposed to the eyes of the public. The bright blue light flowed along the mo matrix with a dream glow.

Pang Chen's pupils suddenly shrank!

This was

At this time, Zuo Mo raised his head. The scenes from Wu Kong Sword Sect and the Sword Test Conference retreated like the tide and his vision became clear again.

His expression was cool but that pair of eyes held an unusual determination and resolve, among the faint feeling of sorrow and longing.

The other had come to him, then he would start his plan with this battle!

Zuo Mo's gaze suddenly became hardened. His aura felt like an invisible shroud had been taken off. A shocking presence was like a freed wild beast that shot off his body without any more disguise.

Boom!

The sudden exploding presence was like a tidal wave that spread

out in all directions.

The noisy stands suddenly choked on their shouts as though an invisible hand had gripped their throats!

General level!

He was general level!

Pang Chen's eyes widened, shock and disbelief flashing across his face! He had known that Zuo Mo was general level, from green yaksha's intelligence report. He had not paid close attention to this detail. Those that dared to make challenges in Great Peace City were all general levels. He had defeated several general levels. In a place like Great Peace City that was filled with experts, general level wasn't anything special.

Only now, when Zuo Mo released his enormous presence without any restraint did he recognize that the situation was not good!

In the stand, Hua Ning's eyes widened as she looked dazedly at the field. The expressions of the guards around her turned serious.

Such a powerful presence!

"Let's start."

Among the deathly silence, Zuo Mo's cool voice was like the bell

announcing death's arrival, and entered everyone's ears.

Before the sound spread, with a lift of his leg, Zuo Mo seemed to appear in front of Pang Chen, leaving behind afterimages.

The serene blue mo matrix drew a twisting ripple like streak of light. The tight fist twisted the air, and carried great presence as it punched straight at Pang Chen's face.

So fast!

An extreme feeling of danger. Pang Chen's hairs stood on end!

Under such an emergency, Pang Chen did not dare to hold anything back. With a bellow, his muscles tensed like a chain that suddenly pulled tight. A brown colored mo matrix suddenly appeared!

Twisting Python mo physique!

His arms seemed to snap and then shake as though they did not have bones!

A brown light left his hand and shot at Zuo Mo's fist. At the same time, a shadow that was hard to notice with the naked eye shot straight at Zuo Mo's lower body like snake hidden in the shadows!

In this opening attack, Pang Chen unhesitatingly used his

strongest attacks!

The serene blue mo matrix carried mind-shaking light as it hit the brown light in a contest of strength!

Pang Chen's expression suddenly changed. He abandoned the attack and quickly retreated!

Bam!

The thunderous sound of an explosion sounded as though something had broken through something soft. The brown light exploded into a spray of brown mist!

A serene blue fist continued charging out of the brown mist of light and chased Pang Chen.

Pang Chen's soul almost left his body. That snapping attack had a name called the [Python Twist Flick]. It used softness to dissipate force, and had never failed. Today, it wasn't even able to stop the other for a moment. This meant that the power of the other's punch far surpassed the tolerance of the [Python Twist Flick]!

Pew, at the same time, a gold light flashed on the other's left fist as he blocked the sneak attack.

[Snake Tongue Arrow]!

Even the sharp Snake Tongue Arrow was not able to affect the other at all!

What mo skill was this?

How could it have such terrifying power.

What Zuo Mo used wasn't a mo skill at all, but the [Sky Wave Fist Scripture] that he had given up a long time ago! For the present Zuo Mo, this fist scripture was too low leveled to display his full power. However, he had just learned some basic techniques from the Mo Skill Steles. When they flashed through Zuo Mo's mind, he unconsciously adjusted the fist scripture.

The path that the dhyana xiu took was, at the core, not very different than mo skills.

Zuo Mo had the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique that was third ranked in general level. Even though he could not express the full power, but the strength of his physical body was not lacking compared to any general level mo physique! Especially his right hand that was engraved with the Ten Thousand Layer Iron Cowrie mo matrix. That was extremely hard and the power of this fist scripture could be completely released.

When Zuo Mo attacked he used [Sky Wave Fist Scripture]'s most powerful killing move, [Sky Glass Wave]! This was the only move that Zuo Mo thought was acceptable out of the entire [Sky Glass Fist Scripture].

However unlike before when the fist energy would leave his hand, Zuo Mo used his strong control to keep the continuously multiplying power inside his right fist to form such a domineering punch!

Even Zuo Mo was surprised at the power of this punch.

But his mind did not relax. His right leg that landed on the ground pushed off again.

The words on the Mo Skill Stele flowed like water across his mind.

The sinews, bones, blood and flesh in his body automatically adjusted as though they were alive. His movements became even more balanced and coordinated, his power even more condensed, and his speed even faster!

Zuo Mo's body imperceptibly shook and the air around him suddenly exploded!

Pia!

The light sound rang out over the entire field. An intangible ripple spread.

Zuo Mo felt his entire body light up as though all the restraints tying him down had been broken.

Lan Tian Long suddenly stood up from where he was on the stands, his face stunned. He looked hard at the ghostly figure on the field.

That was—sonic boom!

Chapter 575 - Kill

Sonic Boom, it referred to the explosion that occurred when the body broke free of the restraints of air.

Technically, this technique was not difficult and even someone in brigadier level could comprehend it, but in reality there were very few mo that comprehended this technique. This was because sonic booms required a solid foundation in the fundamentals and basic techniques. One had to be very balanced and outstanding at controlling every part of their body.

Yet for these people that started cultivating when they were children, there were rarely any that would cultivate the basic mo skills one by one. Every mo skill had their focus and being balanced meant that no one trait was outstanding. For mo that were highly competitive and lived in cruel environments, not many would choose this.

The mo that could achieve sonic booms may not be very strong but they were well rounded and good at controlling their body.

The benefits of the sonic boom could be seen. Breaking free of the restraint of air meant that one's movements could become faster and more nimble. The momentum behind their attacks could be stronger. The mo that could achieve sonic booms had the outstanding ability to balance their body and would have each action under their complete control—for example, Zuo Mo at this time!

His back was slightly arched like a cat about to pounce. His right hand that was drawn back at the side of his body and flashed with a serene blue light. His punch drew out a heart-shaking stream of light!

His movements were clearly lightning fast but every action was clear and crisp, perfectly coordinated. It carried a beauty that was pleasing to the eye.

Pang Chen definitely did not feel any sense of this beauty!

A thin layer of sweat had unconsciously appeared on his forehead. After blocking just one attack and retreating one step, he felt as though he had fought for a long time and was extremely exhausted.

His resilient mind that he was proud of started showing signs of instability.

All of this was because of the other's strong pressure!

A suffocating pressure that could crumble mountains!

It was just one punch

There was a gigantic battle arena but for some reason, he felt as though he was trapped with nowhere to escape. At the sonic boom just now, his expression changed. It was not the first time he had seen a sonic boom but now... ..

His gaze stared hard at the serene blue light that flowed and flashed in the air!

His body uncontrollably shivered, all the blood inside seemed to freeze, every muscle seemed to disobey. The other's murderousness seemed to wrap around him. No matter where he tried to flee, he would not be able to escape the other.

Time seemed to slow in his eyes. That mind-blowing serene blue light seemed to slow down.

He seemed to already see the result. He would not be able to dodge it! He would be destroyed!

Blood rose in Pang Chen's eyes. He was like a wild beast trapped in a cage and furiously fought back! He was a famous warrior who had fought through numerous battles. Fighting free of the terror, his fighting spirit exploded!

Dead then he will also die!

Pang Chen's expression was twisted. He glared angrily and ignored the streak of flowing light that was heading towards him. He charged forward rather than retreat, leaping directly at Zuo Mo!

The brown mo matrix was like the scales of a python, layer upon layer that covered Pang Chen's body. They seemed to come alive

and wandered all over Pang Chen's body. His body became as flexible as a snake, each muscle like a cord made from numerous thin chains woven together.

Using his left foot as the pivot, his body twisted strangely!

Every piece of muscle tensed and suddenly contracted like a slender iron chain. Shocking power exploded the moment the muscles tensed!

The power was passed on in waves to his right fist!

The brown light seemed to be tangible as it shrouded his right fist. It seemed to be the head of a python, howling and shrieking as it swept the entire field like a galewind!

[Twisting Python Pounce]!

Lan Tian Long's eyes lit up on the stands. His hands dug into the stone handrails but he did not feel it.

Pang Chen's [Twisting Python Pounce] was much stronger than in the past!

All the power in his body gathered in Pang chen's right fist in this instant. This strange technique of gathering power was extremely powerful in its momentum. Even among Great Peace City that was filled with experts, it was an unique attack!

Just as Lan Tian Long was shocked, a change happened.

The brown ball of light that shrouding Pang Chen's right fist began to crumble from the top like a mold of dirt. The layer outside started to fall off!

A life-like brown python head appeared!

The cold pupils, the triangle-shaped head, the tongue that flickered about. It was still a brown light but it gave people a feeling of being alive!

The eyes of the brown python narrowed slightly. Its great mouth opened and its sharp teeth shot out.

Crack, Lan Tian Long's hand tensed and he ripped a large piece of stone off the handrails.

Lan Tian Long's eyes did not move away. He felt his blood boil when he saw Zuo Mo's punch and he hadn't expected for Pang Chen to have a breakthrough while standing at the gate of life and death. Seeing this, he wanted to get on the field as well.

Pang Chen was overjoyed. He hadn't thought he would have a breakthrough at such a crucial moment. A power he never felt before swelled up and filled every muscle in his body. He had never felt so powerful before!

He had confidence that anything, no matter what, would turn to dust in front of his punch! Even if it was a mountain!

“Go die!”

The howl of the brown snake was like a furious wave that covered all sound in the battle stadium!

Suddenly, he saw a pair of eyes, a pair of clear and determined eyes!

He stilled slightly.

The serene blue light rippled as it suddenly jumped into his field of view.

This this was

The other did not dodge, did not hesitate or pause. It was as though the other did not see anything. That fist that was covered in the serene blue mo matrix collided with the python!

Haha! Idiot!

Pang Chen wanted to laugh out loud. He had not imagined the other to be so confident to such a level. Even seeing that he had had a breakthrough, the other still tried to overpower him!

Such an idiot!

Did he not know that the [Twisting Python Pounce] after his breakthrough was ten times as powerful as before!

Ten times!

Such intoxicating power!

Come, have a taste of ten times the power!

Pang Chen's smile suddenly became vicious.

Yet his smile suddenly froze on his face. The scene in front of him seemed to play out in slow motion, delayed and crystal clear. He watched as the brown snake started to crumble, from the teeth, and then turn to dust!

Why was it like this

He did not have the time to think before the python turned to a ball of powder and dissipated. The sharp howl abruptly stopped!

Ten times

The blue light filled every corner of his vision.

Zuo Mo did not take a second look at the pile of blood and flesh. He panted. The punch just now had used up almost all the power in his body. He took a few deep breaths and he recovered some strength. He raised his right fist. The serene blue mo matrix on his hand had diminished in intensity.

Zuo Mo was savoring the feeling of that punch just now.

If it was just pure physical power, the attack definitely would not be so destructive. The moment he came into contact with the other's fist, a thread of shen power inside the right fist suddenly came out. This was what caused such a terrifying [Sky Glass Wave]!

Shen power

Zuo Mo was contemplating this occurrence.

Zuo Mo quickly recovered. The stands were completely silent. Everyone was gaping, their faces pale and had terrified expressions.

Among this death like silence, Zuo Mo walked back to his starting position, back straight, picking up his bandage, and started to rewrap his hand.

His movements were slow and his expression serious as though no one else was around.

There was no joy from his victory. Even though he had gain understanding on many things from this fight, even though he had successfully completed a step in Pu Yao's plan but if none of this had ever happened, if he was still on Wu Kong Mountain, then how good would that be

This absurd thought flashed in his mind and then disappeared just like the warm memory fragments.

He grimaced inside. His eyes became clear again, and determination set in.

“Hey, what are you called?” On the stands, Hua Ning suddenly shouted loudly. The guards around her instantly became nervous. From Zuo Mo's display just now, they knew he was a very dangerous person.

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised. Just now, he had heard what Hua Ning had said to Pang Chen.

This woman was really heartless!

He couldn't help but glance at Pang Chen on the ground in sympathy. He did not stop to respond and continued to walk back outside. My A Gui is so much better!

Shu Long had an expression of relief and hurried over. He had been very nervous just now.

“Hey hey hey, I asked you a question!” Hua Ning still chased after him.

Zuo Mo was too lazy to pay attention to a girl with such a bad heart. He left.

“You you you” Hua Ning had not expected that someone would ignore her. She instantly burst into tears and her guards hurried to comfort her.

In the stands, Lan Tian Long did not call out to Zuo Mo. However, his eyes flashed. His intuition that day had not been wrong!

Only when Zuo Mo’s figure disappeared from the battle stadium did the deathly silent stands lose all restraint and explode. The roaring crowd made it so that people could not even hear what the person next to them said.

Everyone’s expressions turned from an ashen white to an excited red.

The fight just now was brief but it was mind-blowing and unexpected. Everyone was immersed in the fight just now. That unparalleled and domineering punch. The promise of ten moves that Pang Chen had declared, his breakthrough at the cusp of life and death.

The famous warrior Pang Chen had been killed in two moves and his opponent was an unknown newcomer. This fight would shake the entire city!

Feng Yue hurried with her army. She had disobeyed military orders and had secretly taken an army troop with her but she knew what was most important. She had followed Jiang Zhe for a long time and her judgment was not bad. She knew that this period of time was the prelude to a large battle. After a brief respite, the counterattack from the mo would come.

She had to take revenge for Ding Zhen Shishu before the mo retaliated.

So while travelling, she did not rest for one moment. She desired to reach Cloud Sea Jie at the fastest possible speed.

After they crossed this jie river, they would be in Cloud Sea Jie.

“Everyone is tired. There is just a bit of road left. Everyone, put one last effort in. We will rest when we get to Cloud Sea Jie!” Feng Yue motivated the group.

The subordinates could not disguise their exhaustion but they nodded. Feng Yue held great weight among them and they were well-trained. It was difficult to travel fast like this, but there was still a distance until it reached their limits.

“Let’s cross the river!” Feng Yue gritted out.

Ding Zhen Shishu, I will definitely get revenge for you!

Chapter 576 - Enemy Invasion

The death of Pang Chen shook all of Great Peace City

This was the first famous warrior death in the last half year!

The chaos rifts caused the fighting between the three factions to quickly intensify. People's attentions naturally were on the increasingly complex state of the world. Many experts had returned to their clans to participate in the war. Great Peace City had been silent for a long time as a result but as the state of some places stabilized, experts, like Lan Tian Long, came back, Great Peace City recovered its usual atmosphere.

Pang Chen had died! The opponent was a newcomer! Two punches!

The mo who had watched the fight in person tried their best to describe the dominance and terrifying nature of the two punches. The promise of ten moves by Pang Chen to Miss Hua Ning became the biggest joke of the challenge.

The mirage of this challenge was a hot seller. The enthusiasm of the Great Peace citizen erupted!

How many years had it been since a newcomer beat a famous warrior?

As the rules were perfected, challenges that crossed levels in

status like this were rarer to see. No one was concerned about why Pang Chen had challenged Zuo Mo. They only knew that Pang Chen had died on the hands of a newcomer!

Newcomer!

They quickly found that even now, they did not know what this newcomer was called.

So people started to investigate.

The name of Butcher Guard Camp that killed three thousand bandits with one hundred people, rescued Tao Xing's group on their way, used one attack to defeat the King Yaksha, and caused hundreds of green yaksha to flee

He became even more mysterious!

Now, many factions paid attention this newcomer that had come out of nowhere.

Great Peace City seemed to come alive.

————

“What? Pang Chen is dead?” Bu Heng's wine cup crumbled to dust in his hands.

“Yes!” The subordinate hurriedly played a mirage.

Bu Heng stared motionlessly at the mirage as though he was paralyzed.

The mirage perfectly captured the entire process. Without any effort, Bu Heng could catch every detail. Even outside the mirage, Bu Heng felt his mind shudder at the other’s domineering punch.

“We underestimated him,” Bu Hen suddenly said. He straightened his back, and his expression became peaceful again.

He had seen the mirage of Pang Chen and Qi Diao Yu’s fight. Qi Diao Yu had not used all of his power, but Pang Chen was definitely one of the top fighters in order to withstand thirty of Qi Diao Yu’s moves. Also, Pang Chen had improved over the years, and even had had a breakthrough at the end, but he was still killed by that one punch.

Just who was this person?

The other seemed to have come out of nowhere. Even now, they had not identified the other’s origins.

This caused Bu Heng to feel anxious.

Bu Heng was not worried about individual strength. From his angle, while that punch was domineering and mind-shaking, if the other did not have a strong background, he still had many ways of

eliminating the other.

This was Great Peace City. This place never lacked for experts!

“A Zha Ge, I heard you lost a while ago?” a large man laughed, his tone teasing.

A Zha Ge was not angry and said with a smile, “I encountered a very powerful xiuzhe battle general. He isn’t just strong. His battalion is clearly much weaker than mine but he was able to fight me to standstill. If our battalions were the same strength, I probably would not be able to win.”

“So powerful?” The large man was surprised. “A Zha Ge, you are one of the three great battle generals of our Stellar Rahula Clan. Even you are not a match?”

A Zha Ge grimaced and spread his hands. “I’m really not a match.”

The large man’s surprise increased. He knew that A Zha Ge would not joke about a matter like this. After a moment of thought, he said, “How do you think Bi Shan compares to him?”

Bi Shan was the head of the three Stellar Rahula Clan battle generals, and he had never lost in his life.

“Not as good.” A Zha Ge shook his head.

The large man’s expression became serious. “Is he a disciple from the Big Four? Xuan Kong Temple has produced that Jiang Zhe who recently took over Cold Mountain Jie. Many people are rallying together now in preparation to take back Cold Mountain Jie.”

“He is not a disciple from the Four Sects. I asked him, they are from Cloud Sea Jie. I detected from his tone that they do not like the Big Four very much.” A Zha Ge was an attentive person despite his easy-going nature. “The reason that they attacked Middle Granary Jie seems to be for the chaos rift to this side.”

“Do they want to invade the mo territories?” The large man’s expression changed slightly. Who could not be on their guard when there was a powerful opponent next to them?

“They don’t seem like it.” A Zha Ge thought and then said, “From the discussion I had with them, they are not the same as the Big Four, and they do not seem to be hostile to mo. Also, there are not many of them. They would need to take a long time to stabilize Middle Granary Jie. They seemed to want the chaos rift for a certain goal.”

“What do you plan to do?” The large man’s expression eased.

“Become allies!” A Zha Ge said crisply. “It would be terrifying to have such a strong battle general as an enemy. It is much better to become friends. It will be worth it even if I have to pay a price.”

“En, if he is as strong as you say, this is right,” the large man nodded and said.

“How is the progress on Bi Shan and the other’s end?” A Zha Ge asked.

“Not very smooth.” The large man shook his head, his expression worried. “They encountered trouble. Gongye Xiao Rong’s reputation is not as famous as Jiang Zhe, but he is just lacking a major victory. Bi Shan has lost two times already. Fortunately, the losses were not large. Bi Shan is planning on allying with the yao in the area. However, the battle general of that yao battalion is very young, and it is a female!”

“Female? A Zha Ge stilled.

“Yes, she’s called Mu Xi. She is from a famous family, the Palace Lake Mu Clan but she is too young. I’m slightly worried.” The large man’s expression was slightly displeased. He clearly felt discontent that their ally had sent a little girl.

A Zha Ge was also worried but he still comforted, “Palace Lake Wood Clan is a famed family. If they dare to send this little girl, she definitely is extraordinary in some aspect.”

“I hope it is so!” The large man grimaced and suddenly said, “What do you think about the state of affairs?”

A Zha Ge smiled. “To use a common saying, a new era has arrived.”

“How so?” the large man asked interestedly.

“The Sky-Splitting Calamity has pushed the yaomo and xiuzhe that used to be separated by Blood Sky Metropolis Jie back together. It is unavoidable for yaomo and xiuzhe to mix together.” A Zha Ge’s expression was extremely serious.

The large man shook his head in disagreement. “We and the xiuzhe have generations of blood and hate between us, how can we mix?”

“As there is more and more contact between yaomo and xiuzhe. The mixing cannot be stopped. There are so many chaos rifts, who can seal them all? This whirlpool will increase in size, no one can escape. We will definitely be fighting now, but there will be a day when everyone gets tired of fighting and will naturally come together,” A Zha Ge said with a chuckle.

The large man found it hard to accept what A Zha Ge said. He shook his head and said with a smile, “Your thoughts are always different than everyone else.”

“Time would prove everything.” A Zha Ge raised an eyebrow.

Turtle Island.

Ma Fan's face almost scrunched into a ball. Looking at the busy campsite, he rubbed his head. He really wanted to complain and say "So troublesome," but when the words reached his mouth, he swallowed them.

Right now, he was the commander of a camp, and he could not be as carefree as before and do as he wished.

Ever since Lil' Miss put Black Turtle Camp into his hands, he put almost all of his mind and heart into it. Like a sponge, he furiously soaked up knowledge about being a battle general and spent all his time on this.

The strength of Black Turtle Camp had continuously increased. As Turtle Island's status in Cloud Sea Jie continued to stabilize, there were greater numbers of young and accomplished people that came to participate. The average strength level was much higher.

Other than an occasional inspection, Lil' Miss did not pay too much attention to Black Turtle Camp. Black Turtle Camp was created entirely based on Ma Fan's thoughts.

The skeleton of Black Turtle Camp was the Sky Peak Platoon and the other members were local xiuzhe. There were many jindan xiuzhe but in terms of combat ability, they were very lacking compared to the jindan of Vermillion Bird Camp. Even more troublesome was that these xiuzhe were from different families

and had different spells and talismans they used. There were dhyana xiu, roaming xiu, and sword xiu.

Ma Fan knew that his battle general skill level was limited so he changed his usual laid-back personality and paid careful attention to details.

Maybe it was because he had been the tactical center before that Ma Fan was most skilled in micro-tactics. All of Black Turtle Camp followed him in this.

He made up teams, one after the next, and designed small-area tactics for all of them.

Black Turtle Camp was like a smorgasbord. The xiuzhe in each team were of different types and each team's tactics were different. At many times, Ma Fan felt that his Black Turtle Camp was like the clothing of a beggar, patched together.

He especially longed for the pleasure of Vermillion Bird Camp's thousand swords moving at once. However, he could only be envious.

Whenever these thoughts occurred, then it was the time that Black Turtle Camp's training increased drastically.

The training intensity of Black Turtle Camp was based on Vermillion Bird Camp's standard. The amount of training was so high that many local xiuzhe complained. However, Ma Fan was a

cunning person. If someone wanted to slack off under his eyes, that was akin to seeking death.

The sword formations were like cages dripping with blood as they were set up around the training camp. Wanted to slack off? Then in you go!

Ma Fan did not have a high opinion of Black Turtle Camp but what surprised him was that when Lil' Miss came for an inspection, Lil' Miss had praised him.

When he saw the red eyes of Wei Ran and the others, Ma Fan felt his entire body lightened. Whenever he went back to think about this, Ma Fan's mood would become much better.

However, while Black Turtle Camp had also participated in the fight for Middle Granary Jie, they were still overshadowed by Vermillion Bird Camp. He was not very happy.

This time, Ma Fan had come back to Turtle Island with orders for Black Turtle Camp to engrave formations.

Supposedly, Turtle Island's mo matrixes had had a breakthrough. Golden Crow Camp could engrave even more powerful formations. Lil' Miss who felt that the camp's strength was not enough decided to have Black Turtle Camp go back to get formations engraved.

However, they had to wait for a few days. Golden Crow Camp

still had a few mo who had not finished.

Ma Fan was not in a hurry. Returning to Turtle Island, he felt very close to this. However, he still spent his time on the training of Black Turtle Camp. He was continuously correcting and adjusting the problems exposed during the battles of Middle Granary Jie.

Suddenly, a paper crane flew in front of Ma Fan.

Before he even unfolded it, Ma Fan's expression changed. This type of paper crane would only be used for an emergency report!

He unfolded the paper crane.

–Enemy Invasion! Jie river!

Chapter 577 - Please Call Me Xiao Mo Ge

The report had not come from Lil' Miss Daren but from a town near the jie river.

They had originally been planning to set up the island formation near the town, when a battalion of about a thousand people suddenly appeared. They realized that this battalion was not one from Cloud Sea Jie after the xiuzhe they sent as a messenger had been killed, confirming status as an enemy.

When Ma Fan received the report, he understood the seriousness of the situation. Lil' Miss was in Middle Granary Jie and in Cloud Sea Jie, the only camp that could fight was Black Turtle Camp.

Fortunately, in order to connect the large cloud islands together, the transportation formations inside Cloud Sea Jie were very well-developed. The area near the jie river was also a place greatly protected and the transportation formations were very convenient.

Ma Fan decided to report the news to Lil' Miss Daren as he furiously organized his troops to rush towards the jie river.

After going through several transportation formations, Ma Fan's Black Turtle Camp reached the jie river at their fastest possible speed!

To his surprise, when he arrived, the other side was resting. With a moment of thought, Ma Fan understood. The other probably had

travelled a long-distance and needed to recover.

The xiuzhe that had went to meet them had been killed. There was no need to inquire about their intentions.

“Such a powerful battalion!” Nian Lu said in surprise.

Ma Fan’s expression was slightly grave. He could also see the extraordinary skill of this battalion, from their outfits equipment and their well-organized troops. They were definitely military.

“What are we afraid of? If we charge, they will fall!” Lei Peng rumbled, his expression unconcerned. Without Lil’ Miss’ control in Black Turtle Camp, Lei Peng’s bravado had grown.

“Can you see their origins?” Ma Fan asked Nian Lu.

Of the three, Nian Lu was the most detail-oriented and was a very good vice commander.

Nian Lu’s eyes narrowed and a moment later, his expression changed slightly. “It is a battalion from Xuan Kong Temple!” The insignia on their bodies flashed with light under the sun. Lil’ Miss had expected Xuan Kong Temple to come seek them long ago and paid special attention to intelligence from Xuan Kong Temple.

“Xuan Kong Temple!” Ma Fan’s expression couldn’t help but change slightly. No wonder he felt the other’s troops were extraordinary, a Xuan Kong Temple Battalion.

Having discovered the other's origins, the trio knew there was no way to avoid this fight.

But a battalion from Xuan Kong Temple

Up until now, Black Turtle Camp had never had a large battle. Ma Fan knew without thinking what the result of facing this Xuan Kong Temple battalion was.

Lil' Miss Daren had definitely received the news now. Vermillion Bird Camp was most likely on the way!

What they needed to do was delay them and wait for Vermillion Bird Camp to arrive. Ma Fan didn't even think about facing them in real battle. Cloud Sea Jie was not a large jie, and even the outstanding disciples of local sects were lacking compared to the xiuzhe in the other's battalion.

But no matter what, they could not let the other advance deep into Cloud Sea Jie!

The Great Thousand Island Formation was not yet complete. There was Turtle Island and Golden Crow Camp. If the other charged onto Turtle Island, then Daren's great estate would be ruined! He definitely could not accept this!

Ma Fan looked behind him. Black Turtle Camp had departed just as training for the day had started. They were now just warmed

up, and they had arrived using the transportation formations so they had not expended a great amount of energy along the way.

In other words, Black Turtle Camp's energy and alertness were at their peak!

The other might looked disciplined but their expressions could not disguise their tiredness.

Ma Fan gritted his teeth, murderousness flashing through his eyes. This was their best chance! If the other recovered, then it would not be good!

Thinking it through, Ma Fan's expression calmed down. He pulled over Lei Peng. "Lei Zi, you are first, let's charge!"

Lei Peng grinned, his expression excited. He liked these words the best!

As to that Xuan Kong Temple, who was that?

Feng Yue's expression darkened. This battalion had clearly come from another place. The other's quick response almost surpassed her imagination.

She was very knowledgeable and instantly understood Cloud Sea

Jie had built a well-developed transportation formation system. She couldn't help but be surprised. Everyone knew the benefits of a transportation formation system, but each transportation formation was a significant expenditure. They also needed xiuzhe skilled in seal formations to build them and creating a system would take a large amount of jingshi. Not everyone would be willing to spend such a great price.

But when her gaze swept this battalion, the anxiety in her heart settled back down.

The other battalion's skill level was very lacking compared to her battalion. She did not feel that this was strange. This was an expected situation. The regular battalions of Xuan Kong Temple were not lacking compared to the elite battalions of smaller places.

This was what it meant to be a great sect!

Even more, they were one of the great four.

They were like the titans at the top of the food chain. They could idly look down at the beings living below. With just a pinky, they could crush a whole group of little ants.

In the eyes of Feng Yue, Cloud Sea Jie was a little group of ants!

Ants could chew an elephant to death, but not a dragon!

Suddenly, her expression stilled. Disbelief came onto her face.

The other battalion was charging at them!

Feng Yue had followed Jiang Zhe through numerous battles. Other than the mo, no battalion had ever attacked them first.

Where these people crazy?

Feng Yue stood up, her eyes becoming icy. She was going to let these ants know that even the spark of anger from a dragon was enough to burn them to the point that not even ash would remain!

The other xiuzhe also stood up. The laughable actions of the other side provoke these proud combat xiu!

Gao Xuan was feeling panicked. He had not expected Feng Yue to be in such a rush. He had sprinted with five hundred people but he still could not catch up to the other.

The reply that Feng Yue had given him was that she would finish the battle as quickly as possible.

Thinking about this, Gao Xuan couldn't help but grimace. He was trying his best to hurry and catch up but the girl was not grateful. However, he did not doubt Feng Yue's confidence. Feng Yue was a better battle general than he was, and the one thousand combat xiu in her command were experienced and had been tempered in battle. Even though they could not compare to the Jiangzi

Battalion, they would dominate in any normal jie.

But he still did not dare to linger and sprinted on.

————

“Hem hem hem!” Zuo Mo pretentiously coughed.

Everyone, including Tao Xing, Tang Fei and Shou Ping were pulled over. Everyone looked in puzzlement at Zuo Mo. Looking at him, it seemed he had something to announce.

“Starting from today, everyone, call me Xiao Mo Ge!” Zuo Mo bowed.

The people stared at each other and did not understand what Zuo Mo was doing. Tao Xing was the first to react. His eyes lit up. “Is Mister Zuo worried that someone will figure out your background?”

“It is Mister Xiao!” Zuo Mo seriously corrected Tao Xing.

Tang Fei’s expression shifted. Inside, she thought, was this guy’s background really extraordinary? Otherwise, why would he use an alias?

Zuo Mo’s reaction was evidence for Tao Xing’s speculation. Tao Xing said unconcernedly, “Even though I feel that this will not

work, but if you insist, this isn't a problem."

"Very good!" Zuo Mo clapped and turned to look at the other people.

Tang Fei nodded. "Alright!"

Shou Ping obediently nodded. "Not a problem, Xiao Daren!" After he had been admonished by Ceng Lian'er, Shou Ping became much more obedient.

Zuo Mo automatically ignored Ceng Lian'er. Zuo Mo was not changing his name due to an impulse. The name Zuo Mo would easily catch the attention of Kun Lun. Who would know if there were Kun Lun spies here?

"Even though you are not part of my battalion, I still have to remind you that the challenge this time is not an accident. Someone is acting against us," Zuo Mo said calmly.

Tao Xing nodded. "It is Bu Heng!"

He had stayed in Great Peace City before and knew what went on behind the scenes. He explained, "Bu Heng and his battalion have entered Great Peace City. He should be the culprit this time."

"This guy just won't go away," Zuo Mo muttered. He had completely forgotten how he had killed a few hundred of the other's people. However, when he thought, he instantly became

happy.

Bu Heng would not rest and would definitely send more people to test him out.

Wouldn't they be delivering themselves to him?

He wouldn't have to go find time to make challenges.

However, before this, he had to make a few more trips to the Mo Skills Steles. The content on the steles were very useful. What he had comprehended from the Mo Skill Steles had been crucial in dealing the fatal strike to Pang Chen.

This filled him with anticipation about the other content on the Mo Skill Steles.

A Wen had been scolded heavily by Shu Long after his epiphany passed, protecting Daren would be his first responsibility. Thinking how Daren had left someone to guard him so he would not be disturbed during his epiphany, A Wen was both moved and ashamed.

Yet what he had not expected was that Daren had given him an unexpected order. Daren requested that he had to read every mo skill stele.

Even if A Wen was stupid, he understood that Daren's orders were to benefit him. He swore inside he would always follow

Daren!

Zuo Mo did not think so much. He was still feeling the longing for the Mo Skill Steles.

Yet what he did not expect was when he walked out of the yard, someone shouted, “He’s come out!”

Woosh, a big group of people surrounded him.

Zuo Mo was shocked and almost attacked but he quickly found that while these people were excited, they did not hold enmity.

“Daren! Please accept me as your student!”

“Daren! Please accept me as your student!”

The tide of people crowded around Zuo Mo and cut off all paths of exit. Zuo Mo’s face was confused and he clearly did not understand what was going on. Only when Tao Xing came out of the compound, squeezing through the crowd to stand next to him and explain, did Zuo Mo finally understand.

They wanted to become his students!

These people had come in search of a teacher. This was caused by Zuo Mo’s victory of Pang Chen.

The crowd was packed and looked extremely spectacular.

After a rough glance, Zuo Mo estimated there were at least one hundred people, all of them looking pleadingly at Zuo Mo.

“Do not agree.” Tao Xing said in a low voice by his year, “These people are not strong enough and do not have any potential. If you agree, they will be a burden.”

Zuo Mo was silent.

Chapter 578 - Qi Diao Yu

Zuo Mo looked back at the pleading eyes. Thinking about his past, he did not feel good about his decision, but he also knew that Tao Xing was right. This was not Cloud Sea Jie. He was surrounded by enemies here, and he would die if he was the least bit careless. At that time, it wouldn't just be risking his life. If he was in trouble, even these people would not have good endings.

Zuo Mo was about to speak.

Suddenly, a strange sound pierced the noisy street from the distance.

It was like a flute but not a flute, the sound was thin as a hair and just barely discernable.

The loud streets instantly quieted. This sound seemed to have a power that could soothe one's mind and unconsciously calm them.

A figure slowly walked in from the direction of the city gate. A little black dot slowly grew into a tall figure.

Snowy-white robes, eyes like lacquer, the black hair feel like a waterfall onto a face that was so beautiful it did not seem like one of a man. There seemed to be an indiscernible power that made one unable to move their gaze. Around this figure several drops of transparent water mischievously condensed and scattered like a school of fish.

That strange and bewitching sound was produced by these water droplets.

When this person walked closer, that feeling of serenity grew stronger.

He walked slowly, his eye looking forwards as though he did not see any other people. His movements were graceful and ethereal like that of an immortal.

The sounds produced by the water droplets were extremely pleasing to hear. The more Zuo Mo listened, the more enchanted he became. Some beautiful memories appeared in his mind's eye. All the worries, all his depression, they all dissipated, A smile unconsciously rose onto his face.

Suddenly, the sun script at Zuo Mo's chest lit up. A slender burning flow of power circulated automatically around his body. Zuo Mo shook. The scene in front of him changed, the pictures shattering. The voice that reached into his mind was still pleasant to hear, but had lost its enchanting power.

Zuo Mo was shocked. The people around him all still had dreamy smiles and caused his hairs to stand on end.

Such a powerful mo sound!

He raised his head and stared hard at the figure. Who was this

person?

The other seemed to pause slightly in his footsteps, glancing at Zuo Mo out of the corner of his eyes but he did not stop and continued to walk forward.

The entire street was deathly silent. Everyone had that strange smile on their face.

“Hmph!”

A cold snort which was not loud rang over Great Peace City like a roar of thunder. The faintly discernable mo sound seemed to have been pushed and instantly dissipated. The people who had been bewitched seemed to wake up. Their faces became ashen. They looked in respect and terror at the man in the snowy-white robes.

Tao Xing also woke up. When he saw the white-robed male in the center of the street, his expression changed dramatically. Terror rose on his face as he exclaimed, “Qi Diao Yu!”

Hearing this, Zuo Mo also reacted and hurriedly asked, “Qi Diao Yu?”

“Why has he come to Great Peace City?” Tao Xing murmured to himself with a white face.

Qi Diao Yu’s figure had disappeared right as the sound that had enchanted their hearts had also disappeared. The entire street

became busy and loud again but there was still a trace of terror that remained on everyone's faces.

“Qi Diao Yu is one of the most famous experts right now. He reached the peak of general level when he was twenty three. In search of a breakthrough, he came to Great Peace City. In the one year he was here, he challenged and defeated many heroes. Then he disappeared. I had not expected him to return to Great Peace City again!” Tao Xing had a reminiscing expression. “That was about three years ago. Now Great Peace City will be busy!”

“So strong!” Zuo Mo sighed. Even he had been caught just now. The other's power was immeasurable.

“He really is powerful. He also came out of nowhere and has a mysterious background. Even now, no one knows what family he belongs to. Pang Chen, the person you killed, became famous because he managed to withstand thirty of Qi Diao Yu's moves before being defeated. You can imagine just how powerful Qi Diao Yu was back then.” An expression of respect came onto Tao Xing's face.

“He's even more powerful than before!” Zuo Mo's expression was grave. He did not know how great Qi Diao Yu's power was now, but he believed that if Pang Chen once again fought Qi Diao Yu, he would not survive one move!

Even the pressure that the old thieving baldy Ding Zhen had given Zuo Mo was not as strong as Qi Diao Yu.

Qi Diao Yu had not purposely released that sound. That was just the weak ripples of power leaking out from the water droplets. The after-effects were already so strong. If the other used their full power, how terrifying would it be!

Zuo Mo was not sure how many of the other's moves he would be able to withstand.

This was the strongest mo that Zuo Mo had encountered until now!

“He went to the Mo Skill Steles?” Zuo Mo suddenly said.

“Let's go to the Mo Skills Steles tomorrow,” Tao Xing hurriedly said.

Zuo Mo's expression suddenly changed. “Damn it, A Wen is still at the Mo Skills Steles!” As he spoke, he leapt into the air and sprinted towards the Mo Skills Steles.

He was extremely panicked. A Wen, do not provoke this demon!

At a full sprint, he was extremely fast and in a blink, he reached the Mo Skill Steles. When he arrived, he instantly sighed in relief. Demon Qi's figure had disappeared into the deeper regions of the stele forest. It seemed that his goal should be the Mo Skill Steles at the very end.

A Wen was sitting with a dazed expression under a different

stone stele.

This guy was having an epiphany again?

Zuo Mo paused and didn't know to laugh or cry. He then sighed in wonder. A Wen's talent was really outstanding! He had sent the other people to copy the contents of what was on the Mo Skill Steles so everyone would have a copy but up until now, the only one who had an epiphany was A Wen.

Even more shocking was that this was his second epiphany!

Zuo Mo was becoming slightly jealous. He had comprehended a lot from the Mo Skill Steles, but he had not entered the state of epiphany. This guy had entered it two times!

Zuo Mo shook his head and smiled. His anxiety settling down, he started to read once again.

His speed of progression was very fast. Even if he encountered a problem, he would understand after some thought. Right now, he had the strength of a general level, and he could examine the problems from a deeper level of power. He naturally solved these problems easily.

The Mo Skill Steles quickly resumed their normal levels of activity. Qi Diao Yu went into the deepest part of the stele forest and did not affect the people reading on the outer regions. The busy flows of people appeared again.

Zuo Mo's steps gradually slowed. As he went deeper, the content on the stone steles became harder to understand. He needed to slowly think and ponder over their lessons.

As he went deeper, there were fewer people around him.

Zuo Mo's surprise increased. He found something unique about the Mo Skill Steles.

Starting from the twenty second mo skill stele, the content on the stele was not just limited to mo skills. He found many descriptions on it that were similar to spells and yao arts.

At the beginning, he had thought this was a coincidence but as similarities in the content increased, he found to his shock this was not a coincidence!

Spells, yao arts, mo skills, Zuo Mo had learned all three areas before. Even though his cultivation of spells was not outstanding, he had read many jade scrolls and his fundamental knowledge was deep. As to the yao arts, while they were not as outstanding as his mo skills, he was able to cast the Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art and could be called an expert in the yao world.

This meant that he did not face too many barriers when he reached lessons on these areas, but he couldn't help but feel puzzled.

Had Shi Zi Ming been skilled in the three powers?

As he went deeper, this puzzlement increased. Shi Zi Ming's theories, no matter if it was spells, yao arts, or mo skills, were accurate and profound. Even a freak like Zuo Mo that was skilled in all three felt it was difficult to understand in many places.

Was there really someone in the world that was born knowing this?

At a corner not far from the Mo Skill Steles.

“Which stele he at now?” A pointy-faced man lowered his voice to ask. But his gaze did not leave Zuo Mo who was in front of the stone stele.

“Twenty sixth.” His fellow with purple hair and a black face gave an accurate answer.

“Is this guy just looking around,” the pointy-faced man said hesitantly. “This speed is slightly fast.”

“Slightly fast? It is too fast!” The purple haired man said coldly.

“Yes, to reach and read the twenty sixth mo skill stele, it is not possible!” the pointy-faced man said unconcernedly. “Has he

discovered that we are watching him?”

“Who says it is not possible? You forgot that person,” the purple haired man said.

“Who?” the pointy-haired man asked.

“The one in there!” The purple-haired man pushed his lips towards the deepest part of the stele forest. “Did you forget what that person did in the past?”

“Hiss!” The pointy-faced man inhaled sharply and his face paled. “How can I forget? In one day and night, comprehended thirty pieces of the stone stele, that speed had been something no one else achieved before and no one else since!”

“It is true that no one did it before him, but it’s not certain that there is no one else after him.” The purple haired man stared attentively at Zuo Mo and said to himself, “I have a feeling that this Xiao Mo Ge is not an average person.”

“You don’t think he’s just strolling by?” the pointy-faced man said in disbelief.

“No.” the purple haired man said, “Notice how long he is spending in front of every stele. The deeper the stele is, the longer he spends on it. He has spent more than two hours in front of this mo skill stele. He is clearly thinking, and not just glancing at the content!

“Then ... then isn’t he ...” the pointy-faced man stammered.

“Just like how Qi Diao Yu was in the past!” the purple haired man said the second half of his fellow’s sentence. He had been stationed at Great Peace City for more than a decade. His daily task for the family was extremely dull. It was to observe the mo that were studying at the stone steles.

Normal people would not notice these details but they could estimate many things from these details.

In his eyes, the effects of Zuo Mo’s speed in going through the stone steles was more shocking than defeating Pang Chen.

The purple haired man stopped talking. His eyes flashed with a different light as he stared at Zuo Mo that was in deep thought in front of the stele. He had a strong feeling that another powerful person was going to appear in Great Peace City!

Focusing, he said to his fellow, “Quick, report this to the main steward.”

The pointy-faced man did not dare to hesitate and disappeared into the shadows.

The purple haired man’s eyes suddenly turned in another direction of shadow within the stele forest. Right there, just now, another figure had flashed by. His eyes instantly narrowed.

Without thinking, he knew who it was. An old opponent. There were also other observers in the other shadows.

All of them had come!

It seemed that everyone had great expectations for this person!

Chapter 579 - Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus

Their battlefield spanned hundreds of li. Blinding balls of light in various colors lit up the sky. The sound of explosions and sharp howls continued constantly.

Sword energies, spells, talismans,, lights of various colors were like rainbows as countless figures in battle formations flashed between the waves of light, chasing, fighting, all kinds of moves.

People were occasionally crushed into dust, or fell from the sky into the Cloud Sea.

This was especially with with the fighting between the jindan of both sides where one full-powered attack could create balls of light that were dozens of mu in size. They were like miniature suns. The rampaging wave of air spreading into all directions.

One side wanted to end as soon as possible. The other pressed the offense as their defense. From the beginning, the fighting was at a high intensity level.

————

Feng Yue quickly felt the pressure of the enemy attack.

They had expected a quick collapse of the other's forces shortly after initial contact. The other was like a glue that stayed on them. The other's strength was not high and their fighting methods were

not outstanding. In her view, they were scattered and disorganized.

But such a chaotic troop had fought them here for an hour and were not at a disadvantage.

Why was it like this?

She knew that her combat xiu were exhausted from their trip and knew that the other had more people, but in her view these factors should not have been enough to delay their progress. Their collective strength was a whole level higher, they were better trained, and they had more combat experience. In her experience, they should be cleaning up the battlefield right now rather than fighting at a standstill.

Feng Yue forced herself to calm down. She felt unused to Jiang Zhe's absence but her training and experience quickly showed itself.

She examined the battlefield.

————

Lei Peng's eyes were bloodshot from bloodlust. He was the sharpest blade of Black Turtle Camp. That door size gold crystal sword caused all talismans to shatter wherever it passed. In this moment, he seemed undefeatable.

They were like a burning hot rod of metal piercing through a piece of butter.

The two sides had fought to a battle of attrition.

Ma Fan's eyes were not relaxed like usual but were as sharp as an eagle. The situation right now was very beneficial for them. Black Turtle Camp was at full strength and they had the advantage of numbers. Choosing a battle of attrition was very appropriate for them. The longer they managed to drag out the fight, the more beneficial it would be for them.

Black Turtle Camp had just been created. It was fine when the momentum of the fighting was in their favor. But if the other's presence was too strong, their morale, in all likelihood, would crumble.

A chaotic battle like this suited their utilization of micro-tactics.

As expected, after the panic of their first battle passed, Black Turtle Camp quickly adjusted. The tactics that Ma Fan had designed had a clear speciality. That is, each little team's tactic was designed around a core member.

Those that were the core members were either members of Sky Peak Platoon or very experienced combat xiu. As long as the tactical core of each team was not panicked, the entire team would be stabilized.

These cores members did not fail Ma Fan's trust. They quickly steadied their team, their members found their resolve, and they became even stronger.

On the chaotic battlefield, the xiuzhe of the Black Turtle Camp were becoming more and more at ease.

In the past, the combat xiu of Sky Peak Platoon had been handpicked by Lil' Miss. The great majority of them were in now jindan, and their daily training regimen was much harder than normal combat xiu.

For a very long time in the past, Sky Peak Platoon had been the sharpest knife in Lil' Miss' hand!

Each of them were elite members that had been through many battles. Even when facing the jindan of the other camp, they were not at a disadvantage.

Feng Yui quickly discovered Ma Fan's plan to draw her into a battle of attrition. Her brow creased and she said in a cold voice, "Do not linger in battle! Reorganize for a charge using a battle formation!"

The Xuan Kong Temple combat xiu systematically disengaged from their opponents.

Their speed was extremely fast and the combat xiu of Black Turtle Camp could not keep up. The talismans that Turtle Island combat xiu had were good but that was only in comparison with an average faction. When compared with a great entity like Xuan Kong Temple, they were very lacking.

Feng Yue swept the enemy with a glance. In such a short amount of time, she had lost about a hundred people. Even though the other side's had definitely suffered more losses, she still felt fury.

She had been forced into a standstill against a troop like this. This could not be forgiven!

Feng Yue's eyes turned icy.

The combat xiu gathered around her. Everyone looked at her and waited for her orders.

Feng Yue took a deep breath and raised her right hand.

“Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus Battle Formation!”

The eyes of the combat xiu lit up. They moved closer to each other and their low morale quickly rose.

Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus Battle Formation!

One of the classic battle formations of Xuan Kong Temple which

possessed shocking power in its charge!

In the battle over Cold Mountain Jie, The formation that Jiang Zhe had used the most was the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus Battle Formation. Under the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus Battle Formation, even the domineering mo had turned to ash!

The fire lotus was unparalleled!

Each of the four great sects had their own unique battle tactics that formed their own systems. But in terms of offensive charge strength, Kun Lun's Transverse Leap Sword Battle Formation, Tian Huan's Celestial Wheel Battle Formation, Xi Xuan's Flowing Gold Battle Formation, and Xuan Kong Temple's Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus Battle Formation were the strongest!

Red snakes of fire burned and coiled around the arms of every Xuan Kong Temple combat xiu.

The other side was shrinking back. This movement caused them to feel excited.

When Ma Fan saw the other side's combat xiu withdraw from their battles, he knew the other had discovered his intentions. However, he had expected this. He used Lei Peng's charge to push into the other's troops in order to force them into a battle of attrition. As long as the other side's battle general was not stupid,

he believed the other would eventually respond to this tactic.

Would a battle general from Xuan Kong Temple be stupid? He did not believe it.

However, he was slightly shocked at the other's quick response. He knew that the true battle had just begun. The greenhorns of Black Turtle Camp had started to adjust to the rhythm of the battlefield. After this, they would be able to tolerate more pressure and their morale would not crumble so easily.

"They are going to charge. It should be the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus!" Nian Lu's eyes narrowed as he panted lightly. He had been fighting intensely with a jindan just now.

Ma Fan nodded. He also recognized it. Ever since they had learned they would fight against Xuan Kong Temple, they had collected intelligence on the battle tactics of Xuan Kong Temple. Naturally, Ma Fan had read them.

He licked his lips and a cold light flashed through his eyes.

"Have everyone prepare. I hadn't thought that this great gift would be for them. They are really lucky!"

Nian Lu snickered and went back to prepare.

Black Turtle Camp quickly formed a circular formation that looked just the same as the average defensive formation.

“Pay attention! All of you, pay attention!”

“Listen! Do not panic! Just do what we usually practice!”

“Don’t look at them, they are trying to scare you, there’s nothing big, didn’t we just kill a hundred of them just now?”

Every experienced combat xiu was trying to raise the morale of their fellows. They had only ever practiced this battle formation in training and had never used it in real battle.

This battle formation was something that Ma Fan had spent great time and effort to create. His initial goal was to be able to stop the three section wave killing charge of Vermillion Bird Camp. Even though it could theoretically stop it, because he never used it outside of practice, Ma Fan was not very confident.

However, since the other was using an offensive formation, then this battle formation was the most suited to be used against it.

All of this is for you!

Ma Fan stared hard at the other side. His expression when he licked his lips was like a wolf in the middle of a hunt! He was slightly anxious but his expression revealed he was more excited!

At this moment, the other moved!

In the sky, thousands of lines of fire appeared like a storm of fire!

The howls rumbled and the Cloud Sea shook!

The snakes of fire wrapped around the arms of every Xuan Kong Temple combat xiu suddenly grew multiple times. What was most shocking were those jindan xiuzhe. Their right arms were completely enveloped under the burning flames. The color of their fire was deeper than normal combat xiu and the sound caused by their flames was not loud, but extremely deep and stunning to the mind.

They accelerated, accelerated, accelerated!

The roar increased. The terrifying wave of air was like a huge axe that cleaved apart the Cloud Sea under them, forming an stunning sight as the fire cut an expanding wave through the Cloud Sea!

The jindan xiuzhe at the very front had a completely red face. A long tail streaked off the flames on his arms!

His pupils suddenly contracted as he shouted angrily, “Rage!”

His right fist that was pulled behind his body punched forward with all of his power!

“Rage!”

The combat xiu behind him shouted and punched in unison!

Almost a thousand fiery red fist energies left their hands. Like fire dragons charging out of the cage, they howled and leapt forward!

The closer to the rear the fist energies were, the faster the energies were. Starting from the last fiery fist energy, they continued to collide into the flames ahead of them and then into the ones further ahead.

The layers of collisions formed a bigger and bigger fiery fist energy. It was like a flame monster that continuously cannibalized its fellows to grow larger!

In a flash, the fiery fist energies formed into one enormous fireball!

The surface of the fire ball constantly shifted. It was possible to faintly discern an enormous figure that was trailing a long tail of flame.

Inside the ball of fire, the enormous figure grew clearer. Its features sharpened, the flames on the surface melting like ice. A furious face appeared in front of everyone’s eyes!

There seemed to be an invisible hand that was sculpting these scorching flames!

Bam!

Like the crack of glass, the flames outside the ball of fire dispersed to sparks and dissipated in the wind.

Among the spray of sparks, an angrily bodhisattva thirty zhang tall shot into the air. His right hand was holding a bright red fire lotus that was multiple times larger than his body. Like a meteor, it shot towards Black Turtle Camp that had shrunk into a circle!

In this moment, the sky seemed to turn red from the burning flames.

The Cloud Sea underneath their feet drastically crumbled.

The angry eyes of the flame lotus bodhisattva were indifferent as though he was staring down at ants.

Ma Fan did not dare to breathe. He started hard at the charging fire lotus bodhisattva, a crazy expression rising in his eyes.

Suddenly, his pupils expanded. His flying sword which had already been raised sliced down with all his might.

“Kill!”

Chapter 580 - Arcing Rainbow Battle Formation

There was a ball of light in each member of Black Turtle Camp's hand. The colors were different and from afar, it seemed that many lanterns of different colors had been lit.

But if one looked closely, they would find to their shock that these lanterns of different colors were arranged in layers, one over the other. There were more than thirty six layers that had formed an irregular curve.

When Ma Fan's shout of "Kill" sounded!

All the xiuzhe in the outermost layer of troops unhesitatingly threw out the balls of light in their hands in unison.

Woo!

An arc of light that was like a rainbow suddenly flew out of the circular formation and headed towards the bodhisattva's fire lotus.

Woo woo woo!

The howls sounded, and the arcs of light fit together in layers. They were densely packed and in a tenth of a breath, thirty six arcs of light were released!

The color of each light arc was different. Thirty six colored arcs of different colors folded over each other and formed an even more varied rainbow!

Arcing Rainbow Battle Formation!

This was the defensive formation that Ma Fan had created for Black Turtle Camp. For this formation, he had spent a great deal of time, spending extreme amounts of effort and made countless trips to Golden Crow Camp!

The moment this blinding rainbow arc formed, unprecedented excitement spread into every fibre of Ma Fan's muscles. His body uncontrollably trembled.

Everyone could not attend to their rest. They unconsciously stopped breathing.

No one would know how much they had suffered to train this battle formation to completion or how much punishment they had endured! Each person, from Ma Fan to the newest combat xiu of the camp had repeatedly practiced!

That blinding beautiful rainbow was just as difficult to form as it was beautiful.

Thirty six arcs of light. If one of them was incorrectly formed, it would mess up the other arcs of light and disperse the light in a burst of fireworks that had no effect.

The bodhisattva seemed to feel danger. It gave a sky-shaking howl, his hands holding up the lotus and smashing it down!

The rainbow was like a wind that swept across the sky and silently appeared in front of the bodhisattva.

The fresh red flame!

The blindingly beautiful rainbow!

The two collided.

The light that was produced pierced the world but none of the jindan xiuzhe blinked. They stared with wide eyes, afraid to miss a single detail!

The first light arc shattered!

The second light arc shattered!

The tenth light arc cracked!

The eleventh light arc cracked!

The eighteen arc of light stopped the fire losuu!

The Rage Lotus Bodhisattva shouted angrily, throwing himself into the fire lotus. The fire lotus exploded!

Breaking the arc of light!

The twenty third arc of light!

The fire lotus seemed to now be planted on this arc of light, as if it was grown there as decoration. No matter now it moved, the arc of light did not budge.

Boom!

The fire lotus suddenly exploded. The blinding red light suddenly lit up in a patch of burning white light. Even the jindan had to close their eyes!

The twenty fourth layer shattered! The twenty fifth layer shattered!

The twenty seventh layer held and did not retreat a sliver. The rampaging waves of hot air flowed along the curved surface of the arcs and vented towards the two sides.

The jindan under Feng Yue's command had pale faces. The strong backlash from their failed attack had instantly wounded them. Some xiuzhe of lower cultivation spat out blood and fell forward. Their teammates hurriedly grabbed hold of them. However, the faces of these xiuzhe were red from overexertion.

They clearly would not be able to survive.

But no one cared about this. Everyone was staring at that arc of light that seemed gossamer thin with dazed expressions!

It had been it had been stopped

How, how was it possible

How could the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus be stopped?

Feng Yue looked dazedly at that beautiful rainbow air, her face filled with disbelief. No one knew better than she did the power of the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus. She believed that even the other three great sects could not so easily stop the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus!

This had been stopped

After staring dazedly for a few breaths, Feng Yue suddenly reacted and her face paled. The Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus was powerful, but it had a weakness. It was too fierce. If it was stopped, it easily caused severe backlash.

But because it was usually unstoppable, this flaw was not usually remembered.

Until now!

This weakness exposed. Feng Yue looked around and felt even worse. About half of the combat xiu were wounded. For the first time, she stared at the other side as though she just met them. She almost bit through her lips.

An unknown battalion, from an unknown jie... ..

Even now, she did not know what the other battalion was called. But a battalion like this had stopped the Bodhisattva's Raging Lotus Battle Formation that shook all of the Four Realms!

She stared hard at the other as though she wanted to imprint them in her mind.

————

“Hahahaha! I just knew! I just knew! What's there to be afraid of!” Lei Peng's loud voice could be heard from a distance. His expression was tired but he was very excited.

Nian Lu also had a big smile on his face. His handsome face looked now like that of a child.

Excitement was on Ma Fan's face but he could not manage to say a word. He was too excited, really too excited, unprecedentedly excited!

The Arcing Rainbow Battle Formation was his masterpiece!

He knew that he was not an outstanding battle general, but since Lil' Miss Daren had given him control of Black Turtle Camp, he could never fail the other's hopes. The xiuzhe of different types, the various spells, he had used shocking patience to slowly merge them into one.

There were no complex tactics, but an astounding number of micro-tactics.

He might have thought of the Arcing Rainbow Battle Formation but the one who perfected it was Golden Crow Camp.

He knew his own limits.

He knew that Black Turtle Camp, based on their composition, would not be able to fight offensively and dominate like Vermillion Bird Camp; what he had trained Black Turtle Camp for were battles of attrition and defense.

He slowly pulled and pushed this Black Turtle Camp together by the skin of his teeth.

There was nothing that could excite him, the creator, more than having Black Turtle Camp show its power.

But at this time, he suppressed the excitement inside. He observed the other side. When he saw the other side's low morale

and wounded xiuzhe, he instantly sighed in relief.

This was the debut battle of the Arcing Rainbow Battle Formation. Everyone, including him, did not hold anything back in reserve. Right now, they were pretty much at the end of their rope.

Fortunately, both sides were close to exhaustion!

————

The two troops strangely held the standoff.

Both sides had the same plan. They were waiting for the reinforcements from their fellows.

In Ma Fan's mind, Vermillion Bird Camp was invincible. If Vermillion Bird Camp came, they could kill this battalion even if it was double this size. In Feng Yue's mind, Gao Xuan was leading five hundred members of the Jiangzi Battalion, the core battalion of Xuan Kong Temple! Even if the enemy battalion was multiple times this size, five hundred Jiangzi Battalion members could kill them all!

Suddenly, Ma Fan and Feng Yue showed expressions of joy at the same time.

Almost at the same time, two battalions appeared behind their respective fellows.

Vermillion Bird Camp!

Jiangzi Battalion!

Lil' Miss' gaze swept the battlefield and instantly gleaned a general idea of the situation. He gave Ma Fan a look of praise.

But when his gaze landed on the other battalion, his gaze suddenly turned icy and his smile grew.

When he found that there were only five hundred people in the reinforcements, Lil' Miss' pride came. "Wei Ran!"

"This subordinate is here!" Wei Ran hurriedly said.

"Pick five hundred and go meet them!" Lil' Miss' smile was like a flower, his voice filled with pride and iciness.

"Yes!" Wei Ran's expression was normal as he responded.

A battalion of five hundred people quickly separated out of Vermillion Bird Camp.

When Gao Xuan looked at the unharmed Feng Yue, he instantly sighed in relief. But when he looked closely, he was shocked.

It seemed that Feng Yue had suffered a significant loss!

Their morale was low and almost half of the combat xiu were injured.

Narrowing his eyes, coldness flashed through Gao Xuan's eyes. When had Xuan Kong Temple ever lost so severely?

He did not say anything. The entire troop flowed into position front of Feng Yue's battalion like mercury. His expression was normal and steady as he stared at the other side. There was no change in expression.

But when he noticed a battalion of approximately the same size approach their ranks, his gaze suddenly turned sharp!

Even as composed as he was, he couldn't help but feel slight anger.

When had Jiangzi Battalion been disrespected so?

The Jiangzi Battalion always fought with less against many. They could fly in and out among enemies multiple times their number and they were unstoppable!

When had the enemy used the same number of people to fight Jiangzi Battalion?

Those ignorant had no fear!

Gao Xuan's heart was cold and murderousness spread.

Wei Ran looked calmly at the other side.

He was one of the commanders that had followed Lil' Miss for the longest time. Unlike Ma Fan, he did not show great talent in the beginning, but following Lil' Miss he had learned as he fought in battle, his talent as a battle general was like the jade encased in stone that was gradually exposed.

Lil' Miss' judgment of him was that he had the style of a great general.

Of course, with Lil' Miss' crazy personality, he couldn't help but feel Wei Ran was slightly gentle, but this did not affect Wei Ran's position in Vermillion Bird Camp.

Wei Ran had participated from start to finish in establishing the new tactical plan.

Even though he could not compare to Lil' Miss that understood xiuzhe, yao, and mo, other than Lil' Miss no one understood the new tactics better than he did.

Also

His gaze landed on Ma Fan and he couldn't help but feel a thread of admiration.

For any battle general, being able to create a battalion based on their own fighting style was an unparalleled temptation.

Wei Ran moved his gaze away.

He looked towards the enemy. He could see that the other's troop was the elite of elite but without knowing it, the fighting spirit burning inside him and boiled his blood.

The fighting spirit in his eyes was no disguised any longer!

This battle, he had to

-win!

Chapter 581 - Shifting Star Sand

Zuo Mo was immersed in reading. Shi Zi Ming was an uncanny genius. He had never cultivated but his knowledge of power was exceptionally accurate. In his descriptions, the fundamentals of each system were clearly described and Zuo Mo gained a lot.

It was the first time that the three power systems were so clear in Zuo Mo's mind. In the past, he had spent a lot of effort training the three powers but had never put them together. The three formed their own systems, and there were many branches in technique to each. Spells, yao arts, mo skills, which one did not have millions of techniques?

Not to mention identifying the roots of all three powers, just identifying the roots of one system was difficult. The variations of each system were like the branching veins of the leaf, there was the primary branch and the secondary branches within that system. Those that could gain perspective and identify the primary branches were the top experts.

And to understand this with all three powers, who could do that?

Looking at the soaring stone steles, Zuo Mo couldn't help but feel as though he was staring at a tall mountain. If this was written by someone unparalleled in strength, Zuo Mo would not be so shocked.

But a mo that did not cultivate any mo skill could see all the profound mysteries. This talent, even three hundred years later,

was something that was astounding.

Zuo Mo had the deepest impression of Shi Zi Ming's description of the three powers.

Because he cultivated shen power, the three powers in his body were merged into one and were connected to each other. He already had a slight understanding of the connection between the three.

His understanding was very vague. When he saw Shi Zi Ming's description of the connection, it was like a great bell and he understood many things.

Great joy came from the bottom of his heart.

He stared at the stone tablet, his mind was unusually clear. The three powers inside his body flowed and moved.

It was midnight now. The firmament above his head was filled with a sea of stars.

In the corner, the purple haired man's face was filled with incredulity as he murmured to himself. "The thirty second stele! The thirty second stele"

He turned his face to look at the deepest part of the stele forest. He suddenly had a thought. The two people that had advanced the fastest through the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles had appeared at the

same time. Was there fate involved?

That year, he had watched as Qi Diao Yu walked into the Mo Skill Steles. Now, there was another youth that broke Qi Diao Yu's record. Many memories surged up and he sighed.

But he knew, this was a night without rest for all the powers of Great Peace City!

No faction would not act to try and recruit such a talented genius!

At this time, a ray of starlight suddenly came down from the sea of stars and landed on Xiao Mo Ge in front of the stone stele!

The ray of light was thick and dots of light sand fell down.

Golden light suddenly came from Xiao Mo Ge's body that flickered like fire. Even from far away, the purple haired man could feel the scorching heat.

The star sand's light was not blinding, but among the shine of the stars, it was pretty to look at.

The golden light was like a whirlpool that continuously pulled in the star sand.

A worldly apparition!

The purple haired man looked in shock at the sky. The vast number of stars were slowly spinning, threads of light forming a ray of light. Such a spectacular scene caused his mind to almost lose control.

An unfamiliar and distant term jumped into his mind—Shifting Star Sand!

In a deep part of the Stele forest, Qi Diao Yu was like an old monk meditating in front of a stone forest. He had maintained this position for more than twelve hours. The indifference on his face had disappeared and what had replaced it was concentration. That proud genius that was unable to be touched had disappeared. Qi Diao Yu at this time was like a normal mo youth, less of the indifference and more of a gentleness.

He suddenly raised his head and his face, one that rarely showed any expression, changed.

A ray of light fell from the vast expanse of stars and landed somewhere nearby in the stele forest.

“Shifting Star Sand”

His eyes lit up and he lightly jumped onto the top of the stone stele. He was instantly able to get a clear view.

It was him!

A thread of surprise flashed across Qi Diao Yu's eyes. He had some impression of Zuo Mo. It was the first one to break free from his sound of enchantment when he had entered the city. It was this youth!

Gazing for a long time, he was silent.

Shifting Star Sand

—————

When Zuo Mo had reached the twenty sixth mo skill stele, all the major factions in Great Peace City had started to secretly pay attention. As time went on and Zuo Mo advanced, every faction's nerves tightened.

When Zuo Mo broke Qi Diao Yu's past record, Great Peace City was deathly silent but the gazes of the major factions all gathered here.

Another peerless genius had appeared!

But when the worldly apparition appeared, the Great Peace City which had been having turbulent underflows instantly turned into chaos.

Countless people flew into the sky and stared in shock at the pillar of light that came from the sky into the stele forest!

A worldly apparition!

The mo that were familiar with this event couldn't help but shouting the unfamiliar words "Shifting Star Sand." Excitement, shock, astonishment, puzzlement mixed on the faces of the mo.

Other than the starlight, the sky above Great Peace City was almost completely black. Almost all the mo flew into the sky.

Lan Tian Long looked at the ray of starlight with a complex expression. He had more avenues of information than normal people and he knew who was causing the worldly apparition.

He suddenly felt relieved that he had retreated at the city gates. Before this, he had the idea of recruiting the other, but when the news that the other had broken Qi Diao Yu's record, he sighed inside. A genius of this level was not one that the Lan Family could recruit.

But when he personally saw Zuo Mo cause the Shifting Star Sands, while shocked, he couldn't help but snicker.

He knew that tomorrow, Great Peace City was going to be busy!

Those factions that wanted to recruit this person, tonight

This really was interesting!

Ye Ling looked at the stars with an excited expression.

All Hail The King!

Even though he always believed that Daren was someone strong that could become the king, when he personally saw Daren cause a worldly apparition, his body uncontrollably trembled!

He raised his head to look at the vast expanse of stars that was slowly spinning with devoutness on his face.

In the compound, everyone was gaping. And Zuo Mo's subordinates all had ecstatic expressions and could not suppress their excitement.

Tao Xing, Tang Fei, and the others were stuck dumb where they were with wide gaping mouths.

But if one had to be said to be the most shocked, it would be Ceng

Lian'er

No one knew better than she did what the power Zuo Mo cultivated inside his body was, but

She looked at the ray of starlight that was coming down from the sky with shock in her eyes.

He clearly cultivated Sun Shen Power, how could he attract the power of the stars?

This was not possible!

She had originally thought she had seen through Zuo Mo. She had even seen all of his memory fragments and she also knew of the chaotic power flows inside his body.

The Sun Shen Power was peerless in its dominance!

But this also meant that Sun Shen power strongly rejected other types of power.

How could he cause an apparition of the stars?

————

The moment that Zuo Mo caused the Shifting Stars Sand, Pu Yao

jumped up as though his behind was on fire. And Wei who was usually composed abruptly stood up.

“Shifting Star Sand!”

The two of them exclaimed at the same time.

Pu Yao’s bloody pupil was extremely wide as though he was seeing a ghost. The indifference on Wei’s face had disappeared to be replaced by shock.

“This is not possible!”

“How is he doing it?”

The two exclaimed again. They exchanged a look and found the disbelief in each other’s eyes.

The two raised their faces. In the sea of consciousness, the star sand fell like snow. When a particle of star sand entered their bodies, their figures would grow a sliver more clear.

After a moment of silence, their shock gradually faded from their faces.

Pu Yao suddenly thought of the Stars in Daytime that had appeared in the past. That first worldly apparition had changed Zuo Mo’s fate. If it was not for that first Stars in Daytime, Zuo Mo

would have never left Wu Kong Sword Sect.

Wei's eyes grew brighter like the stars in night. "He really is a genius!"

Looking at Wei's expression, Pu Yao became wary. He said coldly, "Don't even think about it! Humph, what your set is, in the end, it is just sending him to die!"

Wei's expression suddenly changed as he exclaimed, "Not good! The three seeds!"

Pu Yao stilled and then his expression changed drastically!

The master of the three was Zuo Mo!

The yao art house was empty of people in the deep of night.

In a corner of the yao art house, there was countless dots of star sand that floated like fireflies around the stele.

The stele suddenly produced a suction force and the star sand entered the stele.

The damaged stele gradually lit up.

A weak presence was like ripples in the water, faintly discernable.

In a deep cave in a mountain valley.

The star sand suddenly travelled through the layers of granite and shrouded the entire black pool

The silent black pool seemed to be awakened from a deep sleep and slowly shifted. Droplets of black liquid continuously broke free of the pool, floated up and accurately caught the star sand like little black insects.

The moving black liquid consumed the star sand and dropped back into the black pool.

As time passed, a layer of serene starlight flashed on the black pond.

In the black pond, a figure slowly floated up.

The serene star light was like a thin membrane that tightly covered the surface of this figure.

A presence like that of the water and the moon filled the cave.

At a sacrificial altar in the desert.

The star sand seemed to be caught by the fierce wind that continuously spun around the sacrificial altar. Dots of star sand entered the sacrificial altar and the patterns of the sacrificial altar started to slowly shift.

The sacrificial altar flashed with light. In this black and remote desert, it was blindingly bright like an enormous star.

At the center of the sacrificial altar, black figures roiled. Threads of starlight flashed in and out. The star light seemed to melt into the black shadows like threads of ice. The black shadows were dyed with a slight layer of star light.

A deep roar came out of the black shadows.

Chapter 582 - Honing Their Blades

When the stars shifted, they would produce a vast amount of pure star power. This power would turn to star sand and enter the bodies of people. This sand was like the sand that people used to hone blades. Star sand could be used to refine the bodies of these people from the inside to the out to perfect it.

This was the Shifting Star Sands, one of the most famous worldly apparitions. The light of the stars was not as domineering and burning as the light of the sun, nor as soft as the light of the moon. The stars were like sand and were the best power to hone the body.

However, causing this worldly apparition was a matter of chance. In reality, even now, no one understood how to cause a worldly apparition. But everyone knew that if a person caused a worldly apparition during cultivation, they would be an extraordinary person.

Zuo Mo did not know that all of Great Peace City was now exploding in excitement because of him!

He was immersed in a wondrous world.

There seemed to be countless stars slowly moving around him. A power that seemed both familiar and unfamiliar continuously permeated his body.

Zuo Mo recognized it. That was star sand!

Each particle of star sand was extremely hard. With their sharp edges, they slowly advanced and moved in. Zuo Mo felt there seemed to be sandpaper slowly smoothing out his unrefined flesh and blood.

There was no pain, but an indescribably comfortable feeling.

It was intoxicating.

————

There was a faint smile on Gongsun Cha's face. No one knew what he was thinking.

Everyone beside him had extremely serious faces. They stared at the battlefield and didn't dare to move their eyes away.

Because Wei Ran was losing.

The strength of the other's battle tactics surpassed their imagination. When the dozens of brigadier levels had been merged into Vermillion Bird Camp and they started using the new tactics, everyone had been full of confidence. In the practice spars inside the camp, the power of their new tactics was multiple times as strong as their previous three section wave killing charge!

Many people had been rubbing their hands eagerly, wanting to find A Zha Ge and having another battle.

When Lil' Miss had Wei Ran decided to face the enemy with equal numbers, no one had objected. They knew that Lil' Miss wanted to test the new tactics. Everyone was filled with confidence and anticipation. They believed that Wei Ran would definitely win.

Yet the reality was so cruel.

This little battalion of five hundred was unusually powerful.

At the beginning, the two were evenly matched, but as time went on, the balance slowly tilted and Wei Ran was on the losing end.

What caused their expressions to turn serious was that Wei Ran had not made any mistakes. Even so, his advantage was slowly slipping away. This was occurring at an extremely slow rate, but everyone had experienced hundreds of fights and could see this.

There was still a faint small smile on Lil' Miss' face that was as bashful as that of the neighbor's boy. No one knew what he was thinking.

Feng Yue looked dazedly at the battlefield. She could see that Gao Xuan was slowly gaining the advantage but she was still shocked.

No, it was amazed!

She had been shocked when her Rage Lotus Bodhisattva had been stopped! But what this scene in front of her gave was shock, was fear!

This was Jiangzhi Battalion!

The battalion that had killed countless mo and just taken over Cold Mountain Jie!

Every Jiangzhi Battalion member had been picked with care. They had outstanding talent, and above-average resolve. The troop had been formed after extremely difficult training. She had seen how this battalion had been created with her own eyes. In her mind, this was the strongest battalion in the world.

The matter had been as she had expected.

This battalion that Jiang Zhe had spent such effort to create came out like a peerless sword that intimidated the world!

The battle of Cold Mountain Jie had pushed this steely battalion to a new level. Even the shishu that came to reinforce them were full of praise. Jiangzi Battalion's status in the sect had continued to rise.

Everyone believed that unless they encountered the core battalions of the other three great sects or the top battalions of the

yaomo, Jiangze Battalion could dominate all other battalions!

Yet the scene in front of them made this thought a joke.

Cloud Sea Jie, was not one of the great four, not one of the great ten, not one of the great one hundred. In this xiuzhe world, this Cloud Sea Jie was unranked.

But in this little remote corner, a battalion appeared that could match the Jiangzi Battalion. This was such a terrifying matter.

Feng Yue suddenly realized to her shock just how little they knew of the world!

She raised her head and looked into the distance. Her heart filled with terror when she looked at the majority of enemy troops that were standing there.

If the remainder also joined

Her face became ashen.

————

Gao Xuan's expression became increasingly grave. He had expected this battalion to be a strong enemy, but he had not expected the other to be so strong as to reach a standstill with him!

The other's fighting method was very strange, and the composition of the battalion was also very strange!

He actually found mo among them. When he first saw them, he had thought his eyes were deceiving him. But the mo skills the other used, their unreasonable charges, caused him to shake.

In the battle of Cold Mountain Jie, he had seen too many mo and was very familiar with them!

This was definitely a mo, and a brigadier mo!

This wasn't one of them, but ten! All of them were brigadier level!

He felt this was extremely absurd. A group of mo participating in a xiuzhe battalion? And it was a group of brigadier mo? What kind of joke was this.

What he felt even more impossible to comprehend was that he couldn't detect any jinzhi on their bodies.

Were these xiuzhe in an alliance with the yaomo?

When this thought appeared, the coldness inside him grew.

It had to be said that Gao Xuan's abilities were very outstanding for Jiang Zhe to put such responsibilities on him. After the initial

probing rounds, Gao Xuan had gradually gotten used to the other's strange tactics and started to take back the advantage.

His advantage was increasing, but the other was astoundingly hardy. Even though they were at a disadvantage, they did not panic.

Suddenly, Gao Xuan felt the pressure that the other gave him was slowly increasing. He quickly found that the other's cooperation between tactics was becoming smoother and more natural, the flaws smaller and the power greater!

Gao Xuan stilled. Thinking back to the rawness of the other's tactics just recently, his heart suddenly sank. He finally understood what the other's intentions were.

The other was using him to test new battle tactics!

"Do you all see and understand?" Lil' Miss' warm voice passed into everyone's ears.

"Yes!" Everyone's heart shook but what was in their eyes was excitement.

As expected, real combat was better than anything else for training. The stronger the other felt, the more they could test their tactics.

This battalion from Xuan Kong Temple was like a hard whetstone that was slowly honing them. When Wei Ran slowly climbed back from his disadvantage, everyone felt their blood slowly started to burn!

This was a battalion from Xuan Kong Temple!

Vermillion Bird Camp had enough to be proud of to force a battalion from the four great sects to such a position!

Lil' Miss smiled faintly. The face like that of the neighbor's boy was filled with bashfulness. He said lightly, "Go, do not like even one escape."

The people responded in unison. Murderousness spread!

Vermillion Bird Camp was like a flood that lost all restraint and advanced!

Jiang Zhe felt unfocused.

He walked out of the room. The night wind blew past his face. He instantly felt his mind clear and laughed silently. Gao Xuan was leading five hundred members of the Jiangzi Battalion. Even though he would not be able to take revenge for Ding Zhen Shishu

personally, there definitely would not be a problem keeping Feng Yue safe in her revenge.

He put his attention was focused on the counterattack from the mo that was coming.

According to the information from the their spies, the mo were allying, and forming an enormous troop to take back Cold Mountain Jie.

Thinking about this, Jiang Zhe's eyes became cold. He had prepared some gifts for the other to come fight them.

He was filled with hope.

Suddenly, a subordinate stumbled as he flew in.

“Da Daren! The dhyana tower, the dhyana tower”

Jiang Zhe's heart jumped and his expression suddenly became cold. He said in a deep voice, “What about the dhyana tower?”

Stimulated by Jiang Zhe's presence, this subordinate's mind suddenly cleared and his words flowed. But his voice was still trembling. “Feng Yue Daren and Gao Xuan Daren's candles have gone out!”

The blood inside Jiang Zhe froze and his limbs felt cold.

Zuo Mo had never felt so comfortable. The star sand continuously honed every piece of muscle, every piece of bone, every one of his tendons. In this tempering process, a portion of the star sand merged into his blood and flesh, causing them to become perfect.

Other than perfect, Zuo Mo could not find a better word to describe it.

The three powers circulated endlessly inside his body. They all had their own systems but they also affected each other. The content of the Mo Skill Steles flowed across his mind.

The circulating three powers were continuously adjusted. They became even more harmonious and gained even more affinity.

Zuo Mo's mind was unusually clear. Each thought was carried out as though every piece of muscle and blood in his body was under his control.

Unprecedented confidence filled every corner of his body.

Zuo Mo quickly found that the star sand that entered his body seemed to be attracted and was gathering towards the Sun mo matrix at the center of his chest.

As Zuo Mo's blood, flesh, bones, and sinews were honed, the speed that the star sand came in increased. In the end, it became streaks of starlight.

These starlight continuously flowed into the Sun mo matrix at the center of Zuo Mo's chest.

Boom!

Zuo Mo felt that the Sun mo matrix at his chest seemed to be broken open. Someone appeared in his mind.

This was

Zuo Mo slowly savored it and did not detect that there was no more star sand entering his body.

A long time later.

A golden light flashed and disappeared from the sun mo matrix at his forehead. He slowly opened his eyes.

When Zuo Mo recovered clarity, the scene in front of him left him dumbstruck where he stood.

Under the vast sky of stars, mo filled the the sky above Great Peace City like an endless black cloud.

But

Why are they all staring at me?

Chapter 583 - Ripples

Silence.

A deathly silence...

Countless pairs of eyes moved to stare at Zuo Mo who opened his eyes. The enormous Great Peace City was so silent the drop of a pin on the ground could be heard.

The sky was deep and dark, the chilling night wind blew.

Zuo Mo felt slightly uncertain at being stared by so many pairs of eyes. The scene was strangely silent. Zuo Mo, who already did not know what was going on, did not dare to speak rashly.

However, Zuo Mo, who felt uncomfortable at being stared at, really could not suppress it. He coughed. "This... the time isn't early, everyone, go to sleep early."

Finishing, he waved his hand and pulled Shu Long and the others over in a flash to prepare to flee.

These people had such strange expressions

Glancing his eyes across Shu Long and the others, Zuo Mo felt very weird. But at this time, there was no time to think carefully as he sprinted.

The mo along his way automatically moved to give him a path.

The expressions of these people were so strange

Zuo Mo felt even worse. He unconsciously swallowed and didn't dare to stop.

“Mister Xiao Mo Ge, will you be free tomorrow. This one represents the Botelin Family, and sincerely invite Sir to attend the evening party tomorrow night”

In the silent night, this voice was unusually clear. It was like a spark thrown into a pot of hot oil. Great Peace City that had been deathly silent exploded. The representatives from all the other families seemed to wake up and extended branches of friendship.

“Mister Xiao Mo Ge! This one represents the Whirlica Family, this one is wondering if there is the good fortune to invite Mister Xiao Mo Ge to a gathering at the compound”

“This one represents the Almon Family”

“Mister Xiao Mo Ge Auburn Family”

The wave of sounds caused Zuo Mo's mind which had been puzzled in the first place to blank. His expression became even more dazed.

The pitiful Little Mo Ge did not have any of his usual dominance. He was like a frightened lamb that started to sprint even faster!

Even now, he did not understand. What was going on with these people?

What had happened?

Lan Tian Long, who had been watching the spectacle and saw Zuo Mo's sorry state, instantly roared in laughter. He felt the scene occurring in front of him was extremely amusing.

This Xiao Mo Ge was a funny person!

Just like him, many people grinned but more people sank into deep thought. In the night, the lights glowing from their eyes were like bright stars.

Qi Diao Yu's figure was standing on the stone stele like a sword. He stared with a cold gaze at Zuo Mo's figure in thoughtfulness.

As Zuo Mo left, the crowd slowly dissipated but heated discussion filled every corner of Great Peace City. It was a fresh experience for the majority of people to personally see a worldly apparition. They discussed the turning stars, the vast star power, and speculated

about Zuo Mo's physique

This was a busy night.

If killing Pang Chen had caused Zuo Mo to appear in the view of the public, then the Shifting Star Sand worldly apparition caused everyone to remember the name of Xiao Mo Ge.

Another genius had appeared!

Jiang Zhe stood in front of the dhyana tower and looked in a daze at two extinguished oil lamps inside the tower.

His warm eyes were full of sorrow and he felt as though someone was carving out his heart. That beautiful figure that always thought herself the big sister and was never polite to him would never be seen again.

Starting from when he decided to create a battalion that belonged to him, Feng Yue had accompanied him and helped him take care of those tedious but necessary matters. After so many years, he was used to having her by his side.

But he would never see her again.

“Daren, the mo alliance army has started to gather,” the

subordinate reported from outside the door.

Jiang Zhi's fist balled tightly, the joints turning white. His usually warm pupils were as vicious and brutal as a wild beast.

He stared hard at the two extinguished lanterns.

A moment later, he relaxed his fists and the savagery in his eyes disappeared. His gaze became warm again.

“Have everyone start to prepare. We will proceed according to the original plan.”

The warm voice was just the same as usual.

The subordinate at the door sighed in relief and his expression became alert as though he found support again. He hurriedly responded, “Yes!”

Hearing the sounds of the subordinate going away, Jiang Zhe raised his eyes and murmured gently.

“It will not be long before I flatten Cloud Sea Jie.”

————

In Cloud Sea Jie, almost no one knew about the battle that had

killed Xuan Kong Temple's battalion. Scouts only reported that a battalion had suddenly appeared near the jie river but was quickly exterminated.

This matter did not cause any ripples. Everyone found that it was matter-of-fact.

Even the mo battalions fell at the foot of Lil' Miss Daren, which battalion could stop Vermillion Bird Camp? Right now, Turtle Island's rule of Cloud Sea Jie was rock solid. Even though Turtle Island's forces that remained were not strong, these little factions also did not have great ambitions.

Lil' Miss had not given up his plan of going to reinforce Zuo Mo.

Even though his plan had reached a roadblock when he encountered A Zha Ge, but a person like Lil' Miss that was unusually stubborn of regarding victory would not easily give up.

The state of Middle Granary Jie had stabilized.

As Golden Crow Camp's success with mo matrices and formations increased, they would continue to grow stronger. In this battle, the hate between them and Xuan Kong Temple would only increase. There would not be any possibility that this could be resolved peacefully. However, Gongsun Cha had never thought that there was a possibility of a peaceful resolution.

Would an elephant try to reach a resolution with an ant? That

was a joke.

There was insanity flowing in Gongsun Cha's blood. He was not afraid. Fighting against Xuan Kong Temple would only make him excited.

Compared to Xuan Kong Temple, what he cared about more was Zuo Mo Shixiong.

Right now, he was considering if he should fight A Zha Ge again or find another jie had that a chaos rift.

He quickly threw the idea of finding another jie to the back of his mind. This was not very plausible. It was already good fortune to find Middle Granary Jie.

It was more realistic to go find A Zha Ge.

Lil' Miss decided to first go find A Zha Ge and have a discussion. If that did not work, then he would just fight.

Gongsun Cha, whose mind was full of ideas on how to reach Zuo Mo as fast as possible, forgot that he had just reached an alliance with A Zha Ge not long ago.

What happened in Cloud Sea Jie did not caused a ripple in the

Four Realms.

Everyone's gaze was attracted by another string of events.

Kun Lun's Xue Dong had conquered Fortune Wood Jie!

This was the second mo jie the xiuzhe had taken over. Even though it was not as momentous as Jiang Zhe, Kun Lun also displayed their strength to the world.

Just a few days later, two explosive pieces of news appeared.

Tian Huan's Gongye Xiao Rong had taken over Black Rock Jie!

Xi Xuan's Gu Liang Dao conquered North Gauze Jie!

Gongye Xiao Rong was a famed battle general from Tian Huan but the name Gu Liang Dao was unfamiliar to everyone and he appeared out of nowhere.

However, this not did not stop the celebrations of the people of the Four Realms. Everyone was filled with hope about the war now that the four great sects had all advanced. Everyone dreamed that the four great sects could continue their victory over the yaomo after the thousand year war.

The development of the state of affairs appeared natural as people had predicted this.

Zuo Mo gaped as he listened with astonishment to Shu Long and the others' narration.

Thinking that he had been the cause of that terrifying scene, Zuo Mo felt even worse.

However, Zuo Mo's first response was to run into the sea of consciousness and hurriedly asked Pu Yao and Wei, "Would today affect our plan?"

Pu Yao and Wei did not speak and looked at Zuo Mo as though they were looking at a freak.

Zuo Mo became impatient. "Talk!"

According to their previous plan, Zuo Mo needed to attract the attention of the large families. However, even Zuo Mo felt he had gone overboard with today's display. What he was worried about was that if this affected the plan, he would not be able to attract the arrival of Princess Xia. That would be bad.

"Do not worry." The one who spoke was Pu Yao. Even though his expression was strange, he still spoke, "This display of yours can definitely attract Princess Xia."

“That’s good!” Zuo Mo seemed to be relieved of a great burden.

“A Zuo, you are very talented!” Wei said with a smile. These words caused Pu Yao to instantly have a wary expression.

“You only noticed now?” In a good mood, Zuo Mo lazily replied. Then he suddenly looked with a heated gaze at Wei, his thumb and index finger rubbing together. He asked with begging eyes, “Is there a reward? Such a genius is in front of you, will you not express something?”

Seeing Wei’s shocked expression, Zuo Mo felt very disappointed. He looked disdainfully at Wei and muttered, “So this is just empty praise? Ha, are people that only give empty praise in this era? The honored gravestone armor such a lowering of status”

Finishing, he left without another glance at Wei.

Looking at Wei frozen in his spot, Pu Yao gave a roaring and carefree laugh.

Coming out of the sea of consciousness, Zuo Mo saw Ceng Lian’er’s serene eyes.

“How come you are able to cause a movement in the stars?” Ceng Lian’er’s voice seemed to become ethereal in the night.

“Because...” Zuo Mo who had not been rewarded looked at her bewitching face with a serious expression as he said with emphasis,

“...I am a genius!”

Finishing, he disregarded Ceng Lian'er's wide eyes and walked towards his rooms.

In reality, even he didn't know why he would cause the Shifting Star Sand.

After being awake for a night, he didn't feel tired at all. He felt as though his body contained endless power. Entering the room, he quickly sank into meditation.

He needed to have a good study of his breakthrough today.

Also, he remembered that something seemed to float out when those starlight charged into the sun mo matrix at the center of his chest.

In meditation, Zuo Mo did not have joy nor sorrow on his face. Every piece of muscle, blood and bone inside his body was perfectly visualized. The completely new three power system was so enchanting.

Countless images flowed across his mind.

He suddenly opened his eyes and his expression seemed slightly excited!

He finally knew what had come into his mind the moment the sun mo matrix had been flooded—the first transformation of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

Chapter 584 - Low Opinion

Bu Heng's expression was extremely dark.

He had been deeply impacted when he saw Zuo Mo cause the Shifting Stars Sands. More accurately, he had a strong feeling of danger!

It was not a wise course of action to be enemies with a genius that could cause worldly apparitions. However, their grudge was already set in stone. It was too late to peacefully resolve this.

Bu Heng was still calm. The mind of a gold battle general was as strong and hard as stone. Viciousness flashed across his face.

The best way to deal with a genius youth was to kill it in its cradle before they grew up. Genius youths before they became stronger did not have more lives than anyone else.

He decided to personally get in contact with a person.

Zuo Mo flipped through the mountain of invitations but his face fell. "There isn't one from the An Wei Family!"

Not just Anwei Family, there wasn't an invitation from the top families. These were all invitations from small families. Zuo Mo

who had been extremely interested and filled with pride seemed to have been hit over the head and felt very depressed.

“Is it because my performance is not eye-catching enough?” Zuo Mo pondered.

“It is not that you are not eye-catching.” Pu Yao was experienced and explained. “You have displayed great potential but one, your origins are unknown, and two, you have not been tested in real combat. Pang Chen is a famous warrior but in Great Peace City, he is not ranked. The bigger the family, the more cautious and strict their tests.”

Zuo Mo understood. His eyebrow raised, “So they don’t feel that I am strong enough?”

“You can understand it this way.” There was a careless smile on Pu Yao’s face. “You have showed strong potential but if that potential cannot become strength, it is forever potential. The internal competition in those families isn’t something you can imagine. They have many youths with potential. What they need are experts, not youths with potential!”

“I understand!” Zuo Mo stood up. “It seems that I need to defeat some strong people before I can attract their attention.”

Without another word, he went to find Tao Xing.

Tao Xing’s attitude towards Zuo Mo had completely changed

now. He had been astounded by the worldly apparition that night. Originally, he had felt somewhat proud because he was a city master. Wherever he went, people respected him. However, that bit of ego had dissipated. Shifting Star Sand, a worldly apparition that only existed in the legends actually occurred in front of him.

Compared to the other, Tao Xing didn't feel that he was really worth something.

Tao Xing's attitude was respectful. "Daren, for what have you found me for?"

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised at Tao Xing's attitude but he did not inquire about it. He asked directly, "Tell me about the experts of Great Peace City."

"The experts of Great Peace City?" Tao Xing paused. Inside, he thought, was this young man going to make a challenge again? In his mind, Zuo Mo was someone that was restless.

But since Zuo Mo asked, Tao Xing decided to give him a good explanation so that Zuo Mo would understand who he could provoke and who he could not.

"There are many experts in Great Peace City and they are all called famous warriors. However, there are ranks among these famous people. Pang Chen who you defeated is only a normal Famous Person, and was unranked. These famous warriors are general level and have no physiques. The experts among the famous warrior have a ranking called the Great Peace Mo Ranking.

It records the twenty most powerful experts in Great Peace City. The three strongest are Chang Yuan Hao, Yu Shuang and Nanmeng Xue. There are just a step away from marshal rank. Qi Diao Yu is also at this level, but it has been many years since he appeared in Great Peace City so his name is not on the Great Peace Mo Ranking.”

Zuo Mo listened carefully.

“The second tier is the fourth to twelfth spots. The experts of this level have been in general level for many years and are experts that have comprehended [Boundary]. The third tier is the thirteenth to the twentieth positions. The experts of this level have not comprehend [Boundary] but if they are not cultivating an unique mo physique, they use a powerful mo skill in order to reach this spot on the Great Peace Mo Ranking. Lan Tian Long is this level. He is eighteenth.”

“Under them is the Famous Warrior Ranking. The people on the Great Peace Mo Ranking are not ones that we can challenge. Most of them have come for the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles, and do not attend to outside matters. In comparison ,the changes in the Famous Warrior Rankings is more intense. The possibility of victory is also greater. If you are interested, you can try the Famous Person Rankings.”

Tao Xing said probingly to Zuo Mo. If this one had to make a challenge, then it would be best if he went to the Famous Warrior Ranking. It was alright for him to try the Famous Warrior Ranking since he had killed Pang Chen in two moves and Pang Chen’s ranking on the Famous Warrior Ranking was not low.

Zuo Mo glanced at him, asking, “What is the twentieth person on the Great Peace Mo Ranking called?”

Tao Xing’s face instantly turned ashen, his heart beating rapidly. He said timidly, “Daren, you can start from the Famous Warrior Ranking, this also has many experts”

Famous Warrior Ranking?

Zuo Mo’s head shook like a rattle drum. Just by listening to it, he knew the weight of the Famous Warrior Ranking was not enough. In order to move an ancient family like the An Wei Family which had high standards, if he could not reach the Great Peace Mo Ranking, the other wouldn’t even look at him properly.

Thinking about the pile of stupid invitations, Zuo Mo’s eyes twitched

–He was being underestimated!

“The twentieth of Great Peace Mo Ranking!” Zuo Mo’s attitude was determined.

Tao Xing shrunk back under Zuo Mo’s pressuring gaze. He said with a startled heart, “Miao Jun!”

“Miao Jun!” Zuo Mo repeated, his gaze murderous.

Tao Xing looked at Zuo Mo's vicious expression. His legs softened and he sat down on the ground.

A Zha Ge was slightly shocked. Gongsun Cha had come to find him again. He did not know why. The two of them had just entered an alliance. Did Gongsun Cha had some new ideas?

“Brother Gongsun, is there something that you come to find this one with?” A Zha Ge was not afraid and directly asked.

A Zha Ge's straightforward attitude suited Gongsun Cha's appetites. He said seriously, “This one wants Brother A Zha Ge to give up the chaos rift.”

A Zha Ge's expression suddenly changed and his eyes darkened. “What does Brother Gongsun mean?”

Gongsun Cha knew that he was the one asking something outrageous but there was no reasoning that could be spoken of in this matter. He was silent for a moment before saying, “This one is compelled by the circumstances. This one is willing to make this up to Brother A Zha Ge in other places.”

A Zha Ge smiled coldly. “This one wants to hear the circumstances!”

Gongsun Cha was very honest and narrated the situation. Other than not saying Zuo Mo's name, he did not conceal anything else.

After A Zha Ge heard this, his anger dissipated. He was a person that was attuned to details and he naturally could hear the truthfulness of Gongsun Cha's words.

He still shook his head. "Brother Gongsun is a good friend and this one is moved. However, Orchid Home Jie is an important part of my clan and definitely cannot be given up. If Brother wants to go though, that is fine."

Lil' Miss shook his head. "We will successively send out battalions. We also need more mo experts in order to increase our reinforcements."

A Zha Ge suddenly laughed. "Brother Gongsun is really fantasizing. The yaomo have deep hate with xiuzhe, how can they work for you?"

Gongsun Cha glanced at A Zha Ge, saying, "Brother A Zha Ge, please wait for a moment."

A short while later, a large crowd of mo suddenly appeared in front of Lil' Miss and bowed to him.

A Zha Ge suddenly stood up. He stared at the mo in front of him and almost didn't believe his eyes!

Mo! True mo! What surprised him even more was that they were all brigadier mo! Even within his battalion, these would be elite members.

There were dozens of them in front of him.

“I believe that Brother A Zha Ge can see that they are truly mo and we have not put jinzhi in them.” Gongsun Cha’s words came.

A Zha Ge stared hard at this mo. He suddenly asked in a deep voice, “Why are you working for xiuzhe?”

E De’s brow furrowed. “Who is working for xiu? We are in the service of our king!”

“King!” A Zha Ge almost froze where he stood. He was sure that his smart mind wasn’t enough to use today. He saw a group of brigadier mo within a xiuzhe battalion and then these mo were saying they were in the service of King.

Then what were these xiuzhe?

Just like he did not believe that mo would stay in the service of xiuzhe, he also did not believe that xiuzhe would work for a mo, even if he was King!

E De was very displeased at the other’s gaze. However, he still narrated how their King had been lost to the xiuzhe world, how he had cultivated the Great Day mo physique by himself, how he had

created a xiuzhe battalion, how he had fought against Ye Ling Daren and received everyone's loyalty.

These absurd words were being spoken by a brigadier mo, and when this was said a she stood with several dozen mo, it became extremely convincing.

But A Zha Ge felt it was incomprehensible. Looking at E De's troops, he was motionless for a long time.

Gongsun Cha glanced over. This was possible!

He hurriedly pulled A Zha Ge to watch Vermillion Bird Camp's new tactics.

A Zha Ge's mind which had been dizzy suddenly cleared up. His eyes widened as he stared hard at this battalion!

He could see that the skeleton of this battalion was still the battalion that he had fought against before but that the brigadier mo had been added.

This was the first battalion he had ever seen that was composed of xiuzhe and mo mixed together. This kind of heterogeneous battalion had extremely unique tactics. Even though he was only seeing the foot of the mountain, he still inhaled sharply.

Such a transformation!

In this short time, this battalion had completely transformed. Their present strength caused A Zha Ge's heart to beat wildly.

His gaze turned to that bashful youth that had the face of an innocent neighbors boy. For some reason, coldness continuously corroded his bravery and was unable to be suppressed. His limbs felt cold.

As one of the three great battle generals of the Stellar Rahula Clan, A Zha Ge never lacked for bravery.

But his face was ashen as though he had just been defeated in a battle.

He knew that if the two fought again, he had no chance of victory.

The faint smile on Gongsun Cha's face was so profound. A Zha Ge did not know what had happened in these days that a battalion could transform so completely!

This youth

He saw the insanity and stubbornness in the depths of Gongsun Cha and suddenly understood –he's a madman!

Chapter 585 - Gamble

“Yes, he caused the Shifting Star Sands, all of Great Peace City saw it, and he also broke Qi Diao Yu’s record. Many families are starting to pay attention to him.”

“Continue to monitor the situation.”

“Should we make contact? There are many people noticing him”

“Do not worry too much. With his present fame, no major family would offer him a high price. As for those small families, even if they recruit him, it would not be hard for us to pull him over.”

“But”

“No one is stupid. The Shifting Star Sands are very powerful and show that he has potential. However, those that are worth us acting are geniuses that can grow and live to become experts.”

“Yes, Bu Heng is acting against him... should we make contact?”

“Why should we? You have to understand those that cannot survive are of no value to us.”

“Yes”

“Go and help Bu Heng. However, do not leave any clues behind. It is the Shifting Star Sands, you have to give him some special treatment! I feel some anticipation!”

“Yes, this subordinate understands.”

“Go.”

The Shifting Star Sands worldly manifestation only remained in the minds of the people of Great Peace City for a few days before it was quickly replaced by major news of the Four Realms victories on all fronts.

The power of the Four Great Sects caused both the yao and the mo to become nervous, especially the mo.

The in the battles of Blood Sky Metropolis Jie the yao had suffered heavy casualties but the mo had been largely unharmed and not really felt any pain. However, of the four jie which had been conquered, three belonged to the mo.

A strong feeling of danger seemed to press down on them.

Fortunately, the three jie that were taken were all very far from Great Peace City. But terror and nervousness still uncontrollably spread.

Something like this was not something that could be reversed by one expert unless a king personally acted. But while the mo would have King level experts, the xiuzhe also had people in the dacheng realm.

The fighting between experts of this level were on a strategic level. Unless it was a crucial time, neither side would act as the risks were too high.

As long as there were enough people and resources, a battalion could be reconstructed again in a few years and were naturally restored. But experts of such a high level, if one died, there would not be one to replace them. Not just king, even a mo marshal was very difficult to nurture. This could be seen from how many general levels were stuck at the very edge of marshall level in Great Peace City.

A string of defeats suddenly caused all of Great Peace City to become more solemn.

Everyone lost interest in chatting and were all worried.

“Brother Miao, what do you think?” An extremely elegant mo looked with worry at Miao Jun.

Miao Jun did not have a large figure. He had a square face with sharply defined features that slightly showed his age. His eyes were a crisp green, his figure stocky and he sat there casually but with presence.

Miao Jun thought and then said gravely. "This is not a strange development."

"Not strange?" his friend's interest was stirred by this and he hurriedly asked, "How is this not strange?"

Miao Jun said in a low voice, "No matter if people verbally agree or not, the xiuzhe are stronger than the yaomo, this is the truth. This is caused by the results of the thousand year war, and no one can change this. In the past, we had the Blood Sky Metropolis Jie as a barrier but now without it to serve as a border we are all mixed together. We lost the buffer between us and now have to face them and fight. At this time, what matters is strength. So it is not strange that we have lost."

"So according to Brother Miao, doesn't this mean that we will definitely lose in the end?" another person asked in disagreement.

"Losing in the beginning is already set in stone, but it is hard to say what is going to happen later on." Miao Jun's tone was calm and his thoughts clear. "The xiuzhe have started to gain victories so they will keep on advancing, and we will keep retreating. Many things will change in this cycle of advances and retreats. The other will be fighting on foreign land, and once the battle lines are drawn out, they will be tired out in maintaining it. We look to be retreating but we have an advantage in fighting on home territory. Also, with the calamity and battles many clans will be destroyed, and we will not have any more places to retreat to. When we are fighting with our backs to the precipice, we will be determined!"

The speech was rational and clear. All of them sighed in agreement.

At this time, Miao Jun's gaze suddenly focused and he shouted in a deep voice, "Which friend has come here, why do you not come forward?"

Clap clap clap!

As Zuo Mo walked in, he clapped. He was not pretending, he truly felt that the other had spoken well. The complex state of matters was simplified by the other into clear and concise points. Just this foresight alone was unusual.

Little Mo Ge was someone that had seen great things!

"Xiao Mo Ge!" Miao Jun's expression was surprised. He was not the only one. The expressions of the people around him instantly became strange.

Everyone recognized the youth in front of them.

Was this that Xiao Mo Ge that just a while ago had caused the Shifting Star Sands?

Zuo Mo was examining Miao Jun, Miao Jun was also examining Xiao Mo Ge.

Miao Jun had been astounded by the Shifting Star Sands that night, but what he felt more of was admiration. In terms of talent, he and the other people of the Great Peace Mo Rankings did not lack for it. Otherwise, they would not have gotten on the Great Peace Mo Ranking. However, compared to a freak that could have Shifting Star Sand, their presence instantly became dim in the light of that person.

Miao Jun sometimes would think if he could have the Shifting Star Sand once, even if he could not enter marshal level, he would not have a problem comprehending [Boundary].

But no matter how jealous he was, after being shocked for two days, the matter had settled. So when Miao Jun saw Zuo Mo, he was just slightly surprised.

“I had originally come to challenge Brother Miao.”

When Zuo Mo spoke, the room instantly became silent. Everyone was shocked by his words.

“But when I heard Brother Miao’s speech just now, this one is in great admiration of Brother Miao’s foresight and suddenly changed ideas.” Zuo Mo spoke smoothly as though he thought himself a very strong person and did not show any timidity.

Miao Jun suddenly felt it was very humorous and asked interestedly, “Oh, how did you change your opinion?”

When he was young, wasn't he also as green as this?

The other people could not suppress their amused expressions, especially when they saw Zuo Mo's serious expression. Some even laughed. In their eyes, Zuo Mo was a complete greenhorn while Miao Jun was someone who had been famed for a long time.

Right now, the greenhorn was swaying his head and lecturing in front of someone famous, wasn't this funny?

Zuo Mo did not seem to feel the others laughing at him. He said with a serious expression, "I believe that Brother Miao is an exceptional battle general."

Miao Jun was slightly surprised. He would occasionally speak about matters of the world but no one had ever connected him to being a battle general.

It seemed that this youth had very sensitive perception!

Miao Jun's heart shook slightly.

"So I hope that Brother Miao can come help me!" Zuo Mo said with a serious expression.

Everyone's smiles seemed to freeze on their faces. Their eyes were wide as they looked at Zuo Mo, their expressions strange.

A moment later.

“Haha!”

One person finally could not stop himself and slammed the floor in laughter as though he heard the funniest joke in the world. The laughter seemed to be infectious and quickly spread. All the people in the room roared with laughter.

“Haha! He wants to recruit Brother Miao! He actually wants to recruit Brother Miao”

“Hahahaha! Did I hear it right? What day is it today?”

“I’m going to die from laughing!”

A little child actually ran over and serious wanted to recruit Miao Jun. This was the funniest matter in the history of Great Peace City.

Even Miao Jun couldn’t help but laugh. “I’m very sorry, my present life is already very good.”

Zuo Mo suddenly said, “You wouldn’t even consider it for [Celestial Azure Essence]?”

Miao Jun’s smile suddenly froze and he abruptly stood up. “You have [Celestial Azure Essence]?”

He unconsciously stepped forward and grabbed at Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo did not dodge. A light flashed in his eyes and his presence was suddenly released!

————

Luo Li shut himself off in the room.

His complexion had recovered from its previous pale tone. The content of [Life-Death Lock] flashed through his mind. He had spent the last days studying this art that was completely irrational without any rest.

For him, death was not a difficult matter.

Sometimes, it would take more bravery to live than to die.

This bravery might just be a reason or a thread of hope.

Luo Li did not have anything to hesitate about.

His heart that had returned to life was grasping at a hope so small it was almost nonexistent.

Entering the state of death could stimulate the greatest potential of a person. Then it could reconstruct Wo Li, right?

Even if this only allowed him to just see her one last time

Luo Li slowly closed his eyes. He let the darkness take over his world but his lips were curled in a smile.

—————

Zuo Mo's explosive presence was like a tsunami that lost its restraints and flowed in all directions.

Miao Jun's eyes suddenly lit up. They were like suns and unable to be stared at directly.

The other people changed expression. All laughter was choked off. They panicked fled outside. This presence made them feel suffocated!

The presence that Xiao Mo Ge gave off was not weaker than Miao Jun at all!

“Are you going to come?” Zuo Mo's voice was deep.

Miao Jun smiled coldly. “Depends on whether you have the skill!”

“Defeating you?” Zuo Mo did not dodge Miao Jun's blinding gaze and continued to ask.

“You have [Celestial Azure Essence]?” Miao Jun asked in response.

“Yes!” Zuo Mo was crisp.

Miao Jun’s expression changed. He clearly was conflicted inside.

Wei, you are so evil

Zuo Mo thought inside but his expression was proper. “Why don’t we have a bet?”

“Bet?” Miao Jun’s eyes narrowed.

“Yes, let’s have a fight. You lose, then you follow me, you win, the [Celestial Azure Essence] is yours,” Zuo Mo threw out the bait.

“How do I know that you have the [Celestial Azure Essence]?” Miao Jun said, unconvinced.

“You can gamble whether or not I have it.” Zuo Mo was not affected.

Miao Jun’s eyes narrowed even more, and the light grew brighter. He said coldly, “If you lose, I will not let you die so easily.”

“When I lose, you will have a lot of time to do as you wish.” Zuo Mo said coldly. Inside, he looked with sympathy at Miao Jun.

Wei, you are so devious

As expected, the more of a fortuneteller one was, the worse they were

Chapter 586 - A Strong Presence

After their discussion A Zha Ge worriedly returned to the clan and did not even have the time to report about this matter with Gongsun Cha before he was stunned by the bad news—Gongye Xiao Rong had taken over Black Stone Jie, Bi Shan and De Lei both were killed in battle.

He almost thought he was hearing it wrong! After asking three times and still getting the same answer, he froze where he stood.

In a flash, only A Zha Ge was left of the three great Stellar Rahula battle generals.

A grieving atmosphere covered all of Orchid Home Jie. Bi Shan and De Lei had been the elite of the Stellar Rahula Clan. Now that their entire army had been killed, the Stellar Rahula Clan was greatly impacted.

A Zha Ge who had froze for a long time felt cold, his face was pale.

If Crow Stone Jie was taken over, the other could point their attack at Orchid Home Jie at any time. Crow Stone Jie and Orchid Home Jie had many jie rivers connecting them. It was easy to attack but hard to defend. The other could easily enter Orchid Home Jie. This meant that the enemy could appear at any time.

A grieving A Zha Ge knew that the situation was running out of time. If the battalions of Tian Huan reached Orchid Home Jie, they

would not be able to escape in time!

With only A Zha Ge's one battalion left, the Stellar Rahula Clan was not the other's match.

“Abandon anything heavy! Retreat from Orchid Home Jie at the fastest speed! Go towards White Stone Jie... ..” A Zha Ge's hurried voice echoed.

Before he could finish, the alarmed voice of a scout interrupted A Zha Ge.

“Daren! Enemy scouts have appeared near the jie river!”

A Zha Ge's face instantly turned grey. So fast! Looking at the old, weak, ill and crippled, A Zha Ge's heart felt cold. Was today the day that the Stellar Rahula Clan would die?

There was no time!

The speed of the weak clan members would not outrun the enemy battalion. What also was hopeless was that Orchid Home Jie was completely flat and had no defensive structures. The other had greater numbers and he could not even delay them for any significant amount of time!

Would he only be able to watch his clanspeople be killed? The hopeless and terrified gazes of his clan people deeply pierced and pained A Zha Ge's heart.

Just as the last thread inside almost faded, he suddenly thought of a person!

A daring idea appeared in his mind.

The time did not allow him to think. At this time, he was like a man drowning that grabbed at a life-saving reed!

He didn't hesitate, turning and flying furiously towards the chaos rift!

————

Gongsun Cha saw A Zha Ge return not long after he had left. He felt slightly surprised. When he had interacted with A Zha Ge these few times, he had a general understanding of the other's personality. The other was decisive and resolute, someone that would not easily waver.

When A Zha Ge saw Lil' Miss, a conflicted expression came onto his face. But he gritted his teeth and knelt down with a bang. "My Stellar Rahula Clan is willing to serve under our king!"

A Zha Ge's words were very measured. What he submitted to was not Gongsun Cha but the king's service. This way, no one could say anything.

Gongsun Cha was slightly stunned. A Zha Ge's move was too sudden. He didn't believe a domineering presence could shock the other and have them submit. He naturally noticed what meaning the words "submitting to the king's" service meant. But he did not care. What he wanted was Orchid Home Jie and this chaos rift.

"A Zha Ge is willing to gift Orchid Home Jie and asks for nothing else except for Daren to protect the lineage of my Stellar Rahula Clan!" A Zha Ge said sorrowfully.

Gongsun Cha did not immediately respond and asked in curiosity, "What is going on?"

A Zha Ge was pressed for time but he knew if he did not clearly explain, the other definitely would not believe him. He pushed down his urgency and rapidly narrated the situation.

Lil' Miss was a smart person. When he finished listening to the situation, he knew what was going on.

Orchid Home Jie was the best starting place they had found up until now. For this opportunity, Lil' Miss had even fought with A Zha Ge. While Tian Huan's Gongye Xiao Rong was famous, at this time Lil' Miss showed his shocking decisiveness.

He did not hesitate. "Depart!"

Vermillion Bird Camp passed through the chaos rift at full speed and left for Orchid Home Jie.

Flying at full speed, the wind blew across the bangs on Lil' Miss' forehead. The bashful and harmless face was now like a sword that was unsheathed, full of edges and murderousness!

He did not fear Xuan Kong Temple, he also did not fear Tian Huan!

They wanted to take food from his mouth?

No one could do it!

When Vermillion Bird Camp flew into the city of Stellar Rahula, they instantly caused a furor. Gongsun Cha did not hesitate and said to A Zha Ge. "Have them retreat towards the chaos rift!"

A Zha Ge had a moved expression. He knew that Gongsun Cha's words would save many members of his clan. He hurriedly sent a subordinate to give the order while he led his battalion to follow Vermillion Bird Camp.

Gongsun Cha sent a message to the battalion that was standing guard in Middle Granary Jie and for them to settle these Stellar Rahula Clan members.

At this time, A Zha Ge's scout reported back.

"The Tian Huan battalion has already crossed the jie river!"

A Zha Ge looked at Lil' Miss. Since he had submitted, he would naturally follow Lil' Miss' orders. Looking at the members of his clan that were retreating towards the chaos rift, A Zha Ge was content. Even if he were to die in battle today, he would not have any regrets!

Since Gongsun Cha could tolerate the mo in Vermillion Bird Camp, he could naturally tolerate the Stellar Rahula Clan! Even if Lil' Miss had him launch a suicide attack on the Tian Huan battalion, he would not hesitate.

He looked at Lil' Miss and waited for his order.

A flash of insanity passed through Gongsun Cha's eyes but his expression was indifferent as he said, "Go welcome them!"

Vermillion Bird Camp and A Zha Ge's battalion were like two floods that flew towards the jie river.

Six hours later, they met the Tian Huan battalion.

Gongye Xiao Rong's appearance was extremely average, one that would be hard to find in a crowd of people. He was wearing a nondescript light blue cloth robe. There was no ephemeral presence, no sharp killing energy. He was someone that was extremely plain and not like a cultivator at all.

However, a group of battle generals that flashed with treasure light swarmed around him, and so his plain cloth robe became an unusual contrast.

Yet it was this person that looked average and normal that took over Black Stone Jie and also killed two elite armies of the Stellar Rahula Clan.

In terms of beauty, Gongye Xiao Rong's fighting style was even better than Jiang Zhe taking over Cold Mountain Jie!

"Hm, there are xiuzhe battalions here?" Gongye Xiao Rong was slightly surprised.

He was not the only one. All the battle generals around him had shocked expressions but more of their expressions darkened. In their eyes, Orchid Home Jie was like a mature peach. They had waited for a long time but now someone else had suddenly taken over it. Their mood could be imagined.

"Send someone to ask where they are from," Gongye Xiao Rong said interestedly.

He could see that the Stellar Rahula Clan seemed to have surrendered to this xiuzhe battalion. Another battalion had taken over another jie? This was very unexpected. Up until now, only the four great sects had achieved victories. Now a battalion of unknown origins had come out halfway. How could he not be interested?

A combat xiu flew out of the Tian Huan battalion.

This combat xiu's body flashed with all kinds of light and it could be seen from the talismans he had that they were of extraordinary grade. Tian Huan was skilled in seals, formations, and forging. In the field of talismans, they were the top of the four Realms.

Under the shine of the treasure light, the combat xiu seemed of great bearing. Facing the two battalions, he did not show any fear. He looked down and said coldly, "Someone who can make decisions, come out and respond!"

The other's careless tone cause the people around Lil' Miss to become angry. The other was so proud and rude.

Gongsun Cha's bashful face like that of the neighbor's boy had a faint smile. That pair of eyes that were as warm as sunlight flashed with killing intent and craziness. "Xie Shan, take his head!"

Xie Shan had been waiting for this. He instantly turned into a sword light and shot at the other!

He was very fast. A golden sword light suddenly appeared in front of the other!

This combat xiuzhe just felt a dot of golden light suddenly show up in front of him and blinded him. Instantly, a cold sword essence locked onto him and his face immediately changed. He shouted loudly, "You dare"

Panicked, the ling armor of the Tian Huan combat xiu lit up. Countless transparent seal scripts protected him.

The gold light heavily hit the seal scripts!

Bam!

A crisp sound, the Tian Huan combat xiu's expression changed slightly. The ling armor on his body had shattered with one blow! However, what reassured him was that the other's blow had still been stopped!

Yet before he could celebrate, a little tiny golden light flew out of the exploding ball of golden light and flashed directly across his neck!

Like a knife cutting tofu!

The head shot up and blood sprayed out in a pillar!

That tiny golden light flashed and disappeared. Along with the bigger golden light, they returned to Xie Shan's hands.

Everyone finally saw that the flying swords in Xie Shan's hands were a pair of golden flying swords, one big and one small.

Paired Mirage Sword!

The Tian Huan combat xiu were first stunned and then infuriated. The battle formation shifted and many combat xiu wanted to charge immediately out of anger.

The smile on Lil' Miss' face grew, and his tone was as sharp as a blade, "Formation!"

Vermillion Bird Camp's battle formation silently changed. The combat xiu on the two flanks slid back multiple steps and the entire combat formation changed. Sharp killing intent radiated. It was like a wild beast whose body was arced forward slightly, waiting to pounce in a lightning attack!

The Tian Huan battalion that had been shifting instantly quieted. They were an elite battalion that had been through many battles and were very sensitive to killing intent. They instantly detected the other battalion had locked onto them!

If they continued to be restless, the battle formation would show flaws which the other would immediately attack!

The restless combat xiu instantly calmed down. All of them started to prepare for battle.

Gongye Xiao Rong's face became dark. He narrowed his eyes. Only now did the presence he gave off turn into something that could not be concealed by this plain cloth robe.

A strong feeling of suppression caused Gongye Xiao Rong to feel pressure.

Professionals could detect if others had talent. The other just changed his formation slightly and Gongye Xiao Rong knew he had encountered a strong enemy.

However, he still felt surprised by the other's strong attitude and viciousness!

There was no buffer in the entire process. It was so clean and crisp he smelled the scent of danger.

Who were they?

Chapter 587 - Tit For Tat

“This one is Tian Huan’s Gongye Xiao Rong,” Gongye Xiao Rong smiled and bowed in the direction of Gongsun Cha.

The generals under his command were all shocked. They had not expected Daren to be the first to show weakness to the other. The enemy had killed their combat xiu in front of them without even asking for a reason yet Daren proactively showed weakness first?

Many people had rebellious expressions.

They were Tian Huan! When had Tian Huan been humiliated so? Yes! This was a humiliation! Almost everyone had prepared to fight, wanting to charge and kill all of them.

None of them had expected Daren to show weakness!

If Gongye Xiao Rong’s authority was not as secure as it was, the rebellious battle generals would have started to talk already.

“This one is Gongsun Cha.” Lil’ Miss still had a sunny smile. In the eyes of the Tian Huan battle generals, this was an extreme eyesore.

Gongsun Cha?

Never heard of this person!

Gongye Xiao Rong thought carefully and was certain that he really had not heard the name before. He noticed the other only gave his name but not his origins. There was something to ponder here.

Also, a battalion like this should not be unknown!

Gongye Xiao Rong's eyes flashed and were meaningful. It was not so easy to form a strong battalion. Gongye Xiao Rong had went through the process of building one and knew very well how difficult it was.

Was there a faction that had targeted a position among the great four from the shadows?

This was the first thought that flashed through his mind. But when he thought, he couldn't help but laugh soundlessly. This thought was nonsense.

“As expected, heroes come from the youth! Brother Gongsun is so young and in charge of a battalion, Xiao Rong was just whiling away the days in the past.” Gongye Xiao Rong had a smile. But then his tone changed. “But why is Brother Gongsun in cahoots with the mo?”

Gongsun Cha's smile was like a flower. His tone was warm but his words were very sharp. “In cahoots with the mo? Brother Gongye's words are strange! This sect has taken over Orchid Home Jie. The Stellar Rahula Clan admires our sect's conduct and is

willing to submit, turning from evil towards the right path. Isn't such an action something our generation pursues?"

Then his tone changed. "But your battalion still sent your big army after our sect has taken Orchid Home Jie. Is Tian Huan so unreasonable? Are you bullying little sects like us?"

Lil' Miss smiled as he spoke, sometimes full of gentleness and then his tone turned murderous. But while he was uttering complete falsehoods, he was extremely composed. At the side A Zha Ge felt cold inside. What take over Orchid Home Jie? In just a few words, Lil' Miss established his position. Truth and falsehood, it was hard for the other to pick out which was which.

A Zha Ge decided he did not want to be enemies with Lil' Miss in this life.

If he had an enemy like this, he probably wouldn't even know how he died.

Gongye Xiao Rong did not know what to say.

Just a step late, and his judgment had made a great mistake. He was not the only one. Even his soldiers really thought that Lil' Miss had really taken over Orchid Home Jie.

But those soldiers did not care. So what if the other got here first? They could take it!

They were yearning to go and wanted to charge. The other was not weak, but they were full of confidence and completely did not have a good opinion of the enemy.

Gongye Xiao Rong stared at the other. He did not believe what Gongsun Cha said but he could not pick out any holes in the story. As to the problem of the mo, the xiuzhe had always been divided into two sides on the issue. One group wanted to kill all the mo, and not leave any living. The other would allow the mo to submit to them and advocated for gentle treatment.

Both groups had their support in the xiuzhe world so regarding the problem of the mo, Gongye Xiao Rong could not pick any faults.

What he considered was far more than his soldiers.

This war would probably continue for a very long time. Tian Huan was one of the great four and they had to take care of their reputation and image. If they stole whenever they encountered someone weaker than them, how could they ally with other sects?

He did not care about Orchid Home Jie. Orchid Home Jie was easy to attack but hard to defend. In terms of value, it was worth far less than Black Stone Jie.

However

A cold light flashed through Gongye Xiao Rong's eyes.

They had to give something in response to his subordinate being killed!

“However, the one that is killed is one of this one’s people. This is still an issue.” Gongye Xiao Rong slowly spoke.

“This one expresses deep apology for that, and is willing to pay reparations,” Gongsun Cha said with an innocent expression.

Gongye Xiao Rong’s soldiers became furious, their eyes sprouting blood.

“There is no need for reparations. Blades are blind. The xiuzhe that go onto the battlefield need to understand they can die on the battlefield. This one’s brothers have been proud for many years, and are very competitive upon seeing Brother Gongsun’s brothers today. Please, Brother Gongsun, help me teach my brothers.” Finishing, he did not wait for Lil’ Miss to speak. He turned around and said, “Di Li, pick fifty brothers and ask for guidance from this Gongsun Daren.”

“Yes!” A black faced man stood up and accepted the order.

The smile on Gongsun Cha’s face was still the same. “Since Brother Gongye has such interest, this little brother will naturally go along. E De, take your team, go.”

E De had an excited expression. He shot out of the ranks and said

seriously, “I will not fail Daren’s expectations!”

“Relax, relax.” Lil’ Miss smiled.

But E De’s expression was determined. To be able to be picked by Daren at such an important time, Daren’s intentions of nurturing him was evident.

No matter what, he had to win!

He stared murderously at the enemy.

Di Li stared back hard at E De.

E De suddenly grinned like a wild beast staring at its prey and bared its sharp teeth!

The challenge stadium was filled with crowds.

The bet and challenge between Zuo Mo and Miao Jun spread through all of Great Peace City like a wind. Countless people flowed towards the challenge stadium.

The challenge stadium in Great Peace City had been set down with jinzhi by the two mo marshals. If people under marshal level fought inside, the backlash would not break through the jinzhi.

General level had the power to upend seas. When the two yuanying had fought in Xu Ling City, all of Xu Ling City had been destroyed. If these general levels could fight where they wished, Great Peace City would have been turned to ash a long time ago.

Compared to the fight between Zuo Mo and Pang Cheng, this fight attracted more attention. One was an youth that caused the Shifting Star Sand, the other was someone from the Great Peace Mo Ranking. The challenge between these two could naturally attract the eyes of people.

The Great Peace Mo Ranking represented the top twenty experts in Great Peace City. Those that could get onto the ranking had undoubted power. Xiao Mo Ge who had caused the Shifting Star Sands was also seen by the entire city.

A challenge of such significance was something that caused people's blood to boil just thinking about it.

The bet between Miao Jun and Xiao Mo Ge also added light to this significant challenge. Xiao Mo Ge's attention-catching style and his domineering nature did not match his age at all!

More people felt surprised that Xiao Mo Ge had found Miao Jun. Was it because Xiao Mo Ge had such great confidence or did he know something that no one else knew?

But these thoughts were just the footnotes of this challenge. Everyone's gaze was completely drawn to the two people in the

field.

Miao Jun did not move at all. His presence was steady and condensed like a great mountain. He stared closely at Zuo Mo but he was not as calm inside as he appeared. When he heard the name [Celestial Azure Essence] from Xiao Mo Ge's mouth, he was unable to keep his composure.

He had never expected to hear these words from the mouth of someone else, especially a youth.

Celestial Azure Essence

Just based on these words, no matter what, he would fight. What he was even more curious about was where Xiao Mo Ge had heard about this, and how had he discovered it?

He found that he was unable to get the measure of this youth.

Zuo Mo did not think too much. Inside, there was only the desire to obtain victory. He did not care about that [Celestial Azure Essence]. That was just bait that Wei threw out. He might admire Miao Jun but he didn't really need the other in his service.

There was only one thing that was essential in his mind, victory!

Zuo Mo's presence continued to increase. The waves of sound quickly distanced themselves. The burning intent to fight was like fire in his eyes.

This was the first time he circulated the three newly changed powers inside his body since the Shifting Star Sands incident.

Endless power came from inside his body. A pleasure he never felt before made him feel so comfortable he almost roared to the sky. Every piece of muscle, every sinew was so lively and so strong!

He did not take off the bandage on his right hand. The Sky Glass Wave was adequate to face Pang Cheng but it was not enough for Miao Jun!

Every piece of muscle in his body was tensed like the string of a bow, the sun mo matrix at the center of his chest suddenly lit up.

The golden mo matrix was like a seed that awakened and quickly spread on the surface of Zuo Mo's body.

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

Miao Jun's expression changed slightly as he exclaimed, "Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!"

The jinzhi in the battlefield were effective against power but did not affect sound. This shout of "Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus" instantly spread through the entire battle stadium.

The stands that had been silencing their breathing and watching in silence suddenly erupted.

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

Who that cultivated in Great Peace City would not know of Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus?

A mo physique ranked third in general level!

Zuo Mo did not know the significance and weight of a mo physique ranking third in general level. But this was a great blow to those that were truly mo!

Why did Ye Ling think that Zuo Mo could become king when he discovered that Zuo Mo cultivated the Great Day mo physique? That was because there was always a legend among the mo.

Only those with noble blood could cultivate noble mo physiques!

No one had proven this saying but among the mo, especially low level mo, this was something that they all believed in. The Great Day mo physique that was second among colonel mo physiques undoubtedly provide proof of the nobility of Zuo Mo's blood in Ye Ling's eyes.

And Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus that ranked third in general

level caused many people's eyes to light up. The experts naturally snorted at the rationale about the noble blood but they were still full of anticipation.

It had been very long since such a powerful mo physique appeared. Everyone was filled with curiosity. What was the power of a mo physique ranked third in general level?

The Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus had a great reputation. Those that came before who cultivated it all were lords of one area. But that was just a legend. Right now, no one had heard of anyone cultivating Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus in the present mo world.

Sonic Boom, Shifting Star Sand, Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, everyone suddenly found that this youth was more eye-catching and brighter than they expected.

Zuo Mo felt the three powers that had been renewed inside his body. They were like three pieces of magnets that simultaneously attracted and repelled each other and maintained a dynamic equilibrium.

When his Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus was released without any restraint, his ling power and consciousness seemed like the shadow that his mo physique cast and continuously permeated his body.

Such a strange feeling!

A strange expression suddenly came onto Zuo Mo's face.

Chapter 588 - The Azure Air Kill

Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

Many people's eyes brightened. There were not many chances to see a legendary mo physique from such a close distance. There were many mo physiques, but the mo physiques that ranked in the top three of each level were extremely rare and were usually not even seen once every hundred years.

In the stands, some people hurriedly sent messages. They only discovered something so important today. When they returned, they would definitely be lectured.

"He has just achieved it," a black-robed man said in a low voice in the corner.

"Yes, however, Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus is very rare. It has been many years since it appeared!" An ethereal voice came out of a shadow.

The mo in the surroundings did not seem to see there were two people beside them. A mo was loudly talking a few hand-spans away from them but he did not detect that there were two experts right next to him.

"Qi Diao Yu has also come to watch." The black robed man said with a light laugh, "The others also have come. It has been very long since we all got together."

“If he sees you, then no one will be able to peacefully watch this.” In the dark shadow, that ethereal voice was slightly teasing.

“Hm!” The black robed man suddenly seemed to detect something, a shocked expression on his face.

“What is it?” the shadow asked.

“Look over there, that beautiful woman in black clothing. She isn’t simple.” The black robed man indicated with a pursing of the lips. “One beauty and one ugly. It is a very unique combination!”

“En?” The shadow also stilled slightly. “As expected, she is not simple! There seems to be a problem with the other woman.”

The black robed man seemed to savor it with his eyes. The surprise on his face grew. “Such a strange power!”

The dark shadow suddenly said, “I remember now. These two women were with Xiao Mo Ge. Xiao Mo Ge’s origins are probably not simple as well.”

The black robed man laughed. “Let’s watch, let’s watch, this matter isn’t our headache!”

“Yes.”

Bie Han appeared in the stands. Fu Feng stood behind him but Fu Feng's expression was extremely angry.

“Your Highness, the Eldest Highness has said that he does not have a solution.” Fu Feng did not dare to look at Bie Han's expression. He knew the depth of what His Highness felt towards Sin Battalion. Fu Feng had not thought that Eldest Highness would be so ruthless that he was even unaffected by His Highness' promise to set up his own household.

He was very worried that His Highness would not be able to accept the news.

He waited for a response to the news in silence, a deathly silence.

A moment later, Bie Han coldly spoke, “En, let's think of other ways.”

His Highness' tones seemed normal and the same as usual but Fu Feng knew just how cruel the matter was to His Highness! He felt extremely sorrowful. If Mistress was still alive, who would dare to be so disrespectful of His Highness!

If the master was humiliated, the subject should die in loyalty. Thinking about the humiliation and pain that His Highness was receiving, Fu Feng's heart twisted.

Bie Han suddenly said, “Uncle Bo, do not worry. This bit of trouble isn’t anything. Let’s watch the fight.”

The tone was still as indifferent as usual but Fu Feng could hear the concern in His Highness’ tone. He was even more moved. He did not waste words and secretly decided that he would definitely fulfill His Highness’ wish for him.

As Fu Feng thought about this, he unconsciously looked towards the field.

Suddenly, he stilled.

For some reason, he felt as though he knew the youth on the field.

But when he examined that face, he found it was a very unfamiliar face.

But that feeling of familiarity could not be erased!

So strange. Why would he feel familiarity towards Xiao Mo Ge?

Fu Feng was very puzzled.

————

Ling power and spiritual consciousness continuously permeated deeper into Zuo Mo's body. A cool wave seemed to form inside his body. Yet the domineering flame of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique caused him to feel a layer of fire was flowing on his body.

He did not have the time to slowly experience the changes in his body. He looked attentively at Miao Jun.

Not one opening!

Miao Jun's body was like a great and tall mountain that caused Zuo Mo to feel as though he did not know where to attack!

So strong!

Zuo Mo's heart trembled but the fighting spirit inside did not decrease but increased instead!

A faint layer of gold appeared on his eyes. There were exquisite and complex mo matrixes that floated in his eyes. The sun mo matrix at the center of his chest was like a burning sun that caused even Zuo Mo felt a burning pain.

The Sun Crystal Seed inside his body was unusually lively. Waves of heat flowed like lava from the Sun Crystal Seed. They circulated once around his body and then entered the Sun mo matrix at his chest.

The burning pain increased but at the same time, a feeling of coolness in the deeper part of his body became even clearer!

It was a conflicting feeling.

The gold in his eyes became more dense and his presence suddenly increased again!

Miao Jun, who had been calm all this time, shifted expression slightly. Xiao Mo Ge was like a ball of burning fire that had increased in ferocity and became even more dangerous!

Miao Jun decided to attack!

The words [Celestial Azure Essence] flashed through his mind. The killing intent in his eyes increased.

A strange azure color quickly spread over his entire body. Having been unmoving as a mountain, Miao Jun suddenly turned into a gust of wind and impossible to catch!

Azure Air mo physique!

His body suddenly disappeared into the air!

Zuo Mo's pupils shrank into pinpoints. He had disappeared, Miao Jun had completely disappeared! He lost all perception of Miao Jun!

“Miao Jun is really vicious. First move is [Azure Air Kill]!” A male that looked similar to Lan Tian Long said with a smile. His body was not as well-built as Lan Tian Long. However, the two were so similar in looks that people could easily recognize him as Lan Tian Long’s brother, Lan Rong.

Lan Rong then sighed in praise, “I have to say that Miao Jun’s [Azure Air Kill] is really unique. I don’t know how he comprehended his move. The Air Azure mo physique is not a very powerful physique. It probably is the worst mo physique on the Great Peace Mo Rankings!”

Lan Tian Long’s eyes did not move away. There was a bit of shock on his face. It was unexpected that Miao Jun would use his ultimate attack right at the start of the fight!

[Azure Air Kill] was the move that made Miao Jun famous. He could completely disappear leaving the enemy bewildered as to how they had died.

An unknown number of experts had fallen under this move. Miao Jun had stepped onto the Great Peace Mo Ranking relying on this [Azure Air Kill]!

Up until now, no one had been able to defeat this move.

So when everyone found that Miao Jun had used his ultimate move from the start, they were stunned.

Lan Tian Long also nodded and praised Miao Jun's ultimate move, "It's true. Even I cannot think of a way to defeat this move."

"One move for every use!" Lan Rong shook his head and smiled, "This is what is not good about watching Miao Jun's fights. If he uses this move, then there is no need to watch."

"Maybe there will be something unexpected today," Lan Tian Long suddenly said. He remembered the faint sense of danger that had appeared that day at the city gates.

Lan Rong was slightly shocked. He turned his face and examined his brother for a while. "It seems you have a high opinion of this Xiao Mo Ge!"

"We will see soon!" Lan Tian Long shook his head and said.

Hearing this, Lan Rong could only curiously look towards Zuo Mo in the field by himself.

Ceng Lian'er stared at Zuo Mo on the field. She carefully maintained her distance with Zuo Mo. Even though there was the jinzhi barrier, the power resonance between them still existed.

She still did not understand how Zuo Mo was able to cause the Shifting Star Sand that day.

In terms of likelihood, her chances of causing the Shifting Star Sand were much higher than Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo cultivated sun shen power, his mo physique was the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus, it was a hard and yang power. It almost was impossible for him to cause Shifting Star Sand!

But the reality was completely the opposite of what she predicted.

She had originally thought that she knew everything about Zuo Mo but found that Zuo Mo was a ball of mystery shrouded in mist.

A Gui silently stood next to Ceng Lian'er. Her expression was still wooden and she was unaffected by anything in the surroundings. Her empty eyes would only stare at Zuo Mo.

Ceng Lian'er glanced at A Gui and suddenly recalled the heart-shaking memory fragments in Zuo Mo's mind. Her gaze became even deeper.

“Hey, Miss, what is your name?” a young master came over.

Ceng Lian'er had a flawless face, and a seductive glance. She was like an orchid in a mountain valley that stood alone. For these young masters, she was a fatal attraction! A group of young

masters crowded over.

Ceng Lian'er seemed to not hear them. Her gaze fixed on Zuo Mo in the field.

“There is nothing to see there. Miao Jun is using his Azure Air Kill, Xiao Mo Ge is definitely dead! So boring. After so many years, Miao Jun still only has this move. I had thought there would be something new, ye has come for nothing,” the young master muttered. Then his expression became alert. “But I really need to thank him since I now have the chance to encounter you, Miss!”

Ceng Lian'er ignored him. She stared at the field and she could feel Zuo Mo's predicament!

The enormous battlefield appeared empty. He was the only person standing there!

Miao Jun had completely disappeared into thin air from in front of him.

He used all his skill but still could not find the other. However, a strong sense of danger caused his scalp to prickle. There seemed to be an invisible chain that was wrapped around his neck. If the other wanted to, he could tighten the noose at any moment!

The other was definitely still in the battlefield!

Zuo Mo's right hand suddenly flipped. A string of little yao arts shot out of his hand and flashed past the entire battlefield.

But they did not hit anything at all.

The stands became even hearted and the discussion became hotter. Zuo Mo's little yao arts were just little yao arts but they still astounded many people.

The systems of yao and mo cultivation were completely different. Mo that understood yao arts were very rare.

Xiao Mo Ge actually knew yao arts!

Zuo Mo's little yao arts stunned many people in the stands.

The waves of noise that heightened in the stands did not affect Zuo Mo at all. His nerves were tense and he was secretly on his guard as he searched every inch of space in the battlefield.

The feeling of danger increased like the noose around his neck had already tightened.

Cold sweat dripped down the tip of Zuo Mo's nose.

Chapter 589 - A Domineering Fire Of The First Heavenly Stem

Zuo Mo's eyes were wide as he furiously searched the battlefield. But no matter which method he used, he could not find Miao Jun's figure. However, the strong feeling of danger rose.

Cold sweat soaked Zuo Mo's back. He had not expected that Miao Jun's attack would be so strange and unusual!

Only now did he realize the strength of the Great Peace Mo Ranking!

Miao Jun who was ranked last was already so strong, then the other nineteen would be even stronger than Miao Jun! He had underestimated the people in the world. His recent successive breakthroughs had caused him to overestimate himself. A thread of regret flashed through Zuo Mo's eyes.

However, those distant memories suddenly flashed across his eyes like a tide. Those scenes filled with sunlight and warmth. Xiao Guo's timid and innocent face that was smiling, Li Ying Feng Shijie's valiant figure, they all appeared in his mind.

For some unknown reason, the terror that had taken over his body suddenly subsided greatly.

Courage returned to his body. His eyes became determined again. Fighting spirit filled his sweat-covered face!

Like sunlight breaking through the layers of dark clouds, the smile that rose on his face was just as bright.

“En?” on the stand, the black robed man was slightly shocked. He had seen the change in Xiao Mo Ge’s expression and presence.

Had he found a solution to use against Miao Jun?

“Can you guess what method he will use?” the dark shadow asked.

“I do not know!” The black robed male shook his head. “I’ve never fought against Miao Jun. I also do not know how to defeat his Azure Air Kill.”

“Then what would you do?” the dark shadow asked.

“Restrict his opportunities for attack by remaining motionless,” the black robed male said without hesitation.

The two did not speak more. Their attention turned back to the battlefield because Xiao Mo Ge had moved!

Zuo Mo slowly retreated back step by step until he reached the edge of the battlefield. If he retreated one more step back, he would leave the battlefield and lose.

He stopped walking and faced towards the empty battlefield. His body crouched like a wild beast about to pounce. His right fist that was covered in bandages was set by his side and his entire body was leaning forward.

This extremely offensive posture had caused all the people on the stands stop breathing. Was Xiao Mo Ge going to attack?

Zuo Mo's eyes were like balls of burning flame. He stared at the empty battlefield, full of determined fighting spirit and motivation. It burned his skin.

His mind was unusually calm.

No matter what Miao Jun had done, he was definitely inside the battlefield!

Since the other could not be found, he would attack until the other was hit!

The flames burning in Zuo Mo's eyes pushed. The furious fighting intent was like a flash of a blade in the air. The cold light appeared and a cold shout shocked the entire stadium. "Kill!"

The sun mo matrix at the center of his chest suddenly sprouted a burning flood of energy!

At the same time, the right fist at his side twisted and punched out at full power like an arrow shooting out of a bow!

At the exact same time, the flood of power that came from the sun mo matrix in his chest flashed like lightning into his fist!

Boom!

It might have been that his fist created enough friction against the air or that flames had shot out of his fist, but the bandages that wrapped around his fist had started to burn. The golden flames fluttered wildly in the high-speed air flow and quickly spread. His arm seemed to be layered in dancing gold flames, the long tongues of flame were flickering wildly!

Hmmm hmmm hmmm!

A deep and trembling roar that seemed to come from deep within the ground.

The rapidly spinning right fist carried the wild dancing gold flames as it punched out at the empty battlefield!

The first transformation of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus [Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem]!

In the stands, everyone's pupils suddenly expanded. They were unable to look directly at the fist, one that seemed to be a meteor crashing down from the sky with a long tail!

Boom!

A ball of gold light crashed into the center of the battlefield and suddenly exploded. The blinding golden light filled the entire battlefield!

Everyone on the stands felt the earth tremble beneath their feet and were unable to remain standing. The stands were full of shouts but these shouts quickly disappeared—they looked in disbelief at the field.

The dust settled on the battlefield that was now a complete mess. Shattered stone rained down and at the very center of the battlefield, a sorry figure appeared.

Miao Jun!

The stones continued to rain down. When the last stone landed, the people found to their shock that the flat battlefield had completely disappeared. What replaced it as a scattered layer of stone with blocks one zhang thick!

Miao Jun looked at Zuo Mo who was still in his posture of punching, disbelief on his face. His complexion was ashen. His Azure Air Kill had been defeated by this youth like this!

How was it possible?

How was it possible!

“Such a domineering punch!” Shock flashed through Lan Rong’s eyes as he murmured to himself.

Lan Tian Long did not speak. He looked at the battlefield with shock on his face.

“He actually used such a dumb method to defeat Miao Jun’s Azure Air Kill!” Lan Rong shook his head as though it was in praise but also in disbelief. “It really is really is”

He stopped. He did not know how to describe it.

“Could you stop this punch?” Lan Tian Long turned his face and suddenly asked.

Lan Rong’s expression changed slightly. He closed his eyes and a faint flush came onto his face. A moment later, he opened his eyes and shook his head. “I cannot!”

“Is the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus this strong?” Lan Tian Long stared at Xiao Mo Ge on the field and murmured to himself.

“How can the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus be this powerful?”

The black robed male stared at Xiao Mo Ge on the battlefield as if he was seeing a ghost.

“The Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus is not this powerful!” The dark shadow picked up the topic, his tone unusually certain. “He used some other technique! His body is very strong and this should be a benefit of the Shifting Star sands. Adding on that the way he manipulates power is very unique, this punch has been created.”

“But this is outrageously domineering.” The black robed male found it hard to accept. “I cannot guarantee that I would be able to stop this punch.”

“But you are able to prevent him from having a chance to punch,” the dark shadow said.

“Of course.” The black robed male did not pretend to be humble. However, he was slightly surprised. “But how old is he? Is there anyone so young who can be this talented?”

“The heavens are jealous of geniuses. This may not be good for him,” the dark shadow said indifferently.

The black robed male stilled. “You want to act against him? No way!”

“No, but someone wants to.” The dark shadow looked into the distance.

The black robed man followed the dark shadows gaze and his eyes focused.

The stands were completely silent. Everyone was stunned by such a powerful punch.

The seemingly normal flooring on the battle stadium was made from the best granite and was extremely hard. In order to make it even stronger, there were many jinzhi placed on it. Even though the surface had become pitted due to the years of challenge, but in general, it was still intact and very flat.

Xiao Mo Ge's punch had smashed the entire battle stadium's flooring!

Just how powerful this fist was!

Even if it was a mountain, he would be able to shatter it!

People stared in shock at the youth in the field that did not seem very strong. All faces were pale and weak in front of such a scene. The enormous challenge stadium was deathly silent.

When they saw Miao Jun use the Azure Air Kill they had thought that there would not be any meaning in watching this battle. Who would have thought the situation would reverse. People's eyes could not keep up with the quickness the situation changed.

In a flash, the one at a disadvantage was Miao Jun!

Miao Jun's expression was very complex. He stared at Zuo Mo with a changing expression.

It was not that he had never thought that the Azure Air Kill would one day be defeated but he had never thought that it would be such a young person that would defeat it. And in such a crude and savage method!

But when it really did happen, Miao Jun had to complement the other's unique thinking.

In front of such peerlessly domineering power, any concealment technique was like a trap made of paper. It was useless no matter how exquisite it was. Even if his Azure Air Kill had reached the border of Boundary!

There was a helpless smile on Miao Jun's face. Even if it was the completed Azure Air Boundary, it might not be something that could escape unharmed in front of such terrifying and domineering power, much less an Azure Air Kill that was just touching the boundary.

Too strong!

It was so strong it almost surpassed the limits of general level!

Miao Jun could see that this punch had been a great burden to Xiao Mo Ge. This could be seen from Xiao Mo Ge's panting and slightly trembling body.

But when his eyes met Zuo Mo's eyes, he stilled.

The gold energy in that pair of eyes had become much dimmer but what surprised Miao Jun was the burning fighting spirit was even higher than before, burning even more passionately!

Under the bellow-like panting, the burning fighting spirit was so eye-catching and was unable to be dismissed. Even if he was extremely tired, that dangerous presence did not decrease in strength at all.

No one detected that he had already lost the ability to fight back. Everyone felt that the battle was just starting.

Miao Jun stood up and silently looked at Zuo Mo.

"I admit defeat."

Miao Jun's sudden words caused the entire battle stadium to sink into silence.

But not a moment after the silence, waves of roaring sound

seemed to break apart the battle stadium.

How was it possible?

How was it possible!

Zuo Mo was stunned where he stood and looked dazedly at Miao Jun.

Miao Jun looked interestedly at Zuo Mo's expression as though he was not the person who forfeited. He was clearly very smug about the words he said.

“Do not think that you can fool me!”

Zuo Mo's hateful words caused the smugness on Miao Jun's face to freeze.

“You don't believe me?” Miao Jun looked strangely at Zuo Mo.

“Now I believe you.” Zuo Mo threw down this phrase and then straightened his posture. He instantly shouted in pain. “It hurts.”

He had not used the traditional Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem with that punch but used it with all of his power, including a thread of shen power to create such a terrifying effect.

But this punch was also a great burden on his body that had surpassed his imagination. Right now, there wasn't one part of him that wasn't in pain.

However he won!

Even though he was very surprised that Miao Jun admitted defeat, it was good that he reached the result he wanted. He did not care what Miao Jun thought.

At this time, something suddenly changed.

Chapter 590 - Waiting

A streak of green light flew out of the stands and straight down at Zuo Mo!

At this time, the jinzhi in the battle stadium had been deactivated. Nothing was blocking this green energy. Just as the green energy appeared to strike Zuo Mo, a black figure suddenly appeared in front of him.

The black billowing sleeve was like the hissing tongue of a snake that suddenly flickered and stopped the green energy.

Ceng Lian'er!

Faint murderousness rose on that seductive face. The deep black opal eyes flashed with a strange light.

Bam!

The green energy exploded. The sleeve billowed and then suddenly grew, stopping all the green energy fragments of the explosion.

The sleeve dropped and Ceng Lian'er's eyes flashed across the stands. The deep gaze caused people to feel cold from the bottom of their hearts.

This had occurred without any warning. Ceng Lian'er's movements had been as fast as lightning. Many people had not understood what happened. However, everyone was stunned by such an enchanting woman. Those that noticed her sleeve had stopped the green energy shifted expression.

This woman was very strong!

Ceng Lian'er moved her eyes but did not locate the attacker. Without a word, she grabbed Zuo Mo and A Gui. In a few leaps, they had disappeared.

No one dared to follow.

Black Stone Jie.

Gongye Xiao Rong's expression was black. Beside him, Duo Li's expression was ashamed as though he wanted to find a crack in the earth and bury himself.

Duo Li had been defeated.

The battle generals around them did not dare to even breathe heavily.

Gongye Xiao Rong took a deep breathe. He did not vent his anger.

He knew that the defeat could not be blamed on Duo Li. He had seen the entire battle and while the other had been strong, their strength was evenly matched to his side. The reason that Duo Li had been defeated was mostly due to the other's battle tactics.

Strange battle tactics.

When Gongye Xiao Rong thought about it, he couldn't help but feel slight incredulity. That was a kind of battle tactic he had never seen before. It could use the strength of the mo in the battalion to their greatest effect.

A xiuzhe battalion that used tactics based around mo, he had never heard of such a thing!

But these strange tactics was extremely powerful. Duo Li's performance was good but he was quickly picked apart by the other's domineering charge.

Even if it was himself, he did not have the confidence he could beat the other if he was encountering this battle tactic for the first time.

"Reflect well. You guys really have face to be defeated by an unorthodox battalion," Gongye Xiao Rong said coolly.

His subordinates all flushed bright red.

Gongye Xiao Rong glanced at them. "Go down, pay more

attention to what is happening on the other side.”

The battle generals under his command hurriedly left as though they were being pardoned.

When there was no one left in the room, Gongye Xiao Rong's expression suddenly darkened.

This time, he really tripped up!

He had not suspected anything when Gongsun Cha said they had just taken Orchid Home Jie. Thinking about it now that he had time to think, the situation was definitely not as Gongsun Cha had claimed. The other's tactics had clearly been trained for a period of time. In other words, those mo had been a part of the battalion for some period of time.

How could mo enter a xiuzhe battalion?

What was strangest was that the tactics of this battalion were designed around a group of mo.

Gongye Xiao Rong was muddled. Was this a xiuzhe faction or a mo faction?

Gongye Xiao Rong did not care about who ruled Orchid Home Jie. That place was extremely easy to attack and unable to be properly defended. For the present Tian Huan, it had no value.

However, when had he, Gongye Xiao Rong, ever lost so?

Thinking about this, he suddenly smiled.

So interesting!

————

Taking down Orchid Home Jie was a great encouragement to Gongsun Cha. What made him even happier was that the Orchid Hill Jie was at the intersection of Hundred Savage Realm and Dark Realm. Going from here to Dark Realm was very convenient.

According to the jie maps he had obtained, Zuo Mo would go to the Dark Realm by passing through the Orchid Hill Jie.

In other words, right now, Gongsun Cha and the others only had to hold Orchid Home Jie and could wait here for Zuo Mo.

However, Orchid Hill Jie was unable to be properly fortified. Gongsun Cha was extremely decisive. With a wave of his hand, he decided to give up on the other regions and only set up defenses around the chaos rift.

He concentrated all of his strength around the chaos rift. Anyone that wanted to take over it would have to pay a great price. Also, Golden Crow Camp was hurrying to come. When they got here,

this place would be built into a highly defended fort.

The people of the Rahula Clan were all sent towards Middle Granary Jie while A Zha Ge's battalion was settled around the outer perimeter of Vermillion Bird Camp acting as a barrier and meat shield. Lil' Miss did not have any sympathy for them.

A Zha Ge knew this was a hard task but he was smart. Since he had submitted to the other, if he did not integrate into this group now and earn their trust, then his clansmen would not have good days in the future.

So he did not hesitate to carry out any of Lil' Miss' orders.

Scouts from Tian Huan frequently appeared near the jie river but Lil' Miss ignored them. He allowed them to investigate freely. He thought clearly. What was most valuable in Orchid Home Jie was this chaos rift. He would not feel pain if the other places were invaded and taken over.

A short while later, the number of scouts decreased and almost disappeared.

Gongsun Cha realized that Gongye Xiao Rong was planning a new approach.

Mu Xi patrolled the camp repeatedly. Her calm expression

affected the combat yao below her. Their morale had not changed greatly after the defeat of their allies.

Of the alliance army, Mu Xi Battalion was the only battalion that survived.

Originally, she was to command the entirety of the allied army, but she had actually received great resistance from Bi Shan and the other generals. She was yao so she was naturally not welcomed as the leader of this allied army, one that was primarily comprised of mo.

The allied army quickly elected to have Bi Shan as the lead commander and in the following battles, Mu Xi perceptively detected Tian Huan's strategy. It was a pity that Mu Xi was unable to persuade Bi Shan and the others to change their strategy.

Seeing that it could not be stopped, Mu Xi instead found an excuse to delay her battalion's participation for a few days and so they did not land in Tian Huan's ambush. They managed to successfully survive. Mu Xi's astounding perceptiveness earned her the trust of her subordinates and everyone followed her faithfully.

Mu Xi recognized from the troop movements of the Tian Huan battalion that the other did not know about the existence of her battalion.

So she led the battalion to hide in the jie river of Cross pond Jie near Black Stone Jie.

She judged that Gongye Xiao Rong's first choice of attack would be Clear Daybreak Jie and not Cross Pond Jie. She was like a patient hunter and she was just waiting for a chance to take back Black Stone Jie in order to return home!

Suddenly, a scout reported back with an excited expression. "Daren, Tian Huan has moved. As you expected, they went to Clear Daybreak Jie!"

Mu Xi's eyes suddenly lit up. She said in a deep voice, "Gather!"

Such a good chance!

The attack had occurred in public and Ceng Lian'er coming out added on a spectacular brushstroke to Xiao Mo Ge and Miao Jun's fight. The Xiao-Miao fight that had been a hot topic became even more popular.

This challenge was full of wonder.

The peerlessly domineering punch that Xiao Mo Ge used shocked everyone. And Miao Jun's forfeit was something that every person did not understand. The strange green light and the weird Ceng Lian'er caused even more questions to arise.

Why had they tried to assassinate Xiao Mo Ge?

What was the origins of the beautiful woman next to Xiao Mo Ge? How was her true strength?

Those that cared also noticed that there was an extremely ugly woman next to Xiao Mo Ge as well but Xiao Mo Ge treated this woman much better than the beauty.

These all became topics of discussion.

Zuo Mo was not surprised that Ceng Lian'er had lent a hand. Just based on their paired cultivation, Ceng Lian'er had to save him. However, he was very angry that Ceng Lian'er had taken A Gui to the battle stadium and placed her in danger.

However, Ceng Lian'er ignored him and just drank tea in an easy and relaxed state.

Shu Long charged in. "Daren, Miao Jun has come."

Hearing this, Zuo Mo was slightly shocked. This guy really came?

Truthfully, Zuo Mo was very shocked that Miao Jun had forfeited the match. Even he himself, did not feel that the other really forfeited. He was almost out of strength at that time, and while Miao Jun's Azure Air Kill had been defeated, but he still had power to fight.

The situation was advantageous towards Miao Jun but Miao Jun had forfeited in that situation.

When Miao Jun walked in, he bowed properly to Zuo Mo, “Daren!”

Zuo Mo instantly felt uncomfortable. However, if he didn’t take advantage, he wasn’t Little Mo Ge. He tested, “You have really decided to work for me?”

“Yes! Daren!” Miao Jun’s expression was calm and there was no deception that he could detect.

Zuo Mo thought and then said, “I’m telling you now that I do not have Celestial Azure Essence.”

“This subordinate has guessed this.” Miao Jun’s expression was still calm. “It is not important if Daren has Celestial Azure Essence or not. This subordinate has admitted defeat, and will follow through with our bet.”

His expression was honest as though he was just stating a simple fact.

But Zuo Mo still felt it was slightly strange. But the other’s expression did not seem insincere. He could not think of a reason the other submitted no matter how he tried so Zuo Mo decided not to think. “You can find a room and settle in.”

“Yes, Daren!” Miao Jun nodded.

What did this person mean? Zuo Mo rubbed his chin. Looking at Miao Jun’s figure, he felt puzzled.

Was there someone this strong that was really willing to be someone’s subordinate? Zuo Mo did not believe it.

But if the other had some unforeseen goal, Zuo Mo felt there was nothing about him that was worthy of being targeted.

In any case, those that were barefoot were not afraid of those wearing shoes!

Zuo Mo comforted himself.

Shu Long quickly reported back with news.

One of the news items was that Zuo Mo had replaced Miao Jun and entered the Great Peace Mo Rankings and was in the twentieth position. Zuo Mo probably was the youngest genius that had entered the Great Peace Mo Rankings.

The other bit of news was that the princesses of three great families were coming together and would reach Great Peace City a fortnight later!

Princess Xia was among them!

This news caused Great Peace City to explode!

Chapter 591 - Old Acquaintances

“Oooh oooh oooh oooh! Spectacular! As expected of Great Peace City!” The one who spoke had an eye-catching head of orange hair that was flickering like a fire. He looked around as he walked, his face in an astounded expression as he kept on chattering.

His fellow was shrouded in a ball of black smoke that flickered uncertainly.

“Old Black, your wish is being fulfilled! However, I really cannot understand why you admire Shi Zi Ming!” The orange-haired yao twisted his mouth but then he puffed out his chest and hit it three times. He said righteously, “However, brothers have to be loyal, you said to come, and I have come here with you!”

The black smoke yao seemed to not hear the orange-haired yao’s words. He looked at the vast and soaring Great Peace City with devoutness on his face.

“Old Black, this is not good of you! Yao have to have resolved. Idolizing a mo, this does not make you seem like you have good taste.” The orange-haired yao urged him.

The orange-haired yao’s words caused the people that passed by to glare at him but he did not seem to detect it.

The black smoke yao refocused and knew that this wasn’t good. He hurriedly changed the topic. “Go, let’s go inside and see.”

The orange-haired yao's attention was once again attracted by the novel sights on the street and he occasionally shouted and yelled.

The black smoke yao also could not control his excitement. Shi Zi Ming was legendary among the mo and even more there were few people that knew he had once travelled the yao world, and even made a dangerous trip to the xiuzhe world. By coincidence, he had obtained a record left behind by one of Shi Zi Ming's followers.

He and the orange haired yao both cultivated according to these records but the yao arts that they comprehended were completely different.

The orange-haired yao was not a persistent person and after cultivating it, he threw it to the side. He didn't even know who Shi Zi Ming was. However, the black smoke yao was extremely attentive to the records and followed the clues, he ultimately found the legendary Shi Zi Ming.

He then started to ask around about Shi Zi Ming's history.

Fortunately, there was a lot of inter-mixing between yao and mo and the era of Shi Zi Ming was historically recent. So the black smoke yao learned of Great Peace City and of the Mo Skill Steles.

His biggest wish was to enter Great Peace City to pay his respects to Elder Shi Zi Ming, to study his Mo Skill Steles. Inside those records, the person had mentioned that Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming

had once sworn an oath to pass on all the methods he had comprehended to everyone.

When he learned about Great Peace City and the Mo Skill Steles, the black smoke yao started to pay attention.

Recently, the state of affairs was chaotic and the yao art houses had stopped their classes. What was even more unexpected was that a chaos rift had appeared near them and was connected to the mo world. The alliance between yao and mo caused this chaos rift to become a crucial transportation route that was now frequently travelled. The black smoke yao therefore pulled the orange-haired along with him on the long journey to Great Peace City.

“Three princesses are coming! Holy, this is frightening! This is going to be fun! I just wonder how many powerful people are going to come over!”

“Yes, it has been so long since Great Peace City has been so busy. Look at those businesses. Their smiles are almost scary and they are furiously buying inventory!”

“Devastating beauties, the gathering of heroes, it will be a great regret of a lifetime to miss an opportunity like this!”

“Haha, there is also a Xiao Mo Ge that likes to cause trouble! This cannot be a peaceful event!”

“Yes, yes! Xiao Mo Ge has never rested since he arrived, with him

present, it will never be boring”

The orange-haired yao that had been looking around suddenly stopped and crowded next to the passer-by that were talking. He abruptly asked, “Xiao Mo Ge is in Great Peace City?”

The passersby glanced at him .”Yes, he has been in Great Peace City for a long time!”

“Haha! That’s great! Xiao Mo Ge also came! Fun fun!” The orange-haired yao’s eyes lit up, and the bright hair on his head became even more dazzling as though it would burst into fire.

The passer-by immediately became interested. “You know Xiao Mo Ge?”

“We are brothers!” The orange-haired yao slapped his chest and said in a proud and loud voice.

The black smoke yao muttered under his breath. “It would be strange if the other even remembered you.”

But the orange-haired yao’s hearing was very good. He waved his hand carelessly. “That would not happen, he is a good brother, and loyal!”

The black smoke yao rolled his eyes and muttered, “Idiot.”

The orange-haired yao quickly got Xiao Mo Ge's address. As Xiao Mo Ge increased in popularity, all kinds of discussions arose around him. All of the information of him became common knowledge, including the location of the large compound he was staying at.

The black smoke yao did not want to be embarrassed and have the door shut in their faces but he could not convince the orange-haired yao so he could only follow behind the orange-haired yao.

The orange-haired yao quickly arrived at the gates of the large compound.

The guards at the gates glanced at the two people. One guard came forward. "Is there some matter you have come with?"

"We have come to find Xiao Mo Ge!" The orange-haired yao said loudly. "Go tell him that his brothers have come!"

"Brothers of Daren?" Hearing this, the guard was slightly shocked. He glanced at the two and then said, "Please wait for a moment."

Finishing, he furiously sprinted inside.

"My brothers?" Zuo Mo was confused. When he heard the guard describe the arrival's appearance, he instantly understood and a smile came onto his face. He had good feelings about that orange-haired that spoke of loyalty, liked to fight, liked being the center of

attention, and had a great opinion of himself.

In front of the door.

“The peerlessly loyal orange-haired yao!” Zuo Mo’s lips unconsciously grinned.

The orange-haired yao liked hearing people compliment his loyalty the most and hearing this, his face bloomed. His orange hair was like a bright ball of flame but he tried to make a serious expression. “Yao need to be loyal! Haha, you are also very good, you have loyalty!”

The black smoke yao curiously observed Xiao Mo Ge from the side. Xiao Mo Ge in the real world was completely different than in Ten Finger Prison. He had even more presence, and even more edges. Also, he was well-guarded.

He finally understood why other people could not find Xiao Mo Ge’s identity. Even after he defeated Corps Commander Yu Heng, the origins of Xiao Mo Ge were still a mystery.

So Xiao Mo Ge had been in the mo world!

Zuo Mo exchanged greetings with the black smoke yao, he remembered this best friend of the orange-haired yao.

The two followed Zuo Mo into the compound. The black smoke yao’s heart beat rapidly as he saw the well-guarded passageways.

The careless orange-haired yao did not detect these things at all. He excitedly boasted about the glorious fights he had been in since last seeing Zuo Mo.

Nan Yue, Cang Ze, and the others quickly came. When the familiar people met, the atmosphere became even rowdier.

The black smoke yao did not speak many words. He was observing from the side. If the news that Xiao Mo Ge was in the mo world passed back into the yao world, it would probably cause a great ruckus.

The other was younger than he had imagined and had become a gold battle general that could shake the world. The snowflake formation that he had used to defeat Corps Commander Yu Heng in the last battle had caused people to study the ancient battle tactics again and caused a great reaction.

Someone with a deep background had once said the higher-ups intended to give Xiao Mo Ge the position of a corps commander. However, they could not find Xiao Mo Ge so the matter was never resolved.

If Xiao Mo Ge truly became a corps commander, he would probably be the youngest corps commander ever!

The black smoke yao shook his head inside. He had to work harder!

He suddenly felt some admiration for the muddle-headed orange haired yao that easily integrated with the group.

This person was undefeatable!

————

Liang Wei wiped his face. His face was almost numb. He turned around and saw that his subordinates all had tired expressions. A month of concealed travel was an extreme test to any battalion.

However, they were not far from their goal.

“The blood mist has become thin.” Liang Wei reached out and pointed, his hoarse voice filled with indescribable excitement.

The combat yao with tired expressions instantly had bright eyes. Everyone knew what this meant. The blood mist becoming thin meant that they were very close to the xiuzhe world.

Ever since the Sky-Splitting Calamity, all kinds of chaos rifts had caused the Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie to become meaningless. But this terrible endless environment had always been a natural barrier.

No matter if it was xiuzhe or yaomo, they had withdrawn the armies they had once been stationed in Blood Sky Metropolis Jie. The inner areas of the realms became the site of their battles.

The battlefield that had once seen great fighting was empty and desolate, the smoke and fire having faded.

Those defense lines that had been built with such effort and care were empty of people. This place had lost all meaning.

Liang Wei licked his dry lips, his eyes as sharp as a wolf. They had not encountered even one person along the way but they still travelled under concealment to prevent being found by the other's alarm seals and formations.

The strategic meaning of the chaos rifts naturally surpassed Blood Sky Metropolis Jie but the fighting over the chaos rifts were intense. Both sides diverted a great number of troops to these locations. When everyone's gazes were focused on the chaos rifts, Liang Wei targeted the empty Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie

If they could cross Bloody Sky Metropolis Jie and enter the xiuzhe world, it would be like a dragon entering the sea. They could upend the other. Also, if they could capture a chaos rift that lead to the yao world, then this lonely army of theirs would truly come to life!

Many people opposed this risky plan but Liang Wei still decided to carry it out!

They were very close to their goal!

Liang Wei sent an order to rest. He smelt the scent of xiuzhe. This caused his blood to boil.

After the battalion recovered their fighting capability and started to travel again, they travelled for multiple days until the blood mist was so thin it disappeared.

A xiuzhe town appeared on the horizon.

Liang Wei's eyes narrowed. He raised his right hand, killing intent filling his face.

“Kill!”

Wei Sheng slowly advanced. Corpses littered the ground behind him.

He could not remember how many bandit groups he had encountered but if he encountered any, he did not let them go. The black sword in his hand seemed to have drunk its fill of fresh blood and now had a dark red hue.

Wei Sheng's gaze was resolute and clear. His body was as upright as a sword, and his tired expression could not reduce his heightened mental state.

He shook his head. The strength of these bandits could not help him to improve. He needed stronger opponents. He hoped that stronger enemies would appear in the future. The black sword in his hand seemed to understand what he thought and gave a clear hum.

The sound rang into the surroundings!

Wei Sheng tenderly caressed the black sword in his hand. The power of the black sword was continuously increasing. It was becoming stronger. The killing essence inside the black sword was like a vicious beast that was slowly being woken up from a deep slumber.

A peerlessly vicious sword was showing its first edge!

Comparing his jie map to the one that he had taken from the corpse of a bandit, Wei Sheng raised his head. He checked his direction and walked forward!

A sword and a figure walked forward together.

Chapter 592 - Giving A Helping Hand

In the darkness, Ceng Lian'er stood in front of a mo skill stele like a ghost.

The stars above her head were as vast as a sea.

She could feel traces of star power lingering around this mo skill stele. This as the mo skill stele where Zuo Mo had caused the Shifting Star Sands. Her gaze swept across the mo skill stele. She had repeatedly read the content on there but still could not find any clues as to why Zuo Mo could cause the Shifting Star Sand.

Suddenly, Ceng Lian'er turned around.

A male dressed in snowy-white robes silently appeared behind her. It was Qi Diao Yu.

There was a hint of killing intent that suddenly appeared in Qi Diao Yu's eyes. The water droplet that circled around him suddenly shifted and gave off a strange sound.

Ceng Lian'er felt the scenery in her vision change and suddenly became blurry. Her black opal eyes suddenly lit up. A serene light came like a deep night. The black sleeve spread with a strange and invisible ripple.

The water droplet that orbited Qi Diao Yu suddenly stopped making the sound.

“As expected shen power,” Qi Diao Yu coolly spoke, a light that was hard to describe flashing through his eyes.

Ceng Lian'er's expression quickly became enchanting, and her beautiful face even more seductive as she breathed softly. “Qi Diao Yu, so your aim is shen power.”

“Yes.” Qi Diao Yu's eyes flashed. His snowy-white robes moved despite the lack of wind. A thread of yearning appeared on his indifferent face. “When I came here the past, I understood what Shi Zi Ming wanted to speak of was shen power.”

“However, he did not state the most important part.” Qi Diao Yu said coolly, “I have searched around and have not found any clues. I had not expected to encounter people that cultivated shen power, and three at once!”

Ceng Lian'er's eyes became even more bewitching, her cherry-red lips slightly curved and her voice warm permeated one's mind. “You are really someone that pays attention.”

Zing!

The sound was like a sword humming!

A crescent ripple suddenly shot out and accurately hit the water sleeve that had appeared at some unknown time.

The soft water sleeve shook lightly and rippled like water. The crescent shaped ripple was dispersed.

“If the news spread, how many people would be interested? Haven’t these families stood guard here waiting for someone to understand shen power?” Qi Diao Yu’s voice was indifferent as though he was narrating something that was unrelated to him.

“Yes.” Ceng Lian’er’s tone was soft and with a thread of laziness. It was like a cat kneading on the heart of a person. “But that has nothing to do with you, Qi Diao Yu. You will not have any connection with this banquet.”

Qi Diao Yu’s eyes suddenly became cold and his killing intent rose. “But since you have come, I will accept.”

Ceng Lian’er smiled seductively. “Then that will depend on if you are strong enough! I like strong men!”

The sound rippled and before it dissipated into the air, Ceng Lian’er’s body flashed with a layer of moonlight. Then she quickly became faint at a visible rate in front of Qi Diao Yu.

Ceng Lian’er that almost became transparent blinked her eyes at Qi Diao Yu.

“I’m coming!”

The voice that was filled with seductiveness spread and echoed in

the empty air. In front of Qi Diao Yu, Ceng Lian'er slowly disappeared.

Qi Diao Yu's eyes flashed with thoughtfulness.

Zuo Mo did not know that something was happening with Ceng Lian'er in this night but even if he did, he would not care. The other was not his subordinate, and it had nothing to do with him.

After learning that Princess Xia was going to arrive in Great Peace City soon, Zuo Mo's restless heart instantly settled. Every day, if he was not keeping A Gui company, he was immersed in cultivation. The orange-haired yao, the black smoke yao, and A Wen were spending their days at the Mo Skill Steles. It was strange to speak of. The orange-haired yao who was such a careless person was extremely talented at cultivation. He was also extremely interested in the Mo Skill Steles that were mostly focused on mo skills. This caused the black smoke yao to rest some of his worries.

If this guy felt that it was boring, then he would not rest. Then no one would be able to accomplish anything.

It had to be said that the content in the Mo Skill Steles were profound and vast. Shi Zi Ming was a legendary genius and had profound insights on even the most ordinary topics. Every time he studied it, Zuo Mo would obtain something.

Zuo Mo's body that had been tempered by the Shifting Star Sand was unusually powerful. In his hands, many of the detailed methods mentioned on the Mo Skill Steles were executed with shocking power. Zuo Mo had comprehended a lot of the Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem. The Sun Crystal Seed had become unusually active after that and continuously released burning sun essence into Zuo Mo's Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo matrix.

The Sun Crystal Seed had a great preference for Zuo Mo's shen power. Whenever Zuo Mo drew shen power out of his right hand, a part of the shen power would be swallowed by the Sun Crystal Seed. With every thread of shen power it consumed, the Sun Crystal Seed would spin quicker.

Just like normal, a portion of the shen power was consumed by the Sun Crystal Seed. Suddenly, Zuo Mo felt some shifting!

The surface of the Sun Crystal Seed suddenly erupted in flame. Threads of fire turned into a burning that flowed along the gold threads of the Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus and suddenly entered a sun mo matrix on Zuo Mo's back!

Boom!

Zuo Mo's body shook and his mind was completely blank.

This flood was like ten thousand rushing horses galloping at once. They followed along the gold threads of the Sun mo matrix and rampaged.

A sun had become bright!

The flood that had not lost any of its momentum followed the golden tracks coming out of this sun and continued to advance.

Another sun became bright!

In a blink, the third and last sun on his back was lit up by the flood!

A moment later, Zuo Mo finally recovered from his daze. He felt that something else had appeared on his back but he could not say what it was.

He made a close examination. The Sun Crystal Seed at the center of his chest's mo matrix was slightly smaller than before but its color was darker. As it spun, it occasionally spat out tongues of flame that looked very powerful.

A break through?

It appeared so, but

Zuo Mo tried to move. The Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus mo physique did not appear to change. The second transformation did not activate.

However, Zuo Mo was not impatient. He knew, for the general

level, what was important was not advancing the mo physique but comprehending [Domain]!

[Domain] was the most powerful power that a general level could grasp.

He thought of that thieving baldy's, Ding Zhen, Lantern Fire Buddhist World. That power had been astonishing. Zuo Mo was extremely tempted by the [Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus Domain] that was unique to Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus!

Advancing the mo physique was a matter of time. His right hand would endlessly provide shen power. If he was given enough time, he would reach it. However, he did not have any ideas about [Domain.]

But he knew this was something he could not force. Just like comprehending sword essence, this required luck and epiphanies.

Zuo Mo could not influence luck but he could always work on his foundation. He hoped that his foundation would become deeper and sturdier so that was why he had studied the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles so hard.

But his cultivation was still disrupted.

Because Shu Long had come back and he had picked up a person.

Shu Long saw Zuo Mo and hurriedly bowed. “Daren!”

A mo was by his feet. His face was completely black and he was only breathing faintly. Seeing this, Zuo Mo hurriedly crouched down to look.

“Daren, I found him when I went looking for A Wen and the others near the Mo Skill Steles. I noticed that he wasn’t quite right so I brought him back,” Shu Long hurriedly said.

“Hm!” Zuo Mo made a sound of surprise. He pulled aside the sleeve of this mo. What appeared on the arm was a dense layer of golden mo matrixes, no, it was seal matrixes!

These were jinzhi!

The corners of Zuo Mo’s eyes twitched. He hurriedly inspected the other body parts of this mo. As expected, they were all covered in jinzhi!

When Zuo Mo took the clothing off the upper half of this mo, the dense layers of jinzhi caused everyone to inhale sharply.

Miao Jun was furious and gritted out, “Who did this? They should be killed!”

“It is jinzhi from Xuan Kong Temple.” In the sea of

consciousness, Pu Yao appeared like a ghost. He said in a cold voice, “Xuan Kong Temple has a very famous battalion called the Sin Battalion. The members are all yaomo that have been captured. They would set jinzhi on these captives, and extract a part of their soul forging them into puppets of slaughter.”

Hiss, when Zuo Mo heard Pu Yao’s words, for some reason, his scalp prickled.

This was extremely cruel.

Seeing people’s eyes gather on him, he repeated what Pu Yao had said. Everyone who heard this changed expression. As a mo, Miao Jun’s face was filled with murderousness as he kept on cursing, “Damn it! Damn it!”

“This state is caused by the backlash of the jinzhi.” Pu Yao was slightly shocked. “He has stayed away from Xuan Kong Temple for too long. The jinzhi they put on these bodies are in numerous layers and extremely hard to solve. There are many places that are tricky and dangerous. The most common backlash is this here. If they have not taken a certain kind of ling medicine after some time, a backlash would occur. This is one of the methods Xuan Kong Temple uses to keep Sin Battalion under their control.”

“The thieving baldies of Xuan Kong Temple! As expected, they are evil!” Zuo Mo said hatefully. He had a deathly hate of Xuan Kong Temple.

Looking closely at the jinzhi on this mo, Zuo Mo could see many

things. Right now, his skill in seals and mo matrixes was very deep, especially after he came into contact with mo matrix awakening. He had a much deeper understanding of these now.

“Maybe I can try to save him?” Zuo Mo murmured to himself.

Hearing this, Miao Jun’s eyes suddenly lit up and he said gravely, “Please, Daren save his life! This person is definitely an elder of our mo, he has been greatly humiliated by Xuan Kong Temple and cannot escape even in death. How can we, the juniors, sit idly and watch this?”

When the words left his mouth, Zuo Mo regretted it. It was easy to speak of, but hard to do. Not speaking of the mo bei that would be used, it would take great time and mental effort. It really was an unprofitable business.

Seeing the righteous anger on Miao Jun’s face, Tao Xing angrily spoke from the side, “Yes! The elders of us are being humiliated so, it really is really is”

Tao Xing was so angry he could not speak. He paused and then said grandly, “Daren, tell me if you need anything, I, Tao Xing, do not have any great ability but do not lack mo bei! In a few more days, the people I have told to deliver the mo embryos will reach Great Peace City. Other than the ones for Daren, I will sell all of the rest! Please, Daren, no matter what, rescue this person! No matter how great the price is, this one is willing!”

Zuo Mo was still focused on Princess Xia and wanted to furiously

increase his strength. He did not want to split his attention. However, since they had already said this, and he also felt great sympathy for the mo, he agreed thinking this would also adversely affect Xuan Kong Temple. “Alright!”

Chapter 593 - The Sin Battalion's Jinzhi

Bie Han's face was pale.

A member of Sin Battalion had disappeared and they hadn't found them even after searching all night. Sunlight crept in through the window into the silent room and across his body. But he did not feel any warmth at all. Under the sunlight, the lonely figure seemed desolate.

What he had been most worried about had finally occurred!

The time of the jinzhi backlash had come, and once it arrived, Sin Battalion would completely lose control and die, each in a gory explosion. Because he was worried about this, he didn't dare to use Sin Battalion because this would cause a backlash from the jinzhi to occur sooner.

The sunlight could not warm the sorrow he felt inside.

He did not care about the attitudes of his father and brothers, he did not care about the cold treatment he received. He did not care about any of that. The only thing he cared about was Sin Battalion, a group of mo puppets that he had interacted with for more than a decade.

He only had one wish: to take this battalion that was soulless and kill his way back to Xuan Kong Temple!

But he wasn't even able to do that!

Unconsciously, his knuckles turned white as he clenched his fists tighter, he buried his head deep in his arms.

He was a mo, but he did not know any of the mo fighting methods. What he knew, what had been taught to him was what the xiuzhe did. He knew that he was the same as Sin Battalion, something that should not appear in the world, even if the jinzhi on his body were removed.

They were like monsters, monsters that should not appear. Their best ending was to turn into dust in the sunlight and not leave a smidge of dust behind.

He did not care.

The only thing in his heart and in his countless dreams was a vision of him leading Sin Battalion back to Xuan Kong Temple, and torching it, leaving only a sea of flames!

But he could not even do that

He, who only knew xiuzhe fighting methods, was left in difficult straits in the mo world. If he did not have Fu Feng, his situation would be even worse.

He had never hated himself like this, hated his uselessness!

No, there had to be a way!

He suddenly raised his head. The light of his eyes was peerlessly vicious like a wild beast that had no way to escape.

At this time, Fu Feng suddenly charged in.

“Your Highness! Your Highness! I found them! It is Xiao Mo Ge! Xiao Mo Ge’s subordinate had picked up our person today at the Mo Skill Steles! Many people saw this!”

Xiao Mo Ge?

Bie Han’s gaze softened. He suddenly stood up. “Go! We’re going to find Xiao Mo Ge!”

Fu Feng had a hesitant expression.

“What is it?” Bie Han asked.

“Your Highness, it is strange to speak of it. This Xiao Mo Ge is very similar to someone this subordinate saw in the xiuzhe world. Even though his figure and appearance are completely different, but his actions and bearing is very similar,” Fu Feng explained.

“En?” Bie Han was slightly surprised.

“This person is called Zuo Mo, a disciple of Wu Kong Sword Sect and he is skilled in formations. This subordinate first saw him at a Sword Test Conference, and then interacted with him at Desolate Wood Reef. He left a deep impression on me. Your Highness will definitely remember how he had stopped Lan Tian Long at the gates that day and took away a xiuzhe. In here” Fu Feng said hesitantly.

A light suddenly burst into Bie Han’s eyes. He murmured, “Zuo Mo. Zuo Mo. Xiao Mo Ge, Xiao Mo Ge Little Mo Ge!”

Fu Feng stilled and then his eyes also lit up. He exclaimed in shock, “It’s him! Is it really him?”

“We’ll know when we go see.”

Bie Han walked outside.

————

Zuo Mo felt that Miao Jun should be a pretty good battle general but when Miao Jun displayed his battle general abilities, he shocked everyone. He was a gold battle general!

A gold battle general that not many in Great Peace City knew about.

In a spar against Ye Ling, Ye Ling had lost after a few rounds. Shu Long was not a match either but Miao Jun was full of praise. He thought that while Shu Long lacked flexibility in his tactics, he was methodical in his preparations and after more experience, he could be a great general.

But right now, their group was only these hundred or so people. There wasn't much use in having a gold battle general.

Miao Jun spent his time teaching Shu Long. He was a true mo battle general. He was not as versatile as Lil' Miss, but he had solid fundamentals and he was perfect for teaching Shu Long.

After a few lessons, Shu Long gained greatly.

At this time, the orange-haired yao and the black smoke yao came back from the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles. The orange-haired yao looked at Guard Camp that was cultivating and instantly became interested. He crowded over.

After watching for a while, the orange-haired yao was confused. He asked, "Old Miao, who is stronger, you or Xiao Mo Ge?"

It was the first time Miao Jun heard someone call him "Old Miao." He couldn't help but glance over. Inside, he thought the other was someone that was a very open person. He said, "Of course, Daren is stronger."

"I also feel this way." The orange-haired yao nodded. "Xiao Mo

Ge even defeated Corps Commander Yu Heng. Even I have to admit he is a genius on the same level as me.”

At the side, the black smoke yao rolled his eyes and couldn't help but say, “He is more of a genius than you!”

The orange-haired yao turned around and said to the black smoke yao in a serious tone. “I will not admit this.”

Corps Commander Yu Heng? He was unfamiliar with the name, but those that were corps commanders had to have some skill. Miao Jun was very confident in his skill but he was not sure that he could defeat a corps commander.

He instantly became interested. “Oh, I have not heard of this, tell me more.”

The orange-haired yao instantly became excited and boasted about all the glorious results that Zuo Mo had achieved in the Ten Finger Prison. However, he was an amateur when it came to strategy and his recounting was full of mistakes. At the side, the black smoke yao could not bear it and constantly corrected him.

The more Miao Jun heard, the more shocked he was, and the more puzzled he was.

The orange-haired yao and the black smoke yao clearly were not lying. Their expressions were serious and they were full of details.

Miao Jun had some knowledge about the Ten Finger Prison of the yao. To be able to defeat a corps commander of a regular corps in war chess. How great the strength!

Definitely the strength of a gold battle general!

But

He had personally experienced Daren's mo skills. If someone said that Daren was a yao, he would not believe it on pain of death. A yao could cultivate Ten Crow Celestial Apparatus? But he suddenly remembered that in Daren's fight against him, he had used little yao arts.

The more Miao Jun thought, the more puzzled he was.

Zuo Mo carefully inspected the jinzhi on the Sin Battalion mo.

“The Sin Battalion is a battalion that existed since long ago. There is a complete set of jinzhi and methods to control them. The battle general for each generation of Sin Battalion is very strong. You need to be careful.” Pu Yao gave a rare warning to Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo made a sound of acknowledgement and threw himself into studying the interlocking jinzhi.

The jinzhi were set up in a tricky fashion and Zuo Mo found that some of the jinzhi clearly mimicked the style of mo matrixes. However, the mimicry in Zuo Mo's eyes was at a very low level.

Not all the jinzhi on the Sin Battalion mo were harmful. It was actually the opposite. Most of the jinzhi were beneficial and could increase their combat abilities. Zuo Mo's world was broadened by many of the methods and he was greatly inspired.

It could be seen that Xuan Kong Temple had started to study how to engrave formations a long time ago. They had many methods that were very mature and unique.

Zuo Mo became even more excited as he studied. He could copy many of these methods right now.

He already thought of several ways that could perfect the effects of the mo matrixes that he gave to Golden Crow Camp. These would be worth thousands of jingshi.

Gradually, the jinzhi of Xuan Kong Temple were slowly exposed in front of him and peeled off.

But when the core jinzhi appeared in front of him, Zuo Mo inhaled sharply.

The innermost jinzhi was actually connected directly to the soul!

A fantastical method!

Zuo Mo almost did not believe his own eyes. The soul was intangible. The difficulty of connecting the soul to the jinzhi was so high he was stunned where he stood.

But he quickly refocused and his gaze became clear. He started to examine this last jinzhi.

A long time later, he shook his head and stood up again.

It was not possible to solve this last jinzhi and he did not have a solution. The incompleteness of the souls of Sin Battalion were directly related to this jinzhi.

Fortunately, while this jinzhi could not be solved, it was not a damaging jinzhi.

After completely investigating these jinzhi, Zuo Mo could not simply remove those dangerous jinzhi and used an even more daring plan—he was going to use the original jinzhi as a foundation to engrave new mo matrices!

“I heard that there is a great genius that appeared in Great Peace City. He didn’t just cause the Shifting Star Sand, he also stepped onto the Great Peace Mo Ranking. It has been so long since such an exceptional person appeared,” Princess Xin said with a smile.

Princess Xin was sitting up ruler-straight. Her long and slender neck would make people unconsciously of a swan. In truth, she possessed the noble blood of the Moon Lake Swan Clan. Her figure was tall and her appearance outstanding.

Princess Wan sat silently with a faint smile on her face like she was an exquisite doll. Of the three princesses, she was the youngest, her personality quiet and bashful.

Princess Xia said with a smile, “Yes, he is called Xiao Mo Ge. There have been people muttering his name into my ear all day. I’m getting callouses just from hearing it. I don’t know if he is even that strong.”

Princess Xia’s skin was fine and white, and her lips warm and seductive. Her eyes were an enchanting pink. Of the three, her looks were undoubtedly the most outstanding and her movements were bewitching.

“Now, even I am curious!” A handsome youth clapped and said with a smile, “It has been very long since someone strong appeared in Great Peace City. In the past, only that Qi Diao Yu could not be considered powerful. The other people are not up to our standards or they are old and have not hope of entering the marshal level.”

The youth’s tone was grandiose but did not cause people to think he was proud because he had the qualifications to say this.

Shen Yu, the most outstanding expert of the youngest generation of the Shen Family. Supposedly, he had stepped into general level

when he was sixteen and was the most likely member of the Shen Family to reach marshal level.

In these years, he had travelled around to challenge famous experts and had never been defeated.

It was only when he encountered Princess Xia that he was enchanted by her becoming her defender. He stood by her side and did not have any complaints.

When he heard Princess Xia praise Xiao Mo Ge, he instantly felt discontent. He decided inside that when the time came, he would definitely challenge Xiao Mo Ge to show Princess Xia who was the true genius.

The pitiful Zuo Mo did not know that a jealous someone was already targeting him.

Chapter 594 - Underhanded

“Cheng Shidi!” Gongsun Cha went over and gave Chun Yu Cheng a great hug. Chun Yu Cheng was usually immersed in his own husbandry activities and never left his place. It had been a long time since Gongsun Cha had seen him.

The two of them had followed Zuo Mo all the way from Desolate Wood Reef and their relationship was naturally intimate.

Gongsun Cha had been slightly surprised when he had received Chun Yu Cheng’s paper crane. Cheng Shidi wanted to come to the mo world. He said that it was best to raise animals here. Gongsun Cha knew just how interested in animal husbandry Cheng Shidi was and was not surprised. Little Savage Jie was a pretty good place and was almost completely under Shi Dong’s control. However, out of consideration of safety, Gongsun Cha felt it would be better to keep Cheng Shidi with him so he had Cheng Shidi come to Orchid Home Jie.

The seal formation fort here had been constructed and with Vermillion Bird Camp standing guard and he himself present, he was not afraid even if Tian Huan came to attack.

Chun Yu Cheng looked around curiously, “This is a mo jie?”

“Yes, it is called Orchid Home Jie, the nearby jie is called Black Stone Jie and has been taken over by Tian Huan. However, we do not interfere in their business and they do not dare to come make trouble,” Gongsun Cha introduced casually.

The xiuzhe along the way continuously sent out greetings to them.

“Then do you have mo steeds?” Chun Yu Cheng looked around and then moved his gaze away to ask the main point.

Gongsun Cha had wanted to reminisce about good times and was left with a helpless expression. However, he knew that Cheng Shidi was like this. He had already prepared for this question and called over A Zha Ge.

A Zha Ge was a mo that was born here and was very familiar with mo steeds. He would be a very good guide.

The Stellar Rahula Clan did have mo steeds that they raised. When they heard Lil’ Miss call Chun Yu Cheng by shidi, A Zha Ge instantly understood the status of this youth that looked absentminded and simple. He did not dare to slight the other.

He found all kinds of mo steeds that the people in his battalion used and then gave detailed introductions to all of them.

When he saw the mo steeds, Chun Yu Cheng could not pull himself away. He did not look at Lil’ Miss even one more time. Lil’ Miss knew his personality and was not angry. After saying a few words to A Zha Ge, he prepared to work on his own things.

Suddenly, a scout hurried over.

Lil' Miss stopped walking. Seeing the expression of the scout, he knew something had happened.

“Daren! Black Stone Jie is being attacked by a yao battalion!”

Black Stone Jie was being attacked by yao!

Lil' Miss suddenly smiled. A few days ago, the Tian Huan battalion had boldly and publicly left Black Stone Jie to go attack somewhere else. Now, someone had come to take their old nest.

He could imagine that Gongye Xiao Rong's expression when he heard the news would be spectacular!

Lil' Miss was slightly interested in this yao battalion that had suddenly appeared. This was no territory and it was not normal for a yao battalion to appear here. Also, this yao battalion appeared at the perfect time. From every angle, this was a planned and very successful sneak attack.

Gongye Xiao Rong was too careless!

Chun Yu Cheng did not even raise his head. He did not react at all to the news.

A Zha Ge was very shocked. He suddenly remembered something and hurriedly said, “Daren! This subordinate knows the identity of

this battalion!”

“You know?” Gongsun Cha was slightly surprised.

“Daren! There is a chaos rift in Black Stone Jie that leads into the yao world. It is the territory of the Palace Lake Wood Clan. This time, our clan had allied with all the clans to form an allied army to face Gongye Xiao Rong. Of the clans we contacted, we sent an invitation to the Palace Lake Wood Clan. They sent a little girl called Mu Xi. If it is a yao battalion, it could most likely be this one! They have not died yet?” A Zha Ge’s face was full of disbelief.

“Palace Lake Wood Clan?” Gongsun Cha murmured and then threw the question to one side.

Suddenly, another scout hurriedly flew in. Before he landed, he said in a rush, “Daren, Tian Huan has suffered a strong attack and sent someone to ask for aid. We stopped their people! They are asking to meet Daren! They say they will repay us after this!”

Gongsun Cha stilled and then felt it was amusing. “Asking us for help? They have really panicked!”

Seeing the scout waiting for his order, he waved his hand. “Say that I am not here.”

At the side, A Zha Ge sighed in relief. There was deep hate between the Stellar Rahula Clan and Tian Huan. Inside, he naturally was not willing to go help.

Gongsun Cha murmured to himself, “Tian Huan? I would be more willing to have Black Stone Jie in the hands of the yao!”

A while later, a scout came to report again.

“Daren! Tian Huan has lost Black Stone Jie! The remnants of their people are heading towards us!”

A Zha Ge almost jumped up. “They want to lure the yao battalion over here!”

Gongsun Cha smiled coldly. “There is no need to pay attention to them. It is good for us to see this yao battalion. They have lost so quickly, this yao battalion is not simple!”

Many hours later, a panicked-looking battalion appeared in the sky. Behind them were the orderly ranks of a yao battalion. They were completely at ease and switched between charging and following at a leisurely pace.

“It’s an expert!” Lil’ Miss narrowed his eyes. The yao battalion had a good rhythm. They kept up the pressure on the Tian Huan battalion who had to constantly keep their guard up and flee. It would be easy for them to crumble now.

A Zha Ge showed a joyous expression. He could also see the strength of Mu Xi. He wanted this Tian Huan battalion to be completely killed.

When the Tian Huan battalion saw the formation belt on this fortress, they were like people drowning that saw the last life-saving reed and flew over in a rush.

Before they could fly close, the large formations under their feet started to light up.

Hundreds of large formations lit up at the same time and illuminated the entire mountain valley as though it was daytime. Looking down from the sky, these one hundred large scale formations spread from the chaos rift and formed a semicircle that spread for dozens of li. There were seven layers to the formation belt, seven defense lines!

When the yao battalion saw such strong defenses, their troops paused. Charging into this kind of defense line was akin to suicide.

The combat xiu of Tian Huan had shock mixed with fear. How long had it been since they took over and the other was able to silently construct a formation fortress here!

The amount of manpower, materials, and wealth that such an enormous formation belt consumed was humongous!

Which power did Gongsun Cha belong to?

The remnants of the Tian Huan battalion stared at each other. They all saw the deep shock in each other's eyes.

“What to do?” a person hesitantly asked.

“We’ll talk after we charge! Do they dare to kill all of us?” another person gritted out.

“If they offend our Tian Huan, they would not have good days in the future! They would not dare! Charge!” someone else agreed.

They quickly reached a consensus and ordered the people to charge at the formation belt. The normal combat xiu did not think so much. The terror on their faces instantly turn to joy. Those formation belts gave them a feeling of safety they never had before.

Many people thought inside, if the sect also built formation belts like this, how could a yao battalion defeat them?

“Do not attack! Do not attack!”

“Sire, if you lend a hand in aid, my Tian Huan will repay you grandly”

Looking at the remnants of the battalion that was charging disorderly towards them, Gongsun Cha’s eyes suddenly became cold and sharp as a blade. He said in a cold voice, “Kill those that intrude the defensive line!”

Almost as his voice sounded, the formation defense line at the very front suddenly lit up brightly!

The battle generals of the Tian Huan battalion all paled. “Quick, retreat!”

Their exclamations were quickly drowned out in a roaring rain of light.

The blinding rain light was like a swarm of locusts that shot towards the sky from the ground and blocked out the sun!

Pew pew pew!

The combat xiu that had leapt towards the defense line felt their vision turn completely white. An enormous pain came from their bodies and they quickly lost all sensation.

Even in death, their expressions were filled with disbelief.

The other really dared to attack

They were Tian Huan

The battle generals that had sent the order stared with wide eyes in disbelief at the sky that was completely empty. Their eyes filled with blood.

A battle general shouted grievously, “Gongsun Cha! You are so vicious! Tian Huan will not spare you”

On the ground, Gongsun Cha gave a small smile and spat out, “Idiot!”

The formations at the very front lit up again and the enormous ling power vibrations caused people’s hearts to beat rapidly.

The battle general saw this. Gritting his teeth, his face was filled with hate as he led the remnants of the battalion to flee in another direction.

“Now we have offended Tian Huan again.” Chun Yu Cheng who was disturbed gazed up and said.

“It will be fine once you are used to the idea,” Gongsun Cha said casually.

They had become at odds with Gongye Xiao Rong once before this. If one had a score with a large sect like Tian Huan, one could only wait to be destroyed. Except if in Tian Huan’s eyes, you were as strong as they were. For example, it restrained itself when it came to the other three great sects.

But Gongsun Cha clearly understood Tian Huan did not think of them as an opponent of equal standing. If they waited for Gongye Xiao Rong to sweep this area clean, he would eventually find the time and energy to sweep them away as well.

Could one tolerate someone else sleeping by their bed?

Rather than that, it was better to go on the offensive first and trip them up slightly. Lil' Miss had great anticipation about how Gongye Xiao Rong would respond next.

Just thinking about it put him in a good mood!

————

Mu Xi watched the entire process. She couldn't help but show slightly shock and she sank into thought.

This battalion clearly was not from the same faction as Tian Huan. There probably was also enmity between them. The Tian Huan battalion had lured her here with malicious intentions. However, they clearly underestimated how vicious the other side's leader was. Even Mu Xi couldn't help but feel astounded when she saw the formation belts below unleash their powerful attacks.

The danger level of the other instantly skyrocketed in her mind.

One had to be careful to have such a vicious wolf for a neighbor. She carefully inspected the other's formation belts. The setup was nearly perfect and did not have any dead angles. She would need a battalion of at least eight thousand to attack such a formation belt and would have to pay an extremely heavy price.

She sent out a little team to pursue the remnants of the Tian Huan battalion that had fled. The battalion's morale was extremely low. As long as the harassment was kept up, the other would crumble.

What was most important now was not destroying the remnants of the enemy battalion but take control of Black Stone Jie. Originally, she had planned on going back to the yao world but when she saw the conflict between the two factions just now, she changed her mind and decided to hold Black Stone Jie.

Just now, this battalion had openly become enemies with Tian Huan. In other words, they were Tian Huan's enemy. Gongye Xiao Rong would definitely be wary of them and would not dare to attack Black Stone Jie with all of his might.

In such a case, the possibility of holding Black Stone Jie was much higher.

After thinking for a while, she made a decision. She needed to immediately return to Black Stone Jie and she need reinforcements from her family. Gongye Xiao Rong definitely would have gotten word of this and was most likely coming back.

Time was tight.

Chapter 595 - Smooth Talker

Bu Heng said to the shadowed corner. “You failed.”

“The woman next to him is very powerful,” an ancient voice passed out from the pitch black corner. His voice paused slightly and then he said, “I will not act again. Both of the women beside him are very powerful!”

Bu Heng was not surprised. He said, “You are afraid.”

A moment later, the old voice in the corner said, “Yes, I am afraid.”

“Do you know why you cannot get vengeance?” Bu Heng raised an eyebrow with disdain on his face, “Because you try to attend to everything and do not dare to gamble your life to fight.”

A cold and dark killing intent tightly restrained Bu Heng. Bu Heng’s face turned pale from the killing intent but he did not retreat at all. The mocking smile on his face grew. “Just like right now. You do not dare to kill me because you are afraid of my battalion! You are afraid that my battalion will destroy your family!”

“You are weak, you cannot let go of your revenge but you are also afraid of death. You hope to break into marshal level. If you cannot enter marshal level, you will be a worm crawling in the dark, trying to scrape out a living. Marshal level? Stop dreaming! Which marshal is a weak willed man?” Bu Heng’s cold words were like a

metal hammer breaking through the ice and shattering the other's mental defenses.

A moment later, the killing intent disappeared without a trace. A tired figure walked out of the corner. The old voice carried deep exhaustion. "You are right, I cannot get to marshal level."

"I can exact your revenge for you," Bu Heng suddenly said.

The other was silent.

"However, in return I want your life." Bu Heng stood up and walked away without another glance back. "When you have thought it through, come find me."

Before Bu Heng reached the door, a hoarse voice came from behind him, "How can you exact my revenge for me?"

Bu Heng stopped and said coldly, "You forget my Heng Battalion. A battalion in the top one hundred of Hundred Savage Realm, can I not get your revenge?"

"What do you want me to do?" the voice came from behind him.

"At an appropriate time, kill him."

"What is an appropriate time?"

“You will know when it is time.”

When he finished saying this, Bu Heng opened the door and left without a look back.

“Bu Heng left with his battalion?” Lan Tian Long was slightly shocked.

Lan Rong shrugged. “Maybe he feels that there is no hope. No matter how strong his battalion is, there is no use for it in Great Peace City. As for individual strength, he does not have anyone that can be used against Xiao Mo Ge.”

“This does not fit Bu Heng’s personality,” Lan Tian Long said as he shook his head.

“He’s left, and even took his battalion with him.” Lang Rong said unconcernedly, “What else can he do?”

“Alright, let’s not think about him further.” Lan Tian Long did not understand the situation and then threw it to one side. Suddenly, he looked with a smile at Lan Rong. “Don’t you like princess Xin? How about it? Are you unable to sleep from anticipation?”

A thread of embarrassment appeared on Lan Rong’s face but he quickly recovered. He shook his head, “She will not be attracted to

me.”

Lan Tian Long became silent. He knew that his brother was right. The Lan Family had some power and the two brothers were exceptional, but in front of the ocean of suitors for the three princesses, they were not special.

He patted his brother's shoulder and comforted, “There are opportunities everywhere. You have a better appearance than me, and you can definitely win hearts!”

The two brothers exchanged a look and then laughed.

A moment later, the two stopped. Lan Rong said with a smile, “Ha, however, they might not end up well this time. I feel that this Xiao Mo Ge is aiming for these three princesses.”

Lan Tian Long thought a moment and then said, “After you say this, I feel very similarly. He has been so flamboyant in his conduct, so high that he is almost flying. It is so coincidental. The more I think, the more I feel the same.”

“I just don't know which princess he likes. Ha, I wonder which person will be the unlucky one!” Lan Rong had some schadenfreude. “This Xiao Mo Ge is one that does not act according to convention. Those that he targets would probably have a headache! Haha!”

Hearing this, Lan Rong couldn't help but grin.

The departure of Bu Heng and his battalion did not cause great ripples. Everyone felt that Bu Heng did not have any ways to deal with Xiao Mo Ge. Rather than keep fighting, it was better to save face and leave.

Also, as the date of arrival of the three princesses approached, and all of Great Peace City was like a great stove that kept on receiving fuel. People's emotions became heightened and almost all topics of discussion circled around the three princesses.

Bie Han and Fu Feng were waiting silently. Tao Xing and Shu Long were at the side.

They had come to find Zuo Mo and Shu Long had received them but refused to disturb Zuo Mo. When Bie Han heard from Shu Long that Zuo Mo was saving that Sin Battalion mo, he quieted down.

He had enough confidence.

The room door suddenly opened and Zuo Mo came out.

“Zuo Mo!” Fu Feng suddenly said.

Zuo Mo had noticed long ago that there were two unfamiliar

presences at the door. When he walked out and heard this name, he clearly stopped. However, when he saw Fu Feng's face, he was very shocked. "Fu Feng!"

The two had interacted multiple times and he had a deep impression of the other.

"How is he?" Bie Han suddenly asked.

Zuo Mo glanced at Bie Han. He did not know the person so he turned towards Fu Feng.

After Fu Feng had the confirmation that Xiao Mo Ge was Zuo Mo, he was slightly excited. When he saw Zuo Mo's inquiring gaze, he made a quick introduction, "This is His Highness Bie Han, the Sin Battalion member that was lost is His Highness' subordinate."

He then explained the past events.

Zuo Mo finally realized and increasingly felt that Xuan Kong Temple was peaceful in appearance but was cruel in their bones. He instantly said in a hateful tone, "Yes! The thieving baldies of Xuan Kong Temple should die!"

When he heard that Bie Han had escaped to the mo world upon being sent to attack Cloud Sea Jie, Zuo Mo couldn't help but roar in laughter.

Fu Feng was slightly puzzled and hurriedly asked. Zuo Mo waved

his hand and did not mention that he was the master of Cloud Sea Jie.

Even though he did not receive an answer, Fu Feng's heart relaxed. It seemed that Zuo Mo and Xuan Kong Temple were at odds. The common saying was applicable. The enemy of the enemy was a friend. Adding on their past interactions, they felt even closer.

“How is he?” Bie Han was worried about the Sin Battalion member and couldn't help asking again.

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised. The Sin Battalion's soul was not complete and was like a mo puppet. In the hands of Xuan Kong Temple, they were expendable. Bie Han was concerned for the Sin Battalion member who had an incomplete soul so Zuo Mo instantly had a better impression of him.

He said with a smile, “You'll know when you go in and see.”

As he spoke, he walked into the room first. Bie Han and Fu Feng hurriedly followed after.

When they saw the Sin Battalion member standing silently as a puppet, light flashed through Bie Han's eyes. He did not seem to move but the Sin Battalion member reappeared like a ghost behind his body.

A light came out of Bie Han's eyes, his expression was shocked.

“You erased the jinzhi?”

Zuo Mo was very proud. “The problematic jinzhi have to be removed, and I also perfected all the jinzhi. I made them into mo matrixes. This guy’s power should have risen two times over! Aren’t I strong!”

Bie Han’s face was filled with disbelief. His thoughts suddenly moved and the Sin Battalion member started to spin at increasing speed. When his figure was a blur, he was still accelerating!

The entire room was swept up in the gusts of wind. Everyone was caught up in the wind while Zuo Mo and a few others remained nailed to the ground.

Suddenly, the Sin Battalion member stopped moving!

There was no transition between extreme movement and extreme calm. It was so strange it was nauseating.

Bie Han’s eyes lit up even more. Zuo Mo’s words were not wrong at all. The power of the Sin Battalion member had increased by more than two times! If the entirety of Sin Battalion could improve like this, the battalion would be terrifying!

Bie Han suddenly bowed towards Zuo Mo. “I have something to ask!”

Zuo Mo paused and hurriedly pulled Bie Han up. “Just say it.”

“I am sincerely asking Sir to remove the jinzhi from my Sin Battalion brothers and engraving mo matrixes,” Bie Han said with a serious expression.

“How many people do you have?” Zuo Mo asked suspiciously.

“Two thousand six hundred and twenty three!” Bie Han said.

Zuo Mo’s head swelled up. He hurriedly shook his head. “No way, no way! This is going to tire me to death!”

“Please, sire, agree. No matter the conditions, I am willing to agree to them!” Bie Han said without hesitation.

When Fu Feng heard this, he knew it was bad! He had interacted with Zuo Mo before and this guy had carried the nickname of the Scalping Zombie in the past. Everywhere he passed, he had even dug up the ground for three chi. Would this guy have any reason to give up the opportunity His Highness had delivered up himself like this?

As expected, Zuo Mo who had been seriously refusing just a moment ago immediately started to rub his chin. “Hem hem, friendship and business should be separated. Look at how much energy it takes, this takes great mental effort to solve the layers of jinzhi, and also to use my novel mo matrix method. It has not just solving all weaknesses for your Sin Battalion, it is increasing their power up a level! How difficult this is! Brother Bie, you are a professional, you should definitely understand the difficulty

involved in such a task!”

The pitiful Bie Han had never seen something like this before. He was instantly swept up in the speech. Even the experienced Fu Feng’s heart was beating rapidly. But he was unable to object because the initiative was in the other’s hands. He could only pray the other would not ask a too great of a price.

Zuo Mo’s spittle flew as he went on, “More than three thousand members! Such a vast amount of labour! I’m the only one who can do this, I will have to do all the work from beginning to end. But who am I, Xiao Mo Ge? A general level, gold battle general, genius that caused the Shifting Star Sands, an expert ranked twentieth on the Great Peace Mo Rankings! I ask you, how can my fee be low?”

Tao Xing gaped on hearing this.

The more Bie Han heard, the more insecure he felt. He thought that Zuo Mo was right. He swallowed. “No, no! Go on, go on!”

“Yes! I believe that you who is logical and knowledgeable would understand!” Zuo Mo was very satisfied with Bie Han’s cooperation. He paused, and asked, “Do you have many mo bei?”

Bie Han shook his head and obediently answered, “Not much.”

Zuo Mo was slightly disappointed and then asked, “Do you have some rare treasures?”

Bie Han shook his head. “No!”

Zuo Mo’s face was filled with disappointment as he sighed. He said, “Look, you do not have mo bei, you do not have treasures, then you can only sell yourself. Normally, even signing away your life would be considered a cheap price but Brother Fu and I are old acquaintances, so I will give you a discount. I admire Brother Bie’s moral conduct and will give you a further discount. So my friend I will give you the best friendship discount!”

Everyone looked at Zuo Mo and waited for him to name his price.

Chapter 596 - Great Peace Treasure Pavilion

Zuo Mo coughed lightly. “I hear that mo have long lifespans”

Hearing this beginning, Fu Feng instantly panicked, “Little Mo Ge, you cannot do this! His Highness”

“One hundred years!” Zuo Mo interrupted Fu Feng.

“Take it or leave it, there is no second offer! As for Xuan Kong Temple, do not worry. I will destroy those thieving baldies sooner or later! I will not stop you from having your revenge.”

Zuo Mo’s price scared everyone. Tao Xing’s face was slightly pale, much less Fu Feng. He was completely white in fright.

Bie Han was silent.

Zuo Mo counted on his fingers. “It is only one hundred years, you will not lose out. Think about it. You are mo, your life is long to begin with, one hundred years, that’s a flick of the finger, a brief moment of life! What is that worth? Think about it, this Sin Battalion, other than the things I’ve already talked about, I have to be responsible for after-sale services, equipping them, and also providing food and shelter, that’s a huge expense. Think again, can you really charge into Xuan Kong Temple the way your are now? Not just one Sin Battalion, even if you had ten battalions, you will not manage to make it far. They are one of the great four! Even a hair of their back is thicker than you! Your thinking is very naïve!”

Bie Han was silent. He knew that what Zuo Mo said was correct. No matter how strong he was, he could not destroy Xuan Kong Temple with just Sin Battalion alone. They would not even be able to step onto Xuan Kong Temple. The other had enough battalions to wear him down and also had defensive formations everywhere.

“If you do not care about revenge and are just seeking a way to die, then I have nothing further to say. But if it was me who had such great hate with Xuan Kong Temple, it would be strange if I don’t upend them. I want them to cry when they hear the name of Little Mo Ge, and then I will flatten Xuan Kong Temple and burn it to the ground. Oh, that will be good!”

Bie Han’s expression shifted, his fists unconsciously tightened.

“Brother, that is what pleasurable revenge is! What you want to do is called seeking your own death. You are providing Xuan Kong Temple with a benefit, making it so they have one less thing to worry about! That’s not how you take revenge, we need to consider strategy, timing, we need to strengthen ourselves, and weaken the other. Even if we cannot destroy them, we have to at least be like a fish bone stuck in their throat and make them uncomfortable, so that they cannot rest in peace!”

Zuo Mo’s tone turned.

“Your skill in fighting is pretty good but not in this. However, I can do it!”

Zuo Mo patted his chest loudly, and said with a serious expression, “I am the master of Cloud Sea Jie, I have many armies, and a specialized forging camp. I have xiuzhe, yao, mo in my service. If you work with me for a hundred years, we strengthen our forces, then can’t we step on Xuan Kong Temple like stepping on a worm?”

“Brother!” Zuo Mo persuaded. “Just one hundred years, a slight fraction of your life. Compared to your deep hatred, what is that worth? Such a profitable transaction!”

“Alright! I agree!” Bie Han suddenly raised his head, his face filled with murderousness. “You are right, I want them to be unable to eat and rest in peace! Each day that we are alive, they will not rest in peace for that day!”

Fu Feng looked dazedly at His Highness. He had not expected His Highness to agree like this. He wanted to cry. What kind of person did not bargain when doing business?

“Great!” Zuo Mo clapped his hand and said to Bie Han with an admiring expression. “A true man has to be decisive like this!”

Tao Xing’s face was slightly pale. He was completely frightened by this business deal that occurred right in front of him. One hundred years! Such light words for one hundred years of servitude!

Now that he thought about it, the mo embryos that he had to pay that day were really a cheap price! He looked in sympathy at Bie

Han. Pitiful child, you are so pitiful to have to asked this person for help.

Zuo Mo suddenly turned around and faced Tao Xing. “Old Tao, the materials”

Tao Xing who was in a frightened state almost jumped up. “Ah ah ah ah! Materials oh oh oh, the materials, no problem! I will provide all of it, freely!”

Zuo Mo was very happy and patted Tao Xing’s shoulder warmly. “Old Tao, I just knew that you are the one that understands me the best!”

Tao Xing’s expression almost froze on his face as he nodded frantically. “This is something that I should do!”

He really was frightened

So scary

In the sea of consciousness.

“One hundred years is too short!” Pu Yao was unsatisfied.

“You should have signed him for a lifetime. He would still agree,” Wei said with a smile, “if you will let him have his revenge.”

Zuo Mo rolled his eyes. “I, Little Mo Ge, care about holding to my morals when doing business.”

His tone suddenly changed as he said seriously. “I used shen power.”

Pu Yao and Wei simultaneously stilled.

Zuo Mo’s face was grave. “The last jinzhi on the Sin Battalion member that was connected to the soul was created with shen power.”

“Shen power?” Pu Yao and Wei’s expressions became grave.

“Xuan Kong Temple has grasped shen power?” Wei was slightly surprised.

“I don’t know, it should be a kind of shen power that is not fully developed.” Zuo Mo thought and then said, “But it definitely is a kind of shen power. I cannot describe it. The ling power I used was consumed and because there was no other way, I was forced to use shen power in order to complete the mo matrix.”

Pu Yao’s expression recovered as he smiled coldly. “Xuan Kong Temple is not dumb. How can they not have any ambitions for obtaining shen power? It probably isn’t just them. The other sects

probably are also studying it in secret.”

Zuo Mo’s mind shifted. “So the truth is that the four great sects pursue the descendants of ancient tribes for shen power?”

“Clearly!” Pu Yao’s cold smile remained. “They were not good people before.”

“Be careful, do not let anyone else know that you cultivate shen power,” Wei said gravely.

“En, don’t worry, it is not easy even for me to manipulate this shen power,” Zuo Mo said helplessly. However, then his mood went up as he snickered. “However, it is very beneficial for my shen power when I remake the mo matrices for Sin Battalion. Especially those jinzhi. There are many places where I need to use shen power. I can profit and I can also cultivate shen power, I’m really a genius! Haha!”

“Oh, then there less of a loss.” Wei said neutrally.

“It is better than nothing.” Pu Yao said lazily.

Ceng Lian’er was not in a good mood. It had been a few days since Zuo Mo had cultivated. He was working on the Sin Battalion. If Zuo Mo did not cultivate, she could not use paired cultivation. She had already detected the increase of shen power inside her body

had slowed down.

Her teacher had once told her that the cultivation method she used was not complete and there were many chapters that had been lost. Even though the previous generations had spent great effort to try to repair it, but it still could not reach the effects they hoped for.

There were rarely those of her teacher's lineage that could cultivate shen power.

For example, her teacher's teacher never obtained shen power. There were many details in a profound method like shen power that could not be described in words alone.

She had finally managed to cultivate shen power and found someone to perform paired cultivation with. Her good fortune was many times that of her teacher.

Yet what she felt helpless about was that Zuo Mo was not currently cultivating!

If Zuo Mo did not cultivate, she could not use paired cultivation and her shen power growth was unusually slow. She had tried to copy Zuo Mo and went to read the Mo Skill Steles but she found she was quickly unable to keep reading. The things the Mo Skill Steles talked about were too simple. The final goal of the Mo Skill Stele was shen power but that was just one section of the content and was extremely hidden. There was nothing mentioned about the things past obtaining shen power.

After reading through it, she threw it to the side.

That time, she had only fought briefly with Qi Diao Yu but she felt great wariness of the other's power. Her shen power was still too weak and Qi Diao Yu had managed to discover it. This really was too dangerous.

If the news spread, she would have to run for her life.

In the last few days, she did not leave the residence and stayed inside the courtyard. The compound was heavily guarded and even Qi Diao Yu would not dare to carelessly charge in.

But Zuo Mo actually was not cultivating shen power!

Thinking about this, she was so angry she wanted to throw the teacup in her hand.

He was not focusing on his actual work!

She decided to think of a solution.

————

“Public safety is very chaotic recently,” Princess Xin's brow creased, “bandits have kept appearing along the way. I heard that there are more bandits gathering to target us.”

A youth smiled and said, “Princess, do not worry, with us guarding you, no matter how many they come, we just have a few more opponents to practice against.”

Princess Xin did not like the other’s frivolous tone. “There may be experts among the bandits.”

The youths neither shook their head or smiled. Most of them were strong even among their families and naturally looked down on the bandits.

Princess Xia smiled. “Elder Sister does not need to worry. After a few more days, we will reach Great Peace City and have some peace.”

Princess Xin’s expression eased slightly. “Younger Sister is right.”

There wasn’t any battalion that dared to fight in Great Peace City. This was also applicable to the bandits. There had never been any bandits that dared to rampage in Great Peace City.

“Which of you have heard of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” a youth suddenly spoke.

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion? What is that?” The other youths heard this and crowded over.

The youth had a proud expression. “The news that just recently spread. Supposedly, Shi Zi Ming had collected innumerable treasures so he built Great Peace Treasure Pavilion. In the first three years of the Great Peace City, this Great Peace Treasure Pavilion always existed and it was mentioned in many records. But later, due to unknown reasons, the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion disappeared, and Shi Zi Ming never talked about it again as though it never existed.”

All of the people’s interests were stirred and they asked, “And then?”

“News spread just a while ago that the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion is going to appear again. We can have a good look when we go this time!”

“Stop gossiping! Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, I’ve gone to Great Peace City many times and never heard of some Great Peace Treasure Pavilion!”

“That might not be the case! I have seen records about the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, I think on the [Great Peace Travel Records.]”

“I’ve also read about it!”

“Is there really a Great Peace Treasure Pavilion? We need to go search! If we find it, we’ll be rich!”

“Dream on!”

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” Princess Xin seemed to think of something and an indecipherable light flashed through her eyes.

Chapter 597 - Shen Power Breathing

While people waited for the three princesses to reach Great Peace City, Zuo Mo was in a disheveled state engraving mo matrixes for the Sin Battalion. Helping more than three thousand members of Sin Battalion was like an ocean that he could not see the end of! They were the same mo matrixes that he repeated made and then awakened. After repeating hundreds of them, he knew what to do even if did so with his eyes closed. After doing more than five hundred, he wanted to throw up!

However, he quickly found a miraculous method. He remembered that when he used the Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem, his mo physique would burn while his ling power and spiritual consciousness would continue to permeate into his body.

He had found that when this state was maintained for a while, his shen power would silently enter his head. He would enter a wondrous state where his mind was clear and without any emotion. All of his emotions seemed separate from him while his body and consciousness attained a very terrifying level of control.

In this state, Zuo Mo's every movement was flawless. Even his shen power that he usually struggled to manipulate was able to be manipulated to do tasks of great difficulty.

In this state, Zuo Mo was like the perfect mo puppet and his efficiency was several times higher than previously.

He processed the Sin Battalion members one after the other,

sending out of his room with their jinzhi removed. All the people watching were shocked by his speed. They seemed to have a feeling that Zuo Mo was completing the process as easily as drinking water.

In a short span of ten days, Zuo Mo had finished all the work!

More than three thousand Sin Battalion members! He sent them all out of the room!

When Zuo Mo exited from this wondrous state, exhaustion hit him like the tide and swallowed him in an instant. He felt his vision black out and he fell unconsciousness hitting the ground with a thud.

Shu Long and the others heard the noise inside the room. They paled and pushed open the room. When they went to go examine Zuo Mo, Ceng Lian'er suddenly appeared. "It would be best if you do not touch him!"

Seeing the untrusting gazes of Shu Long and the others. She did not explain and said, "Wait for a moment and you will see."

As expected, just as she finished speaking, faint golden light came out of Zuo Mo's body. This layer of golden light was very faint. If it was not that the light in the room was very dim, this layer of light would be very hard to detect.

The weak light seemed to brighten and dim in turn as though it

was breathing.

Shu Long and the others carefully and quietly moved about afraid they would disturb Zuo Mo. After Ceng Lian'er stopped them even the stupidest person understood that what was happening was not a bad thing.

Ceng Lian'er looked at Zuo Mo and a complex expression flashed across her face.

She could not understand why this youth that appeared foolish, and did not possess an inheritance technique as complete as hers was both ahead and advancing faster than her?

Shen power. These two words had buried mountains of bones. How many geniuses had fallen under these two words and never obtained anything?

Even an astounding genius like Qi Diao Yu was stuck outside the entryway and was unable to enter.

Yet Zuo Mo had already reached the level of "Shen Power Breathing!"

Zuo Mo probably did not know what "Shen Power Breathing" was but Ceng Lian'er who had a more complete inheritance knew that "Shen Power Breathing" was the sign that his shen power had had an initial breakthrough.

There had only been two ancestors in her lineage of teachers that had completed "Shen Power Breathing." This was also why she had received such complete inheritance of knowledge.

She had not yet solved the mystery of the Shifting Star Sands and now he had achieved shen power breathing in front of her.

Ceng Lian'er could not help but feel slightly demotivated. Maybe this youth that did not look very unique contained a monster inside!

It would be good if she could explore his body again. Ceng Lian'er sighed inside. A situation like the previous one would occur once in a thousand years and would not likely appear again.

No one noticed that when the golden layer of light on Zuo Mo's body brightened and dimmed, the light in A Gui's eyes seemed to respond, brightening and dimming in turn.

Suddenly, there was a commotion outside.

Ceng Lian'er hearing was keen. When she focused, the sounds outside flooded into her ears.

"Look!"

"What is that?"

“Heavens! It is the Mo Skill Steles!”

Ceng Lian'er's pupils suddenly contracted. Her figure flashed and she flew into the sky. When she got to a high height and looked in the direction of the Mo Skill Steles, she was instantly stunned freezing where she was.

The soaring steles seemed even more ancient in the night, like statues standing guard in the dark. They stood in rows and formed a forest.

Yet at this time, the black stele forest was releasing faint aura a sea of light.

It brightened and dimmed as though it was breathing.

Many mo furiously flew towards the stele forest. There was joy on their faces, shock, and faint terror. After so many years had past and nothing like this had ever occurred to the Great Peace Mo Skill Steles.

Ceng Lian'er seemed to be suddenly struck by lightning as she abruptly turned her head to look down—in the room below, the light flowing on Zuo Mo's body brightened and dimmed at the same rhythm!

————

“Finally, we are going to reach Great Peace City.” Princess Xia

stretched. The light gossamer silk was unable to conceal her fine figure. The exaggerated curves, the lazy and seductive expression on her face. It could cause any man to unconsciously swallow.

Princess Xin smiled slightly. She was used to the scene in front of her. Even she couldn't help but admire Princess Xia's attractiveness sometimes. She said with a light laugh, "Yes, we have travelled for so many days. I just want to find a place to rest for a while. This Smoke Cloud Beast is very good but it is not comfortable enough."

The Smoke Cloud Beast was enormous and light. Its body was like a cloud or mist, and its stomach formed its own world and could hold thousands of people. It had a warm personality. While it was fast when it flew, it was very steady. Due to this, it was widely preferred by the prestigious families.

The young masters that were seated all nodded in agreement. If it wasn't for the three princess here, none of them would be willing to stay inside for this long.

Suddenly, everyone felt their bodies become heavy. One person said with a smile, "We're here, it is starting to descend."

Just at this time, someone suddenly shouted in shock, "Quick, look! All of you, look!"

People heard this exclamation. Surprised, they stood and flew into the sky.

When their gazes turned to Great Peace City, they were all astounded by the scene in front of them.

The Mo Skill Steles that were the most eye-catching structure in the Great Peace City were shrouded in bright white light that pulsed like the breathing of a giant beast.

Gongye Xiao Rong rescued the remnants of the battalion. When he turned and saw the yao battalion that had fled, he did not chase after them.

His face was dark as he listened to his subordinate narrate what had happened. When he heard that Gongsun Cha did not hesitate in attacking them, a thick burst of killing intent flashed through his eyes.

He decided to have the sect investigate where this Gongsun Cha really came from. Thinking about it now, Gongsun Cha did not seem to have any fear of Tian Huan and his attitude could not be said to be friendly but it did not seem to be hateful. After thinking about it, he felt that Gongsun Cha's attitude could be called fearlessness.

It was clear that Gongsun Cha had great confidence in their power. Even facing Tian Huan, they did not have any fear.

This was definitely the attitude of a great faction!

Actually, when he received the news that the yao battalion was attacking Black Stone Jie, he knew that he had made a fatal mistake. This yao battalion had hidden by the side and waited for the best chance for a sneak attack. The leader's skill could not be underestimated.

Gongye Xiao Rong rescued the remnants of the battalions but he did not head for Black Stone Jie. He sent the order to turn around.

His subordinates paled and came to ask why did they not attack Black Stone Jie? Gongye Xiao Rong forcibly suppressed all the questions. He did not explain himself and instead sent an order to travel at the fastest possible speed.

He instantly understood Gongsun Cha's attitude from his response.

The other would not object to attacking him from behind at a crucial moment.

Was this person really a xiuzhe?

Gongye Xiao Rong shook his head and removed all of the stray thoughts from his mind. His eyes became determined again. They only had one road left!

A yao battalion had suddenly crossed Blood Sky Metropolis Jie and charged into the Four Realms.

In a short twenty days, this yao battalion seemed to be invincible and crossed six jie. Before any battalion could react, they suddenly appeared in Ten Thousand Fortune Jie of Xi Xuan Realm.

The chaos rift of Ten Thousand Fortune Jie was connected with the yao realm. The two sides were in a fierce fight for control of the chaos rift.

At such a crucial time the Liang Wei Battalion suddenly appeared a ghost behind the xiuzhe lines and easily took control of the chaos rift!

Ten Thousand Fortune Jie landed in the hands of the yao!

Then Liang Wei left the arrangements for the defense line to his allies and advanced deeper into xiuzhe territory alone. Before the xiuzhe could react, he had defeated four jie. Along the way, he slaughtered everything and everyone, shocking people with his viciousness and ruthlessness! The xiuzhe along the way all fled in panic. In a few short days, the four jie that had been prosperous days before were now empty of all people.

Liang Wei's infamy quickly spread through the world!

And on the same day.

The female battle general, Mu Xi, of the Palace Lake Wood Clan suddenly attacked Black Stone Jie and took over. She also successfully cut off the retreat path between Gongye Xiao Rong and Tian Huan. This meant that Gongye Xiao Rong was now isolated and in a dangerous situation!

In a short span of one day, the winds had suddenly shifted.

In the previous conflicts the yao had been at a disadvantage, but this sudden shift was without warning and Tian Huan and Xi Xuan both suffered great losses.

Xi Xuan lost four jie but that did not harm their core strength. In comparison, Tian Huan's hearts were burning. The loss of Gongye Xiao Rong would be a great loss for them.

In response, Tian Huan immediately put pressure on multiple battle fronts.

When an enormous entity like Tian Huan moved at full power, the forces it could gather was terrifying. In a short six days, it defeated six jie. Six passages suddenly appeared between Tian Huan and the mo realm but each was still very far from Gongye Xiao Rong.

Xi Xuan was also furious about the loss of the four jie. On one front, they sent famous generals to kill Liang Wei Battalion and on the other, they sent supplies and reinforcements to Gu Liang Dao.

Gu Liang Dao, whose forces expanded in power, did not disappoint Xi Xuan. He instantly surrounded the mo that he had been facing and then ambushed the mo battalion reinforcements that had come.

Instantly, all barriers to Gu Liang Do's advancement disappeared.

Gu Liang Dao Battalion moved in and captured four jie!

The battle situation suddenly reached a climax without anyone prepared for it!

Chapter 598 - Highest Priority Order

When Zuo Mo woke up, he felt unspeakably comfortable, refreshed and rid of all exhaustion.

“Daren!” Shu Long who had been waiting at the side had a joyous expression.

Zuo Mo smiled. When his gaze landed on A Gui sitting at the side, he showed surprise. He grabbed A Gui’s hand and his brow furrowed. The shen power inside A Gui’s body had multiplied!

What had happened?

An increase in shen power was good for other people, but for A Gui, it would only restrain her soul even more tightly! Damn it! What had happened? Zuo Mo’s expression instantly became terrible. He wanted more than ever for the shen power inside A Gui’s body to completely disappear in exchange for her soul’s freedom. The iciness of being restrained was the cruelest torture in the world!

“What happened last night?” Zuo Mo asked in a deep voice.

Shu Long was preparing to speak when a serene voice came from behind him. “Shen power breathing.”

It was Ceng Lian’er. Zuo Mo stilled. “Shen power breathing? What is that?”

“Every person’s body is like a cup of water and shen power is like the salt in the water. When your shen power cultivation reaches a certain level, your body and your shen power would reach an equilibrium and then shen power breathing will occur. That means the your body’s potential is unlocked. You achieved shen power breathing last night.”

Zuo Mo was confused but he knew that Ceng Lian’er knew much more about shen power than he did. After pondering it for a while, he shook his head and said, “I do feel that I’ve recovered my energy, but I don’t detect any change in my body.”

“You just opened the lock, you still need to push open the door,” Ceng Lian’er said serenely.

“What does this have to do with the shen power inside A Gui’s body?” Zuo Mo asked.

A strange light flashed though Ceng Lian’er’s eyes. She glanced at Zuo Mo and said, “I do not know, but I know that she definitely has a connection to you achieving shen power breathing last night.”

Zuo Mo’s brow creased even tighter. Suddenly, his hand was tightly gripped. It was A Gui that was holding his hand. Zuo Mo stilled and then showed joy. It had been very long since A Gui had made movements like this, since she had used her shen power outside the mist village. He turned around. A Gui’s expression was still wooden but that hand was tightly gripping his hand.

Zuo Mo was instantly put in a good mood.

“Daren, there was a strange situation at the Mo Skill Steles last night, and the three princesses have also reached Great Peace City,” Shu Long reported.

Zuo Mo was instantly distracted by the news of the three princesses and automatically dismissed the news about the Mo Skill Steles. He hurriedly asked, “They have already arrived? Remember to go ask where they are staying.”

Shu Long was slightly puzzled but he still nodded and noted it down.

Zuo Mo then asked, “How is Ye Ling doing?”

Tao Xing’s mo embryos had finally been delivered. He was fearful of being late. The transaction between Zuo Mo and Bie Han scared him half to death. As a result, Zuo Mo was put onto the list of people he would pay off for peace of mind.

Shu Long had a joyous expression again. “His mo embryo processing has been very smooth. He is cultivating. Should I call him over?”

“Do not disturb him.” Zuo Mo asked another question “Where is A Wen?”

“He, the orange and black yao, Nan Yue, and the others are all at the Mo Skill Steles.” Shu Long said, “Bie Han has been in seclusion as he and Sin Battalion are cultivating.”

Zuo Mo nodded. When he had been studying the jinzhi on Sin Battalion, he discovered that Sin Battalion could cultivate. However, the cultivation method was very strange. After he engraved the mo matrices, Bie Han also needed to adjust. For a battle general, any tiny change in the battalion was something that could be crucial to victory.

“How are you processing the mo embryos?” Zuo Mo asked.

Of the mo embryos from Tao Xing, the Day mo embryo was given to Shu Long and the Nether Shadow mo embryo to A Wen.

The other people did not have enough talent and the effects of using mo embryos would not be very good.

“I have been guarding Daren, and A Wen has been at the Mo Skill Steles these days. We did not have the time to use them.” Shu Long was slightly embarrassed.

Zuo Mo was moved and said, “Hand the administrative matters to someone else for a few days and focus on processing the mo embryo. As for A Wen, do not disturb him.” Even though processing the mo embryo could lead to a short term increase in strength, A Wen was currently enchanted with the Mo Skill Steles. Adding on the epiphanies he had, he should make great gains.

The content on the Mo Skill Steles was detailed and expansive. Once one started to study it, it would be beneficial for the rest of their life. In comparison, the mo embryo boost came fast, but it did not have long-lasting effects as studying the Mo Skill Steles.

Zuo Mo was slightly surprised that Nan Yue and the others also went to the Mo Skill Steles but he decided not to interfere in this. Stopping his thought, he also realized that while Pu Yao seemed strict with these people, he was also very attentive. He would not let them go down the wrong path.

If they were not yao, he probably would not be able to keep these mo embryos from Pu Yao.

Right now, Princess Xia had reached Great Peace City. He also had enough people. Zuo Mo's confidence grew!

He decided to go tonight to take a look. If he could directly save Xiao Guo and Li Ying Feng, that would be the best.

Miao Jun was directing Tang Fei.

Without the Celestial Azure Essence, the possibility that he could break through to the next level was not high. Even though Azure Air Kill had allowed him to touch the doorway to understanding Domain, it had been many years Azure Air Kill was still stuck as the Azure Air Kill. He had not advanced from this level for many

years.

Losing to Zuo Mo this time, he seemed to have let go of something on his mind and he became lighter. His days became easy and idle. He was the most relaxed and leisurely of all the people in the compound.

He did not have any ambitions about cultivation so his other great love started to show. After teaching Shu Long, he quickly found a new target, Tang Fei.

In his eyes, this young female with the ponytail was a piece of raw jade. When Tang Fei learned that Miao Jun was a gold battle general, she was overjoyed and hurriedly asked for guidance. One was willing to teach and the other was willing to learn, the compound quickly became busy.

Miao Jun frequently used the Celestial Plant Guard and the Guard Camp as subjects for demonstrations. Guard Camp was alright with this. Their strict regulations and their persistent attitudes did not make them resistant to training and they learned with all of their attention. On the other hand, Shou Ping's Celestial Planet Guard was worse off. These people that were usually provided with good food and drink were so exhausted by the training that they felt their bones would come apart.

Many people ran over to Shou Ping to complain. Shou Ping could only go to Ceng Lian'er in search of help. But Ceng Lian'er said lightly, "Other people can manage it, but you cannot? How can my father's Celestial Planet Guard be so useless?"

Shou Ping's face flushed red and he wanted to find a crack in the ground to hide in. He was one of Ceng Yi's closest confidants. When had he been spoken to with such a demeaning tone? Without a sound, he turned and left. Returning to the campsite, he grabbed all the ones that were complaining and beat them up. Instantly, all of Celestial Planet Guard was silenced.

Shou Ping was like a lion released from the cage. He would lead the troops personally in cultivation. Anything that Guard Camp could do, he had to do it as well.

Tang Fei's battalion was not willing to be left behind and also worked hard.

Miao Jun did not feel anything regarding this. He did not consider Celestial Planet Guard was Zuo Mo's troop. There were not many people from Guard Camp and their combat style had already formed. Shu Long was more suited to lead them than he was. Sin Battalion was Bie Han's group. Coming from Xuan Kong Temple, he had the qualifications to lead this famous Sin Battalion. With their compatibility, under Bie Han's command Sin Battalion's strength would be stronger than under Miao Jun. Tang Fei's battalion was the weakest of all the battalions. Even though Tang Fei was willing to give the battalion to Miao Jun to train, Miao Jun was not willing.

This battalion was one that Tang Fei could use to realize her own ideals.

“Teacher, they all say that Xiao Mo Ge is a gold battle general, is it true?” Tang Fei’s eyes were wide and filled with curiosity.

Miao Jun thought for a moment and then shook his head in helplessness. “Even now, Daren is someone I cannot understand clearly. I would not find it strange for anything to occur to him.”

He looked at Tang Fei’s doubtful expression and said with a smile, “I know that you have objections about Daren, but in reality, he is a very good person. Look at the people in the compound, especially his subordinates, they all trust him greatly and are very loyal! Also, have you noticed that his battalion is different than other battalions?”

“Different?” Tang Fei stilled and sank into thought.

“His battalion has a very unique attitude, they are persistent, and will always pursue becoming stronger.” Miao Jun’s expression started to turn serious. “You are also a battle general and you should know how difficult it is to influence a battalion to be like this. You should also know just how terrifying a battalion like this will be.”

Tang Fei pondered Miao Jun’s words.

“You cannot just look at the surface of a person,” Miao Jun said meaningfully.

“Haha! Did you hear? Tian Huan lost in front of our formations? So what if it is Tian Huan? Competing against our Golden Crow Camp in formations, they don’t want to live!”

“Che, you are celebrating over such a small matter? So useless! It is a pity that the yao battalion did not charge. I wanted to see the power of the formations I set up.”

“I’m really not used to being relaxed recently! I wonder how Daren is doing?”

Recently there were fewer and fewer mo that needed to have mo matrices inscribed. Other than the fact they needed to meet the threshold percentage of a bloodline, there was also the problem of loyalty. Shi Dong had only taken over Little Savage Jie recently and his control was not firm.

“Daren is so strong, there definitely isn’t a problem! Shu Long and the others have reached Daren, don’t worry.”

“Ah, I really hope that Daren can come back soon.”

“Yes”

Suddenly, Master Ji Wei and Sun Bao appeared in front of everyone. They all stopped talking and some people’s eyes started to turn bright.

The last time the two masters had appeared like this, they had led them in the study of the mo matrices, it had been like a battle. Even though it was unusually hard, it still excited them when they thought back.

It was also this last time that they finally realized the power they possessed!

As the number of mo matrices that needed to be engrave had decreased, they felt restless from the relaxation after the tense times. Many people were dispirited and lazy.

So when the two masters appeared together, their excitement was woken up again. Everyone quieted down and looked at the two masters.

Ji Wei's expression was stern. He did not waste and directly said, "Just now, we received an emergency order from Gongsun Daren!"

Rumbles of noise sounded. People had nervous expressions. Had the state of affairs changed again?

Sun Bao did not stop the discussion below and said in a deep voice, "Please note, this is the highest priority order!"

The crowd instantly quieted and everyone's faces became grave. There was only one circumstance where a highest priority order would be sent out, when the situation was extremely dangerous!

Everyone understood something had happened!

In the silent lecture hall, Sun Bao's deep yet unusually determined voice echoed.

“We need to think of all ways in the shortest amount of time to help Guard Camp increase their combat abilities! All methods are to be considered!”

Master Sun Bao looked around and met each pair of eyes.

“This is not a request, this is an order!”

Chapter 599 - Night Visit

Gongsun Cha stared at the jie map, a thread of darkness flashing through his eyes. Everyone else stared at the jie map with similarly terrible expressions.

“We do not have enough battalions,” Wei Ran said gravely. “Based on Gu Liang Dao’s speed and the path of his advance, our path to Daren will soon be cut off!”

Everyone was silent. What Wei Ran said was what they were most worried about.

Orchid Home Jie was at the border of Hundred Savage Realm and Dark Realm. Theoretically, it was the best meeting point. Zuo Mo could first reach Orchid Home Jie to meet up with everybody before heading to Dark Realm.

Yet no one had expected for Gu Liang Dao to pop out of nowhere. He coincidentally appeared on the path that Zuo Mo would take to Orchid Home Jie. Xi Xuan had been putting in great effort recently, and caused there to be a higher risk that this path would be cut off.

But Lil’ Miss did not have enough battalions on his hands. Orchid Home Jie was not safe. With the yao as their neighbours, he needed a strong battalion to defend it. If they lost control of the chaos rift, everyone understood what that meant.

“I have already sent the highest priority order to Golden Crow

Camp,” Gongsun Cha said gravely. “If it really comes down to it, we will position Black Turtle Camp here, and Vermillion Bird Camp would be responsible for advancing.”

The mood inside the hall was pressuring. Gongsun Cha’s idea was extremely risky. Black Turtle Camp was strong, but no one knew if they could hold this chaos rift.

The yao battalion in the neighboring Black Stone Jie was strong. Gongye Xiao Rong had disappeared, but if there was a chance, he would definitely pop out to take a bite.

If Lil’ Miss was not here in person, in such serious circumstances, even with Vermillion Bird Camp, no one dared to claim absolute confidence in defending the chaos rift.

But even if Black Turtle Camp could hold this place, it was even more difficult for Vermillion Bird Camp to carve open a path.

Gu Liang Dao’s appearance completely disrupted all of Lil’ Miss’ plans.

If the path was cut off, then there was no meaning to holding Orchid Home Jie. They would need to take a long detour before they could meet up with Zuo Mo. Wei Ran and the others had already calculated this alternative route. If the path was cut off, the nearest point they could meet up with Zuo Mo was one where they had to pass through sixty two jie!

One battalion passing through sixty two jie! Just the number of fights they would encounter was enough to make their scalp feel numb.

In comparison, it was more realistic to fight for control of the path against Gu Liang Dao. Gongsun Cha did not feel any fear towards Gu Liang Dao and Xi Xuan.

But he did not have enough forces in his hands. There was nothing to do if he did not have the manpower. Right now, all these jie needed people standing guard.

Compared to those large sects, their foundations were still too thin.

Lil' Miss stood there silent.

In the night, three figures landed and flashed through the air like three ghosts.

Zuo Mo and A Gui were next to each other with Ceng Lian'er half a step behind. Zuo Mo originally didn't want A Gui to come but A Gui whose shen power had increased seemed to have her own ideas now. She did not make a sound, but she would always stay within a step of Zuo Mo. It was useless no matter what Zuo Mo said to her. Ceng Lian'er following them left Zuo Mo puzzled but he did not stop her. She was a very good assistant, and since she wanted to

follow, he would let her.

Ceng Lian'er was like a wisp of smoke in the night. Her movements were elegant and held a thread of eeriness.

A Gui was like a puppet that was completely void of life. She was completely silent. Her bare feet moved in her usual pace . But there was no flow of air, no sound, and no vibrations.

Zuo Mo's movements were like that of a cat, relaxed and agile. His movements were balanced as though he was sliding through the air.

All three were wearing masks. These were masks that Zuo Mo had just made and did not have any other use except to stop people from seeing their true faces. The three had even changed the shape of their figures. If they did not take off their mask, no one would think it was them.

Looking at the sumptuous palace in front of them, a light flashed through Zuo Mo's eyes.

Xiao Guo! Li Ying Feng!

I'm coming!

—————

“Great Peace Treasure Pavilion” Princess Xin sighed lightly. She seemed to be murmuring to herself and that pair of eyes that enchanted countless people showed bewilderment and helplessness. She murmured in light voice, “Is this fate?”

She thought of the shocking scene from last night. At that time, the entire Mo Skill Stele forest had seemed to breathe. She almost cried.

In the corner, a warrior covered in thick armor stood with a sword the size of a door. There was no opening on his entire body. Even his face was securely covered. No one knew of his true features.

Everyone knew that Princess Xin had a heavily armored guard with her, but no one had ever seen him fight. He never spoke and only stood behind Princess Xia with that sword of his as he ignored the suitors.

Princess Xin rubbed the chain ornament on her forehead, something that she never took off, and sighed. Her expression was extremely lonely. She curled up like a cat afraid of the cold.

There was none of the confidence and elegance that she usually had.

Suddenly, the statue-like armored guard suddenly moved with an unusual agility that was not clumsy at all.

He appeared next to the door.

Princess Xin's eyes were wide as she looked at the heavy armor guard in shock. It was the first time she had seen him react so strongly.

What had happened?

“Princess, sleep early.” Zhu Ke whose hair and beard were white looked benevolently at Princess Wan as though she was his own grandchild. As Princess Wan was someone he had watched grow up since she was little, she was like his granddaughter.

“Grandpa Zhu, is there really a Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” Princess Wan's eyes were wide and her expression curious.

Zhu Ke couldn't help but give a smile. His wrinkle-covered face crinkled. “Does Princess like treasure pavilion?”

“Yes yes! It seems very interesting. Grandmaster Shi Zi Ming is so strong, there must be many treasures.” Princess Wan's eyes were full of longing.

“Haha!” Zhu Ke couldn't help but laugh. He affectionately caressed Princess Wan's hair. “If Princess wants it, this old servant will go search and see if there are any when the time comes.”

“Really?” Princess Wan exclaimed happily. “That’s great! Great Peace Treasure Pavilion, it makes people excited just thinking about it! It is much more interesting than eating with those people!”

“It has been hard for Princess these past few days!” Zhu Ke said caringly.

Princess Wan shook her head. “I can help Daddy like this, it is not a hardship!”

“Princess is really mature!” Zhu Ke praised. Suddenly, his hand imperceptibly stilled. He said in a gentle voice, “Princess, go to sleep, it is late.”

An indistinguishable presence spread. Princess Wan’s eyelids became heavy. She yawned and said, “Grandpa Zhu I’m sleeping”

Before she could finish, she entered her dreams. Zhu Ke carefully tucked the blanket around her. When he slowly turned around, a thread of harshness flashed through his eyes.

“Has the matter of the Mo Skill Steles been resolved?” There was no smile on Princess Xia’s face like there usually was and her tone was harsh.

“Princess, no!” the subordinate trembled and said.

“You trash!” Princess Xia’s face was cold. “How many years has the family stationed you here for? You are unable to solve such a minor matter? And Great Peace Treasure Pavilion! Such a great matter and you did not hear a thing!”

The subordinate did not dare to even breath. Everyone knew if they argued with the princess now, it would end terribly for them!

“What clues are there about the rumors of the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” Princess Xia continued to ask severely. “After so many years and no one knows a thing, yet suddenly the whole world knows! There is definitely something going on!”

“This subordinate is useless”

Pia, a incense pot landed on this mo’s face and blood instantly flowed. This mo did not dare to move and allowed the blood to drip down his face onto the ground.

“Trash! A group of trash!” Princess Xia panted angrily. Her flushed chest seemed to almost pop out but no one dared to look.

A moment later, Princess Xia’s anger settled. She said coldly, “Xiao Mo Ge? If you say you are still not able to tell me anything, then you can die in front of me.”

This mo hurriedly said, “This subordinate has made a thorough investigation of Xiao Mo Ge! He first appeared in Shattered Stone Jie. One of the women with him is the daughter of the jie master Ceng Yi. Ceng Yi is a white fang snake mo and has cultivated the White Fang mo physique. He had once refused the invitation of Marshal Yu. He also killed one of Marshal Yu’s subordinates. Xiao Mo Ge’s subordinates are Guard Camp who came from a very distant place. Right now, their earliest appearance that we have tracked is in Little Savage Jie which is now in the hands of someone called Shi Dong. This person is not very strong but is a pretty good battle general.”

Princess Xia showed some interest. The subordinate’s investigation was very detailed but it held many strange details. She understood the subordinates well. They might be useless, but if they did not investigate thoroughly, they would not dare to speak.

“What do you think of Xiao Mo Ge?” she suddenly asked.

The subordinate stilled. He hesitated and then gritted out, “This subordinate thinks that Xiao Mo Ge is the most outstanding genius that this subordinate has seen in all these years! He can rank with Qi Diao Yu!”

“Rank with Qi Diao Yu” Princess Xia had an amused expression. She waved her hand and said lazily. “Wipe up the blood and leave!”

“Yes!” The subordinates hurriedly retreated as though they were pardoned.

“What do you think?” Princess Xia suddenly asked. The person the question was directed to was her maid. This maid was about forty years old with an average appearance. There wasn’t any presence to her.

The middle-aged maid said, “The Great Peace Treasure Pavilion is real.”

“I know!” Princess Xia raised an eyebrow. “And then?”

At this time, the middle-aged maid’s expression changed. She turned to look towards the window.

At this time, a clear voice came from a distance, “Which coward dares to break into the princess’ residence in the middle of the night? Come out! Beg for forgiveness from the princesses! Do not dirty ye’s hands!”

Chapter 600 - The Intuition Of A Woman

Zuo Mo had not thought that he would be discovered even before he popped up.

He gestured to A Gui and Ceng Lian'er to not move and then he slowly walked forward. He did not believe the other had detected A Gui and Ceng Lian'er. Truthfully, if he himself did not know they were there, he would have been unable to detect their presence even if they were beside him.

As expected, Zuo Mo's gamble paid off. He really was the only one that was discovered.

Compared to the other two, he really was lacking!

Zuo Mo felt slightly embarrassed. He was very skilled in single combat and large scale battles, but it seemed that he didn't have enough experience in sneaking around.

Since he was not able to sneak in, then he would have to change his approach and use himself to test the other's forces.

In Zuo Mo's eyes, Princess Xia was his enemy. He understood that he had to learn about his enemy.

"Who are you?" Zuo Mo's voice became unusually hoarse through the mask.

“As expected, a coward! A mouse!” Shen Yu said dismissively. His appearance was handsome, as he stood on the roof; he appeared as a celestial looking down from on high.

In comparison, Zuo Mo who had changed the shape of his body looked wretched. He wore an extremely ugly mask on his face and his voice was grating.

“I admire Princess Xia and have come to make a night visit. Who are you? Why are you stopping me?” Zuo Mo was righteous. However, when combined with his lowly state, he seemed extremely perverted.

“A person like you dares to ask to see Princess Xia!” It would have been fine if it was any other princess but when Shen Yu heard it was Princess Xia, the one he was in love with, he instantly felt uncomfortable looking at this person. He couldn’t help but speak with disdain.

“I’m very ugly but I’m very gentle.” Zuo Mo said righteously. Then his voice became strange, “Who are you! Princess Xia decides who she sees, what is the meaning in you stopping me? Are you afraid that Princess will fall in love with me? Hey, Brother, we have to compete fairly”

Bursts of laughter came from the surroundings. Someone even said in an audible voice, “Brother Shen, he is right!”

The Shen Family had some strength, but which one of these young masters did not have a background? There were still some

that could rival Shen Yu. However, it was just that no one was as strong as him, so he dominated all of them. Now that they had a chance to throw stones while he was unable to strike back, they would not pass on this chance.

“Hem hem, this virtuous brother, your true heart is known since you took such a great risk and climbed the compound walls this late at night! We need to give him a chance!”

Someone else praised loudly, “Yes, yes! He is ugly but very gentle! Very ugly! Very gentle!”

The crowd continued to jeer. Zuo Mo pretentiously bowed in all directions and said loudly, “Everyone, you are all gentlemen!”

Shen Yu’s face turned green.

Zuo Mo was speaking but inside, he was carefully inspecting the surroundings. He discovered several barely discernable presences that gave him a great feeling of danger.

As expected, the guards of the three princesses were outrageously powerful!

Zuo Mo knew that their plan tonight had failed. The guards of the three princesses were stronger than he imagined. What was most depressing was that the three princesses even slept in connecting residences. He clearly had disturbed several experts.

The others were hard on Shen Yu but he was not a stupid person. He knew that one could not win in a verbal contest against hundreds. His expression recovered its calm and a hint of murderousness flashed through his eyes. He said coolly, "The princess is of noble status, and nothing is allowed to happen to her. Since this brother is not willing to introduce yourself, then this one will test you!"

Before he finished speaking, he leapt at Zuo Mo!

"Do not make too much noise, the princess is sleeping." A wizened voice lightly sounded in everyone's ears.

Midair, Shen Yu's presence suddenly decreased.

Behind the mask, Zuo Mo's face changed slightly. This voice that abruptly appeared was not loud. It was actually very soft as though it was a whisper by his ear but caused Zuo Mo to feel cold inside.

However, at the beginning, he had felt several faint presences lock onto him. He knew that experts were present so he was shocked but not panicked.

As for Shen Yu who was currently charging, at him, in Zuo Mo's eyes, he was strong in appearance but weak inside!

Such a stupid thing to become timid during a fight just because of some words. If this was a real fight, this person would already be dead!

Zuo Mo did not have anything to consider because those presences had been locked onto him from the beginning.

Tonight, the other side would not easily let him leave.

Fighting could not be avoided.

So when he saw Shen Yu decrease his power because of the voice, he smiled behind the mask!

But soon, Zuo Mo was unable to smile because he didn't know what move to use!

Actually, both Sky Glass Wave and the Fire Fist of the First Heavenly Stem were suited to this situation and definitely would break the other's face! But if he used those moves, it would be equivalent to telling all of Great Peace City that he did it.

If it was yao arts, he could use the Archaic Wasteland Sacrificial Art, but he remembered that he had used little yao arts when he fought Miao Jun. Zuo Mo was full of regret! There weren't many mo that used yao arts in the first place.

Ling power should he use the [Li Water Sword Scripture]?

Shen power he wasn't A Gui or Ceng Lian'er!

Zuo Mo found to his grief and fury that he did not have any moves to use.

As expected, he had not done enough sneaking around and was inexperienced!

Without another word, Zuo Mo turned and ran.

“You want to run!” Shen Yu smiled coldly. As the others had mocked him, he had been full of rage but he had suppressed it. Now that he found the other did not dare to fight, the rage shot back up.

He suddenly accelerated, his presence locking onto Zuo Mo.

Zuo Mo laughed and said loudly, “Princess Xia, I will not give up!”

Finishing, his body suddenly broke free from Shen Yu’s grip. Right after, the previously faint presence suddenly increased and the air around Zuo Mo became as strong as iron!

Zuo Mo was prepared and he suddenly used all the power in his body with threads of shen power mixed in. A gold light flashed through his eyes. Like a pickaxe, he smashed against the rock hard barrier of air in front of him.

Bam!

An explosion!

The air around Zuo Mo exploded and in the cloud of white mist, someone seemed to run through.

Shen Yu's expression changed. His right hand struck at empty air. The mist dissipated. There wasn't anything left.

Returning to the compound, Zuo Mo did not have a good expression. Especially when he saw the undisguised mirth in Ceng Lian'er's eyes, he felt even worse.

However, Little Mo Ge was not one that would be defeated by a minor setback like this. Once to try and twice to be familiar, he reviewed what he had learned. His concealing technique was not good enough. Of the three, he was the only one that was discovered. This clearly indicated a problem. Otherwise, he lacked combat moves that could be used while disguised. Otherwise, that person's face would have bloomed into a flower already.

He had also gained a lot today. He was now sure that all the princesses had strong experts with them. This was not unexpected, but it was troublesome for him.

Experts were always willing to serve prestigious families and not battalions.

In reality, there were not many experts in battalions that had reached general level. To reach general level, one had to have an exceptional obsession with cultivation to achieve such a high level. Those people usually did not like strict regulations, such as those battalions followed. Most of the general levels in battalions were battle generals. They were general level but they were not strong in single combat.

It was the same with xiuzhe and yao.

The other reason was that in battle, the death rate of general level was very high. In a conflict between battalions, any general level or yuanying xiuzhe would be targeted first.

However, it was very difficult to nurture a yuanying xiuzhe while battalions were comparatively cheap. Other than a life or death battle, no sect would take the risk and let its yuanying xiuzhe come out to fight.

As to those in marshal level and above, nothing needed to be said about them.

So, sometimes, it was much more of a headache to encounter experts like this than a powerful battalion.

Zuo Mo had a great headache now.

Those experts stopped any possibility of him sneaking in to

investigate. In comparison, Pu Yao and Wei's plan was much more plausible.

Receive the admiration of the princess, get close to the princess, have the princess try to recruit him, and then state his conditions.

His reputation in Great Peace City was known, and he wondered if Princess Xia would admire him.

Pu Yao's method was good but it was too passive. All the initiative was in the hands of Princess Xia. This caused Zuo Mo to feel very discomforted.

Maybe he could use a more proactive method?

Zuo Mo's eyes grew brighter!

"The person just now?" Princess Xia noticed the expression on the middle-aged maid's face and couldn't help asking.

"Very strong!" the middle-aged maid said, "He might have purposefully made himself look ugly. His strength is above average and there is nothing that I could discover.

"Above average?" Princess Xia had an interested expression. "How much above average?"

“We used our presences to lock onto him but he was still able to escape,” the middle-aged maid said coolly.

“Then that is really above average.” Princess Xia was thoughtful. She suddenly asked, “Is he here for the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?”

“Hard to say,” the middle-aged maid said grave, “the matter is very fishy this time. The news spread so suddenly. Someone is working in the shadows.”

“Do other people know about the Great Peace Treasure Pavilion?” Princess Xia looked at the middle-aged maid.

“Impossible!” The middle-aged maid said with a cold smile, “I spent so many years to uncover this secret.”

“Does Shi Zi Ming have any descendants?” Princess Xia said gravely.

“None.” The middle-aged maid shook her head. “My mother served him for many years, and never saw him with any woman.”

“He was an old man with a pure heart!” Princess Xia laughed. “I hope that the people of Great Peace City won’t be as dull as Shi Zi Ming.”

“You are not interested in Xiao Mo Ge?” The middle-aged maid was slightly puzzled.

“The timing of when he appeared is too coincidental.” Princess Xia had a smile. “Don’t you feel that he seems to be waiting for us? Even though I do not know which one of us is his target, my intuition keeps telling me this.”